

Blair. 245.

229

262

263

249 [95]

WELSH EXERCISES,

ADAPTED TO THE IMPROVED EDITION OF

ROWLAND'S GRAMMAR.

WITH COPIOUS EXPLANATORY NOTES.

BY

THE REV. THOMAS ROWLAND,

RECTOR OF PENNANT MELANGELL,
VIA OSWESTRY;

AUTHOR OF "A GRAMMAR OF THE WELSH LANGUAGE."

New and Improved Edition.

WREXHAM:

PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY HUGHES & SON.

LONDON: SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, & CO.

LIBRARY
30 MY
1954

PREFACE.



THIS Work was undertaken in compliance with a request often made by English friends, who were desirous of acquiring a practical knowledge of the Welsh Language. It proved to be a more difficult undertaking than the Author had anticipated; and he does not wish to conceal the fact that he has failed to produce so complete a Work as he had proposed to himself at the outset. However, he believes that the Work will, notwithstanding its shortcomings, render considerable assistance to the Student both in writing and in speaking Welsh. It should be remembered that this is the first attempt at writing an Exercise Book of the Welsh Language; and that, consequently, the order, clearness, and completeness of similar Works on Latin or Greek, French or German, can scarcely be looked for.

The Student is advised to study well the Notes and References, and to make himself acquainted with the Vocabulary in each Chapter, before he begins to prepare the Exercises. This will familiarise him with the peculiarities of the Language, and render the Exercises comparatively easy.

PENNANT, *December 5, 1870.*

CONTENTS.



PRELIMINARY REMARKS.

	PAGE
Sounds of the letters	1
Accent	2
Quantity : monosyllables,—diphthongs,— <i>wy</i> ,—penults	2
Personal pronouns preceding the verb	4
Personal pronouns following the verb	5
Personal pronouns after pronominal prepositions, &c.	7

WELSH EXERCISES.

CHAPTER I.—The article,—article repeated,— <i>a</i> and <i>ac</i>	8
CHAPTER II.—Adjectives after nouns,—government,—plural form,—“ <i>dyn a dynes dda</i> ,”— <i>dyn</i> and <i>gwr</i> , <i>dynes</i> and <i>gwraig</i>	10
CHAPTER III.—Adjectives before nouns,—numerals to <i>four</i> ,— <i>o</i> after numerals,—government—“ <i>dau ddyn du</i> ”	12
CHAPTER IV.—Demonstrative pronouns,— <i>yma</i> , <i>yna</i> , <i>acw</i> , used pronominally,—“ <i>y ddwy gath wen hyny</i> ” or “ <i>hono</i> ,”— <i>mewn</i> and <i>yn</i> ,— <i>gwyrdd</i> , <i>glâs</i> , <i>llwyd</i> ,— <i>lle</i> and <i>mân</i>	15
CHAPTER V.—Possessive pronouns,—government,—contracted forms,—“ <i>i’w dy</i> , <i>i’w thy</i> , <i>i’w tai</i> ,”— <i>h</i> prefixed,—emphatic possessive,—“ <i>fy nhad a’ m mam</i> ,”—“ <i>hanner awr wedi dau</i> ”	19
CHAPTER VI.—Present tense of <i>Bod</i> (to be), first and second persons,—expletive <i>yr</i> ,—verb before subject,—subject-pron. omitted,— <i>wyf</i> and <i>ydwyf</i> ,— <i>yn</i> apposition,—questions and answers : <i>a</i> , <i>onid</i> , <i>ai nid</i> ,—2nd pers. pl. for sing.,— <i>dim</i> as auxiliary,— <i>a ... dim</i> ,— <i>pobl</i>	22

	PAGE
CHAPTER VII.—Present tense of verbs, first and second pers.,—periphrastic form,— <i>yn</i> participial,—government of infinitive,— <i>either ... or, neither ... nor</i> ,—answers to questions,— <i>yn</i> adverbial,— <i>â</i> and <i>gyda</i>	27
CHAPTER VIII.—Third pers. pres. of <i>Bôd</i> ,— <i>mae</i> , pl. <i>maent</i> , with definitive subject,—antithesis,—“ <i>y mae</i> ,”—“ <i>y mae y dynion yna</i> ,”— <i>it</i> (it rains),— <i>dydd</i> and <i>diwrnod</i> ,— <i>nôs</i> and <i>noswaith</i> ,— <i>brâf</i>	31
CHAPTER IX.— <i>Ydyw</i> or <i>yw</i> for <i>mae</i> , and <i>ydynt</i> or <i>ynt</i> for <i>maent</i> ,— <i>ydyw</i> and <i>yw</i> ,—simple interrogatives,—antithetic interrogatives.	35
CHAPTER X.— <i>Oes</i> for <i>mae</i> ,—“ <i>y mae gwin</i> ,”—have = <i>y mae gan</i> ,— <i>genyf</i> ,—subject def.,—order of words,—“ <i>y mae genyf geinïog</i> ,”—answers to questions,—“much time,” “many friends,”—“two pence half-penny,” “three and six”	39
CHAPTER XI.— <i>O honof</i> , of me,—some, somebody, something,—any, no, not any, none, anybody, nobody, anything, nothing,—not one,—position and government of adj. pronouns,—some of the men, some of them,—genitive with <i>o</i>	44
CHAPTER XII.—Antithetic personal pronouns,—relative pronouns,— <i>sydd</i> ,—negation of <i>sydd</i> ,— <i>dyma</i> , <i>dyna</i> , <i>dacw</i> ,—relative pronouns omitted, <i>pâr</i> and <i>môr</i>	51
CHAPTER XIII.—Genitive without <i>o</i> — <i>whose</i> , rel.,— <i>whose</i> , interr.,—mine, Arthur's, &c.,—a friend of mine,—who has?	57
CHAPTER XIV.— <i>Sydd</i> and <i>yw</i> ,—“ <i>ysgrifenwyr da yw eich plant</i> ,”—“ <i>ysgrifenwr da ydywff fi</i> ,”— <i>onide</i> and <i>aie?</i>	62
CHAPTER XV.—Interrogatives: what? which? what! what a—? what sort of? how much?—how many?—one, pl. ones,—“how many have?”—the suffix <i>aïd</i>	66
CHAPTER XVI.—Two pence a yard,—we both, both of us,—we three,—the rel. <i>ag</i> ,—apposition,— <i>llath</i> and <i>llathen</i> ,—compound prepositions	71
CHAPTER XVII.—Comparison of adjectives,—position,—government,— <i>yn</i> not before <i>mor</i> and <i>cyn</i> ,—“ <i>gwraig fwy diwyd</i> ,” “ <i>gwraig mor ddiwyd</i> ,”—as, so, how,—“ <i>pa mor aml?</i> ”—how deep,— <i>wyned!</i> —most,— <i>y rhai goreu</i> ,—the wiser,—partitive gen.,—adverbs of quality, <i>ym mhell</i> ,— <i>sïarad</i> and <i>llefaru</i> ,—than I,—than my,—irreg. adjectives	75

	PAGE
CHAPTER XVIII.—Demonstrative pronouns,— <i>hyn</i> and <i>hyny</i> ,— <i>yr hyn</i> ,—all,—“ <i>yn rhy garedig</i> ,”—comparison of adjectives,—irregular adjectives	81
CHAPTER XIX.—Conjunctive pers. pronouns,—emphatic possessive,—habit or custom,—not ... neither, &c.,—“ <i>nid ydym ni na chwithau</i> ,”—“ <i>y bydd</i> ,”—“ <i>anaml y byddant</i> ,”—duration and point of time	84
CHAPTER XX.—Pers. pron. as object,—cardinal numbers,—“ten feet <i>high</i> ,”—“five years <i>old</i> ,”—I owe,—I want,—I am afraid,—distance of place, and measure,—“how deep is the river?”— <i>blyncedd</i> , <i>blwydd</i> , <i>blwyddyn</i> ,—“tall for his age,”—“what is the matter with you?”—two inches taller, taller by two inches	88
CHAPTER XXI.—Infin. verb,—negation of infin.,— <i>to</i> before infin.,— <i>it</i> ,—I want,—I am afraid,—I give <i>you</i> ,—in <i>trying</i> ,— <i>yn</i> apposition,— <i>am</i> , <i>am dan</i> —	94
CHAPTER XXII.—Inflected verbs,—future for pres.,—pres. of habit,—3rd person,—expletive <i>a</i> ,— <i>mi</i> and <i>fe</i> ,—“ <i>gwelaf ddy</i> ,”—position of subject, personal pron. as subject,—formation of finite verbs,—answers to questions,— <i>gallu</i> , <i>medru</i> , <i>gwybod</i> , <i>adnabod</i> , <i>gwybod am</i> , <i>meddaf</i> and <i>ebe</i> ,—negative adverbs	99
CHAPTER XXIII.—Inflected verbs,—introductory poss. pron. (<i>mi a'ch clywaf</i>),— <i>dim</i> , <i>mo</i> , <i>mo honof</i> ,— <i>a...dim? a mo? = onid or ai nid?</i> — <i>rhaid</i> , <i>must</i> , &c.,—answers to questions,—ordinals,—“the hundred and ninth psalm”	106
CHAPTER XXIV.—The object preceding,— <i>a</i> and <i>yr</i> ,—“ <i>beth yr ydych chwi yn ei weled?</i> ”—“the man has nothing to <i>spend</i> ,”—“ <i>par o fotasau</i> ,” “ <i>y par botasau</i> ,”— <i>chweugain</i> ,—“for aught I know”	112
CHAPTER XXV.—“I am hungry,” “I am thirsty,” “I long,”—“who wants?” “who is afraid?” “who is hungry?” “who is thirsty?” “who longs?”—“what do I want?” “what am I afraid of?”—“I want to have my boot mended,”—“this loaf of bread,”— <i>ceiniogwerth</i>	116
CHAPTER XXVI.— <i>Ataf</i> , <i>oddi arnaf</i> , <i>oddi wrthyf</i> , <i>rhagof</i> ,—“ <i>with whom are you angry?</i> ” “ <i>on whom I depend</i> ,”— <i>i</i> , <i>at (to)</i> ,— <i>o</i> , <i>oddi wrth</i> , <i>oddi ar</i> , <i>gàn</i> , <i>rhàg (from)</i> ,—“ <i>y goeden rwnyn</i> ”	122

	PAGE
CHAPTER XXVII.—Adjective pronouns, <i>much, many, little, few, &c.</i> ,— <i>ag</i> and <i>nag</i> before <i>sydd, yw</i> , and <i>mae</i> ,— <i>a</i> and <i>y</i> after <i>ag</i> and <i>nag</i> ,— <i>mwyl, chwaneb, rhagor</i> ,—“ <i>nid oes fawr o goed yn y berllan</i> ”	128
CHAPTER XXVIII.—Numeral adverbs,— <i>tair gwaith</i> or <i>teirgwaith</i> ,—“ <i>twice as</i> ,”—direct questions,—dependent questions,—“ <i>or not</i> ,”—“ <i>I don't care</i> ,”—“ <i>I may as well</i> ”	135
CHAPTER XXIX.— <i>T'rosod</i> ,— <i>yn fy nghylch</i> ,—“ <i>inae yn dda gan Arthur</i> ,” &c.,—transitive clause, simple and antithetical,— <i>it</i> ,— <i>I wonder, tybed, os gwn i—ai tybed?</i> — <i>poor!</i>	141
CHAPTER XXX.—Cause clause,—explanatory cause clause,—concessive clause,— <i>er</i> with equal degree, <i>help</i> (<i>I cannot help looking; we cannot help it</i>)	147
CHAPTER XXXI.—IMPERFECT TENSE,—progressive,—of habit,—answers to questions,— <i>pan</i> and <i>tra</i> ,—point of time,—“ <i>boreu heddyw</i> ,”—“ <i>boreu ddoe</i> ,”—imperfect of must, have, want, &c.,— <i>boreu</i> and <i>cynnar</i> ,— <i>hŷyr</i> and <i>diweddar</i> ,—“ <i>good morning to you</i> ,” &c.	152
CHAPTER XXXII.—Transitive clause,—cause clause,—concessive clause	159
CHAPTER XXXIII.—Numerals,—“ <i>dau gant o ddefaid</i> ,”— <i>this day week</i> ,—months and days,— <i>punnoedd</i> and <i>punnau</i>	161
CHAPTER XXXIV.—PERFECT TENSE,—indef., definite, progressive,—“ <i>was</i> ,” questions and answers to questions,— <i>er, erys, am</i> ,— <i>er's talm, er's meityn</i> ,— <i>how long?</i>	166
CHAPTER XXXV.—PERFECT TENSE, auxiliaries,— <i>darfu i mi, bu i mi</i> ,— <i>gorfod, digwydd</i> ,— <i>pwyl a ddarfu?</i> — <i>gwncyd</i> as auxiliary,—“ <i>bu yn agos i mi</i> ,”— <i>onide? aie?</i>	172
CHAPTER XXXVI.—Object antithetical,—subject antithetical,—reflective pronouns	176
CHAPTER XXXVII.—Compound prepositions,— <i>cyn</i> and <i>o flaen</i> ,— <i>wedi</i> and <i>ar ol</i> ,— <i>erioed</i> and <i>byth</i> ,— <i>yna</i> ,— <i>ym mhlith</i> , and <i>ym mysg</i>	179
CHAPTER XXXVIII.—Compound prepositions,—“ <i>y tu ol i</i> ,” “ <i>y pen yma i</i> ,” &c.,— <i>is law</i> , &c.,— <i>heb law</i> ,— <i>cerdded</i> and <i>rhodio</i>	184
CHAPTER XXXIX.—Transitive clause in perf. tense,—different forms,—“ <i>you must have</i> ”	188

	PAGE
CHAPTER XL.—Cause and concessive clauses in perfect tense,—absolute clause,— <i>go, lled, pur, tra, iawn</i>	194
CHAPTER XLI.—PLUPERFECT TENSE,—time clause,—ought or should,—“to put on,”—“to take off,”—not= <i>peidio</i> ,—worse and worse,— <i>myned yn, dyfod yn</i>	198
CHAPTER XLII.—Transitive clause in plup. tense,—cause clause,—concessive clause,—participial clause,— <i>yn, gan, dan, wedi</i> ,— <i>being, —having</i>	204
CHAPTER XLIII.—FIRST FUTURE TENSE,—different forms,—“he comes to-night,”—“if I go,”—auxiliaries <i>gwneyd, cael, mynu</i> ,—“a gofiwch chwi fi? <i>gwnafl</i> ,”— <i>gobeithio, —ym mhen, —cyn pen</i> ,—I am welcome, &c.	210
CHAPTER XLIV.—FUTURE PERFECT,—time clause,— <i>byw</i> and <i>marw</i> ,—“he is dead,”—“he has been dead a fortnight”	216
CHAPTER XLV.—Transitive clause headed by <i>y</i> or <i>yr</i> with finite verbs,—adverbs of doubting,— <i>canlyn</i> and <i>dilyn</i>	222
CHAPTER XLVI.—Cause and concessive clauses with finite verbs,—“the same,”— <i>bynag</i> ,—Welsh,—English	226
CHAPTER XLVII.—Imperative Mood,— <i>let</i> ,—negation,—“give me half a crown,”— <i>dysgu, cyngkori</i> , &c.	231
CHAPTER XLVIII.—Reflectives, my own, &c.,—“I have . . . to do with,”—the one . . . the other, &c.,—either, neither (<i>pron.</i>),—one (<i>indef. noun</i>)	235
CHAPTER XLIX.—Mine, the boy’s, &c.,— <i>eiddof fi, —fy un i, —piau</i> ,—of mine,—whose,—my own	239
CHAPTER L.—Hardly, scarcely, nearly, almost,— <i>po, —erbyn</i> ,—no more, &c.,— <i>such, —eto</i> and <i>drachefn</i> ,—“I have a (good or great) mind,”—“it is high time”	245

I. INDEX TO WORDS	253
II. INDEX TO PHRASES AND IDIOMS	262

EXPLANATION OF MARKS AND ABBREVIATIONS.

<p><i>Accus.</i> accusative.</p> <p><i>A. adj.</i> adjective.</p> <p><i>Ad. adv.</i> adverb.</p> <p><i>Asp.</i> aspirate.</p> <p>Black letters, p. 32.</p> <p><i>Cf.</i> compare.</p> <p><i>Coll.</i> colloquial.</p> <p><i>Con. conj.</i> conjunction.</p> <p><i>Def.</i> definite.</p> <p><i>Eng.</i> English.</p> <p><i>Ex.</i> Exercises.</p> <p><i>F. fem.</i> feminine.</p> <p><i>Gr.</i> Grammar.</p> <p><i>Indef.</i> indefinite.</p> <p><i>Interr.</i> interrogative.</p> <p><i>Intr.</i> intransitive.</p> <p><i>L.</i> Latin.</p> <p><i>L.u.</i> look under, p. 145.</p> <p><i>M. mas.</i> masculine.</p> <p><i>Mid md.</i> middle.</p> <p><i>N.</i> noun.</p> <p><i>Nas.</i> nasal.</p> <p><i>Neg.</i> negative.</p>	<p><i>Nom.</i> nominative.</p> <p><i>N. W.</i> North Wales.</p> <p><i>Pl.</i> plural.</p> <p><i>Pron.</i> pronoun : pronominal.</p> <p><i>Pr. prep.</i> preposition.</p> <p><i>Prel.</i> preliminary.</p> <p><i>Rad. rd.</i> radical.</p> <p><i>Rel.</i> relative.</p> <p><i>Sing.</i> singular.</p> <p><i>S. W.</i> South Wales.</p> <p>SMALL CAPITALS, p. 22.</p> <p><i>Tr.</i> transitive.</p> <p>That (= <i>there</i>) (<i>or near</i>),</p> <p>That (= <i>yonder</i>),</p> <p>That (<i>o. of s.</i>),</p> <p> <i>Their</i>, p. 21.</p> <p> <i>We</i>, p. 26.</p> <p><i>W.</i> Welsh.</p> <p>"<i>Ceffyl, pl.-au</i>," p. 9.</p> <p>☞ particular attention.</p> <p>= equal to : literal translation.</p> <p>§ section.</p> <p>() [], p. 25.</p>
----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

} p. 16.

PRELIMINARY REMARKS.

SOUNDS OF THE LETTERS. (ROWLAND'S WELSH GRAMMAR,
4th Ed., §§ 2-7.)

§ 1. All the letters of the Welsh Alphabet, except *y*, have only one sound respectively. *Y* has two sounds: its *primary* sound is like that of *u* in *run*; and its *secondary* is like the Welsh *u*, and somewhat similar to *i* in *live*

Which sound has *y* in *monosyllables*? Enumerate the exceptions. *Gr.* § 3. *a.* (*a*). Which sound has it in *bedydd*, baptism: and which in *bedyddio*, to baptize? *Gr.* § 3. *b.* But when a syllable ends with *y*, and the next syllable begins with a vowel, the primary sound is not resumed: *gwely*, a bed, *gwelyau*, beds.

Give the sound of *y* in *bwyta*, to eat; and in *chwysu*, to sweat. *Gr.* § 3. *c.* (*a*).

§ 2. The double letters *ch*, *dd*, *ff*, *ll*, &c., represent respectively but one simple sound.

§ 3. The letters which have no similar sounds in English are *ch*, *ngh*, *ll*, *mh*, *nh*, *rh*, *r*, *i* short, *o* long, *u*, and *y* when it has the same sound as the Welsh *u*. [See *Grammar*.]

§ 4. Pronounce the following words:—*Côch* (*red*); *sâch* (*a sack*); *âfiach* (*unwell*); *chwareu* (*to play*); *ei cheiniog* (*her penny*); *fy* (*my*); *fy nghoes* (*my leg*); *yn* (*in*); *yng Nghrist* (*in Christ*); *fy nghêrdd* (*my song*); *cynghorwr* (*an adviser*); *llaw* (*a hand*); *gallu* (*power*); *llinell* (*a line*); *hollalluog* (*omnipotent*); *tŵyll* (*deceit*); *twyllo* (*to deceive*); *fy mhên* (*my head*); *cymmhwysu* (*to adapt*); *fy mhòbl* (*my people*); *fy nhrŵyn* (*my nose*); *fy nhàid* (*my grandfather*); *fy nhàir mèrch* (*my three daughters*); *rhâff* (*a rope*); *rhŵym* (*a band*); *rhwymo* (*to bind*); *tòri* (*to break*); *àwr* (*an hour*); *òriau* (*hours*); *càreg* (*a stone*); *pêr* (*sweet*); *pîn* (*a pin*); *prîn* (*scarce*); *tôn* (*a tune*); *rhôdd* (*a gift*); *môr* (*a sea*); *bùm* (*I have been*); *ân* (*one*); *Dùw* (*God*); *canu* (*to sing*); *dÿn* (*a man*); *ffÿdd* (*faith*); *bÿw* (*to live*); *iddynt* (*to them*); *hÿny*

(*that*); *wy* (*an egg*); *wyau* (*eggs*); *dwy* (*two*); *dwylaw* (*hands*); *chwyrn* (*weeds*); *chwynu* (*to weed*); *chwys* (*sweat*); *chwysu* (*to sweat*); *yn nhŷ fy nhâd* (*in my father's house*); *pôb dyn* (*every man*).

ACCENT. (Gr. §§ 38–56.)

§ 5. Words of two syllables and upwards are accentuated on the *penult*; i.e., the last syllable but one (as *llan'au*, villages): some are accentuated on the *ultima*; i.e., the last syllable (as *glanhau'*, to clean): and some few on the *antepenult*; i.e., the last syllable but two (as *medd'wdod*, drunkenness).

§ 6. Put the accent on the proper syllable in the following words:—*Cymmer* (*take thou*); *cymmeryd* (*to take*); *cymmeradwy* (*acceptable*); *pechod* (*a sin*); *pechadur* (*a sinner*); *pechaduriaid* (*sinners*); *prydferth* (*beautiful*); *prydferthwch* (*beauty*).

Cryfhau (*to strengthen*, Gr. § 40); *cryfhânt* (*they will strengthen*); *nacâu* (*to refuse*); *nacewch* (*you will refuse*); *caniatâd* (*permission*, Gr. § 41); *cyfiawnhâd* (*justification*); *nacâd* (*a refusal*); *parotoi* (*to prepare*, Gr. §§ 42, 43); *dileu* (*to abolish*); *dyheu* (*to pant*); *ymdroi* (*to loiter*); *parotown* (*we shall prepare*); *ymdrowch* (*you will loiter*); *bwytawn* (*we shall eat*, Gr. § 44); *gwrandewch* (*you will listen*); *tarewch* (*you will strike*); *parhaus* (*lasting*, Gr. § 45); *cyfleus* (*convenient*); *chwareus* (*playful*); *diblant* (*childless*, Gr. § 46); *dibaid* (*incessant*); *didôr* (*uninterrupted*); *ymôlch* (*wash thyself*, Gr. § 48); *yngûdd* (*hide thyself*); *ystorm* (*a storm*, Gr. § 49); *ystanc* (*a stake*); *ystôl* (*a stool*); *myfi* (*I*, Gr. § 51); *efe* (*he*); *nyni* (*we*); *prydawn* (*afternoon*, Gr. § 54); *ysgolaig* (*a scholar*); *cythrwll* (*disturbance*).

Marwnad (*an elegy*, Gr. §§ 55, 56); *gwaewffon* (*a spear*); *chwerwder* (*bitterness*); *Saesoneg* (*the English language*).

QUANTITY. (Gr. §§ 57–69.)

§ 7. **Monosyllables.** What consonants are the indicators of the *long* sound; and what of the *short* sound? Gr. §§ 59, 60.

What is the quantity of a vowel before two consonants? *Gr.* § 62.

What is the quantity of *cant* (they shall have); and what in N.W. is the quantity of *Crist* (Christ), and *Ūesg* (feeble)? *Gr.* § 62, (a), (b).

§ 8. Give the quantity of the following words:—*Boch* (a cheek); *ac* (and); *tas* (a stack); *ing* (a strait); *cwd* (a bag); *twt* (neat); *cant* (a hundred); *nerth* (strength); *bedd* (a grave); *cam* (a step); *swp* (a heap); *nef* (heaven); *at* (to); *nith* (a niece); *teg* (fair); *nac* (nor); *gwnant* (they will do); *pont* (a bridge); *sach* (a sack); *swllt* (a shilling); *gwallt* (hair of the head); *cosp* (punishment); *trist* (sad); *hesg* (rushes); *llath* (a yard); *mam* (a mother); *gwerth* (value); *mes* (acorns); *sef* (namely); *peth* (a thing); *gwellt* (straw); *gwarth* (disgrace); *llong* (a ship).

§ 9. Diphthongs. *Gr.* § 63.

What is the quantity in N.W. of *tew* (fat), and *rhaw* (a spade)? *Gr.* § 63 (a).

§ 10. Give the quantity of the following words:—*Aur* (gold); *byw* (living); *gwaith* (a work); *mawr* (large); *lliw* (a colour); *Duw* (God); *saith* (seven); *mewn* (in); *awr* (an hour); *flowch* (flee ye); *cewch* (you shall have); *daeth* (he came); *oed* (age); *troi* (to turn); *llaeth* (milk); *gwneyd* (to do); *llaith* (damp); *neu* (or); *rhew* (frost); *baw* (dirt); *maen* (a stone); *poen* (pain); *cau* (to shut); *cei* (thou shalt have); *braw* (horror); *briw* (a cut); *ffoi* (to flee); *caws* (cheese); *croes* (a cross); *gwaeth* (worse); *taith* (a journey); *mawn* (peat); *llaw* (a hand).

§ 11. **Wy** has two different sounds, the *vocalic* and the *consonantal*.

In the vocalic *wy*, *w* is a vowel, and is therefore sounded by itself, and has the same sound as the Eng. *oo* in *boon* and *look*. Thus *bîtyd* (food) and *mîwyniant* (enjoyment) are sounded respectively somewhat like *booid* and *mooiniant*. In the consonantal *wy*, *w* is a consonant, and is sounded conjointly with *y*, and has the same sound as the Eng. *w* in *win*, *was*. Thus *gwŷn* (lust) and *gwŷn* (white) are sounded respectively somewhat like *gween* and *gwin*.¹

¹ In the present Work monosyllabic words with *wy* are distinguished,—

§ 12. **Penults.** *Gr.* §§ 64–69.

§ 13. Give the quantity of the penults in the following words:—*Camu* (from *càm*), to step; *beddau* (fr. *bédd*, graves; *mesen* (fr. *més*), an acorn; *twyllo* (fr. *tûyll*), to deceive; *mamau* (fr. *màm*), mothers; *sachau* (fr. *sâch*), sacks; *hela* (fr. *hèl*), to hunt; *celu* (fr. *cél*), to hide; *gwerthu* (fr. *gwèrth*), to sell; *nentydd* (fr. *nànt*), brooks; *pontydd* (fr. *pònt*), bridges; *cofiwch* (fr. *côf*), remember; *dyddiau* (fr. *dýdd*), days; *glanwaith* (fr. *glân*), clean; *glanhau*,² to clean; *glanhâd*,² a cleaning; *glendid*, beauty; *caru* (fr. *câr*), to love; *cariad*, love; *hoffi* (fr. *höff*), to like; *hoffder*, fondness.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

§ 14. The personal pronouns in common use may be divided into the *simple*—the *double*—and the *conjunctive*.

§ 15. **Preceding the verb.** The following forms are used when the pronouns are put before the verb:—

§ 16. *Simple.*

- | | | | |
|--------------------|-----------------------|---------------------------------------------|----------------------|
| 1. Mi, <i>I</i> . | 2. Ti, <i>thou</i> . | 3. Efe (efo ³), <i>he, it</i> . | Hi, <i>she, it</i> . |
| 1. Ni, <i>we</i> . | 2. Chwi, <i>you</i> . | 3. Hŵy, <i>they</i> . | Hŵy, <i>they</i> . |

This form is used as *nominative* to verbs active and passive, in simple narration.

§ 17. *Double.*

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 1. Myfi, <i>I or me</i> . | 1. Nyni, <i>we or us</i> . |
| 2. Tydi, <i>thou or thee</i> . | 2. Chwychwi, <i>you</i> . |
| 3. Efe (efo), <i>he or him, it</i> . | 3. Hwylt-hwy, <i>they or them</i> . |
| Hyhi, <i>she or her, it</i> . | Hwylt-hwy, <i>they or them</i> . |

w having a mark over it when *wy* is vocalic, and *y* when *wy* is consonantal. *Pŵys* (a pound); *chwys* (sweat); *gwylt* (wind). Penults are also distinguished when short: as *pŵysi* (pounds); *gwyltoedd* (winds). Half-long penults are not distinguished for want of a proper mark.

² The letter *h* in the terminations *hau* and *hâd* does not, like other consonants, make the penult short.

³ *Efo*, N.W., is colloquial.

The preceding assumes the following form in coll. language.

- | | | |
|----------|------------|----------------------|
| 1. Y fi. | 2. Y ti. | 3. Y fe, y fo, y hi. |
| 1. Y ni. | 2. Y chwi. | 3. Y nhwy or y nhw. |

This double form denotes *antithesis*: it is used as *nom. to active verbs*,—*nom. to passive verbs*,—and *accus. before active verbs*, in antithetical sentences.

Nid *myfi* a blanodd y goeden, *it was not I that planted the tree.*

Ai *chwychwi* a gospwyd? *was it you that were punished?*

Os *myfi* yr ydych yn ei geisio, *if you seek me.*

This form is also used for the simple *mi*, *ti*, &c.

§ 18. *Conjunctive.*

- | | |
|----------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| 1. Minnau, <i>I or me also.</i> | 1. Ninnau, <i>we or us also.</i> |
| 2. Tithau, <i>thou or thee also.</i> | 2. Chwithau, <i>you also.</i> |
| 3. Yntau, <i>he or him or it also.</i> | 3. Hwythau, <i>they or them also.</i> |
| Hithau, <i>she or her or it also.</i> | Hwythau, <i>they or them also.</i> |

§ 19. **Following the verb**, &c. The forms which follow occur when the Pronouns are placed after their verbs, &c.,—

§ 20. *Form I.*

The following is employed when the Pronouns stand as *nom. after active verbs*. [The *double form* should not be used after a verb. *Gr.* § 518 (*b*).]

1. { Fi,—finnau, (*pl.* ni,—ninnau), when the verb ends in *f*.
I,—innau, (*pl.* ni,—ninnau), in other cases.
2. { Ti,—tithau, (*pl.* chwi,—chwithau), when the verb ends in *t*.
Di,—dithau (*pl.* chwi,—chwithau), in other cases.
3. Efe,⁴ ef, e, o,—yntau, *pl.* hwy, *coll.* nhwy or nhw,⁵—
hwythau.
Hi,—hithau, *pl.* hwy, *coll.* nhwy or nhw,—hwythau.

⁴ *Efe* is the safest form, and should always be used when the *nom.* and *accus.* are pronouns, 3rd pers. sing. (*Dysgodd efe ef, he taught him.*) *E* and *o* are colloquial,—*e* in S.W., and *o* in N.W.

⁵ *Nhwy* in S.W., and *nhw* in N.W.

§ 21. *Form II.*

1. I, -innau, (pl. ni, -ninnau).
2. Di, -dithau, (pl. chwi, -chwithau).
3. Ef, e, o, -yntau, (pl. hwy, hwynt,⁶-hwythau).
Hi, -hithau, (pl. hwy, hwynt,⁶-hwythau).

§ 22. The preceding form occurs in the following circumstances,—

a) When the pronoun comes objectively after the Infinitive mood or a participle. Daeth yma i'm gwobrwyo *i*,⁷ *he came here to reward me.* Y mae Iorwerth yn fy nysgu *i*, *Iorwerth teaches me.*

b) When it comes objectively after a Finite verb, the subject preceding or following the verb. Hi a'm canmolodd *i*, *she praised me.* Gwobrwyodd Arthur *di*, *Arthur rewarded thee.* ☞ But, gwobrwyodd Arthur *fi* (not *i*), *Arthur rewarded me.* [See below.]

c) When it comes as a subject after a Passive verb, with or without a poss. pronoun before the verb. Fe'm beir *i*, *I am blamed.* Canmolir *di*, *thou art praised.* ☞ But, canmolir *fi*. (not *i*), *I am praised.* [See below.]

d) When it comes after an Infinitive mood in a transitive clause (or the construction called *the accusative for the nominative*). Dywed eich brawd fy mod *i* yn euog, *your brother says that I am guilty.*

e) When it comes after a noun to strengthen the emphasis on the poss. pron. Fy nhad *i*, *my father.*

f) When it comes after a compound preposition (*Gr.* § 373). Ar fy ol *i*, *after me.*

g) ☞ The first pers. sing. has *fi* or *finnau* (not *i* or *innau*), when it stands objectively after the verb and the nom., the nom. being expressed or understood: and also after a passive verb, the verb not being preceded by a poss. pron.

Dysgodd efe *fi*,—dysgodd *fi*, *he taught me.*

Dysgir *fi*, *I am taught.*

⁶ *Hwy* is preferable to *hwynt* after—*nt*. (Os deuant *hwy*, if they come.) Colloquial: *nhwy* or *nhw*.

⁷ The student will observe that this form of the pronouns obtains in every case where a poss. pron. is put before the verb or noun. (Yn fy nysgu *i*, *teaching me.* Fy nhad *i*, *my father.*)

§ 23. *Pronominal prepositions* (Gr. §§ 378–380) have the following form. *Eiddof*, mine, &c., and *dyma* (here is, &c.), *dyna* (there is, &c.), *dacw* (yonder is, &c.), and *wela* (behold, here is, &c.), have the same form after them.

- | | |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. Fi,–finnau. | 1. Ni,–ninnau. |
| 2. Ti,–tithau. | 2. Chwi,–chwithau. |
| 3. Ef, ^s fe, fo,–yntau. | 3. Hwyl, (nhwyl, nhw),–hwythau. |
| Hi,–hithau. | Hwyl, (nhwyl, nwy),–hwythau. |

§ 24. The prep. *i*, to, and a pronoun, are thus written,—

- | | |
|---------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. I mi,–i minnau. | 1. I ni,–i ninnau. |
| 2. I ti,–i tithau. | 2. I chwi,–i chwithau. |
| 3. Iddo ef, fe, fo,–iddo yntau. | 3. Iddynt hwyl,–iddynt hwylthau. |
| Iddi hi,–iddi hithau. | Iddynt hwyl,–iddynt hwylthau. |

§ 25. Heb law, *besides*; ond, *but*; oddi eithr and oddigertth, except; fel and megys, like; O! O!, are usually followed by the *double form*, § 17.

Heb law tydi, *besides thee*. O! tydi, O! thou. Megys myfi, *like me*.

§ 26. *A*, gyda, and efo, with; na, than, nor; and a of the absolute construction, are followed by the *simple form*, § 16 (also the *conjunctive*, § 18), or the *double*, § 17.

Gyda mi or myfi, *with me*. Gwell na mi or myfi, *better than I*.
A mi or myfi yn cerdded, *I walking*.

§ 27. *A*, as, is followed by the *simple* or *conjunctive*, §§ 16, 18.

Ond nid cystal a chwi, *but not as good as you*. Cyn waethed a minnau, *as bad as I*.

^s Efe also may be used after *dyma*, *dyna*, &c. Dacw efe, ef, fe, or fo, *yonder he is*.

WELSH EXERCISES.

CHAPTER I.

[The article,—article repeated—*a* and *ac*.]

Y tâd, *the father*. Y fam, *the mother*. Yr aur, *the gold*.
Mam a thad, *mother and father*. Y fam a'r tad, *the mother and father*.

Notes and references.

§ 28. The difference between *y*, *yr*, and *'r*. (*Rowland's Welsh Grammar*, 4th Ed., §§ 394, 395.) Y brenin, *the king*. Yr oen, *the lamb*. Yr haiarn, *the iron*. Y tad a'r fam, *the father and mother*.

§ 29. The Welsh language has no indefinite article. A king, *brenin*.

§ 30. The article repeated. *Gr.* § 411. Y tad a'r fam = *the father and the mother*; *the father and mother*.

§ 31. What sounds does the article govern? *Gr.* § 399. Y mab, *the son*. Y ferch [rad. merch], *the daughter*. Y meibion, *the sons*. Y merched, *the daughters*.

§ 32. **A** and **ac**. *A* is put before a *consonant*, and *ac* before a *vowel*. Ci, a *dafad*, ac oen, *a dog, and a sheep, and a lamb*.

☞ Several particles have, like *a* and *ac*, two forms, one ending with a *consonant*, and the other with a *vowel*. The rule is, as above, a *consonant* before a *vowel*, and a *vowel* before a *consonant*. [Cf. L. *a* and *ab*.]

§ 33. Learn the table of initial mutations. *Gr.* § 31. Read also *Gr.* §§ 28–30.

Give the different sounds of *ci*,—*brenin*,—*dafad*,—*llaw*,—*merch*,—*tadau*.

§ 34. VOCABULARY.

The, <i>y, yr, 'r.</i>	Gold, <i>aur, (m.)</i>
Horse, <i>ceffyl, pl.-au¹ (m².)</i>	Silver; money, <i>àrian (ar pl.)</i>
King, <i>brenin, pl.-oedd (m.)</i>	Iron, <i>haiarn, pl. heiyrn (m.)</i>
Queen, <i>brenines, pl.-au (f.)</i>	Dog, <i>ci, pl. cŵn (m.)</i>
Lamb, <i>oen, pl. ŵyn (m.)</i>	Head; top, <i>pèn, pl.-au (m.)</i>
Sheep, <i>dafad, pl. defaid (f.)</i>	Hand, <i>llaw, pl. dwylaw (f.)</i>
Father, <i>tâd, pl.-au (m.)</i>	Spade, <i>rhaw, pl.-iau (f.)</i>
Mother, <i>mâm, pl.-au (f.)</i>	And, <i>a (asp.³), àc.</i>
Son, <i>mâb, pl. mèibion (m.)</i>	And the, <i>a'r.</i>
Daughter, <i>mèrch, pl.-ed (f.)</i>	Or, <i>nèu (md.)</i>

§ 35. EXERCISES.

A.) *Y ceffyl.*—*Y pen.*—*Y ddafad.*—*Y brenin.*—*Y frenines.*
—Yr oen.—*Yr haiarn.*—*Y fam.*—*Y tadau.*—*Y mamau.*—*Y*
tad a'r fam.—*Y fam a'r tad.*—*Dafad ac oen.*—*Oen a dafad.*—
Mam a thad.—*Y breninoedd a'r breninesau.*—*Y ddafad a'r*
oen.—*Dafad a chi.*—*Ci a dafad.*—*Defaid ac ŵyn.*—*Ceffylau*
a chwn.—*Y frenines a'r brenin.*—*Y ci a'r ddafad.*—*Y ceffylau*
a'r defaid.—*Y penau.*—*Aur ac arian.*

B.) *The dog.*—*The dog and the sheep (pl.)*—*A king and a*
queen.—*Lambs and dogs.*—*The horses.*—*The gold*—*The sil-*
ver and gold.—*Dogs and horses.*—*The lamb and sheep.*—*The*
iron, the gold, and the silver.—*The lambs and the dogs.*—*A*
dog and a lamb.—*Silver and gold.*—*Kings and queens.*—
The top.—*The fathers and mothers.*—*Son and daughter.*—
The daughter.—*The son and daughter.*—*The daughter and*
son.—*Sons and daughters.*—*The money.*

C.) *Y llaw (Gr. § 401, b).*—*Y pen a'r llaw.*—*Y llaw a'r*
rhaw.—*Y mab, y ferch, y tad, a'r fam.*—*Y dwylaw.*—*Y dwylaw*
a'r penau.—*Brenin neu frenines.*—*Y ceffyl neu'r ci.*—*Aur neu*
arian.—*Rhawiau a dwylaw.*—*Ceffylau neu ddefaid.*—*Cwn a*
cheffylau.—*Defaid a chi.*—*Rhaw neu law.*—*Ceffyl neu gi.*

¹ That is, the syllable *au* added to *ceffyl* forms the plural: *ceffylau*, horses.

² Explanation of contractions:—*m.* = masculine gender; *f.* = feminine gender; *pl.* = plural number; *rd.* = radical sound; *md.* = middle sound; *nas.* = nasal sound; *asp.* = aspirate sound.

³ That is, *a* governs, or *is followed by*, the aspirate sound. Read Gr. §§ 883, 884.

D.) The hand and head. The hands and heads.—The daughter, the son, the mother, and father. The tops.—Mothers or daughters.—The iron, the gold, or the silver.—Hands and heads.—The hand or the spade. A lamb or a sheep.—The dogs or horses.—Mothers and fathers.—The sons or daughters.—A sheep and a dog.—Dogs and sheep.—Sheep, and dogs, and horses.—The hand, the spade, and the head.—A dog and a horse.

CHAPTER II.

[Adjectives after nouns,—government,—plural form,—“dyn a dynes dda,”—*dyn* and *gwr*, *dynes* and *gwraig*.]

Tad da, *a good father.* Mam dda, *a good mother.*
Tadau da, *good fathers.* Mamau da, *good mothers.*

Notes and references.

§ 36. Common adjectives usually follow their nouns. *Gr.*
§ 468. *Dyn caredig, a kind man.*

§ 37. The adjective is put in the *middle* sound after a *fem.* noun *singular.* *Gr.* § 474. *Y frenines ddoeth, the wise queen.*

§ 38. Some adjectives have a *pl.* form: others are the same in *sing.* and *pl.* *Dynion duon* [*sing.* *du*], *black men.* *Mamau da, good mothers.*

How is the *pl.* number formed? *Gr.* §§ 164–169. Also *Gr.* § 467, note *a.*

§ 39. *Dyn a dynes dda, a good man and (a good) woman.* When nouns of different genders are coupled together, and qualified by the same adjective, the adjective is made to agree with the noun next to it.

§ 40. VOCABULARY.

Good, da,	Kind, (to), <i>caredig</i> (ŵrth, <i>md.</i>)
Wise, doeth (<i>pl.</i> -ion. ¹)	Sensible, cáll, <i>synwryol.</i>
Black, du, <i>pl.</i> -on.	Hard, caled (<i>pl.</i> -ion, or <i>celyd.</i>)

¹ When a *pl.* ending or a *pl.* form is enclosed in parentheses, the *adj.*

Great, large, big, mawr (<i>pl.</i> -ion.)	Mare, càseg, <i>pl.</i> cèsyg (<i>f.</i>)
Small, little, bach; bychan (<i>f.</i> bechan) <i>pl.</i> bychain.	House, ty, <i>pl.</i> tai (<i>m.</i>)
Hot, poeth, <i>pl.</i> -ion.	Stone, càreg, <i>pl.</i> cèryg (<i>f.</i>)
Cold, oer, <i>pl.</i> -ion.	Finger, bŷs, <i>pl.</i> bŷsedd (<i>m.</i>)
High, uchel.	Girl, geneth, <i>pl.</i> -od (<i>f.</i>)
Industrious, diwyd.	Boy, bàchgen, <i>pl.</i> bèchgyn (<i>m.</i>)
Husband, gŵr, <i>pl.</i> gwŵr (<i>m.</i>)	Church, eglwys, <i>pl.</i> eglwysi (<i>f.</i>)
Wife, gwraig, <i>pl.</i> gwraedd (<i>f.</i>)	Hill, brŷn, <i>pl.</i> -iau (<i>m.</i>)
Man, dŷn, <i>pl.</i> dŷnion; gŵr, <i>pl.</i> gwŵr, ² (<i>m.</i>)	On, upon, ar (<i>md.</i>)
Woman, dynes, benyw; gwraig; ³ <i>pl.</i> gwraedd, benywod, merch- ed (<i>f.</i>)	Into, to, i (<i>md.</i>)
	From, out of, o (<i>md.</i>)
	Between, rhwng (<i>rd.</i>)
	Into [to] the, i'r.
	From [out of] the, o'r.

§ 41. EXERCISES.

A.) Bachgen da.—Geneth dda.—Bechgyn da.—Genethod da.—Y brenin doeth.—Y fam garedig.—Tad doeth a mam garedig.—Ceffylau neu gesyg duon.—Ty mawr ac uchel.—Wyn bach.—Tai bychain.—Yr oen bach a'r ddafad fawr.—Dynion caredig a gwraedd [benywod, merched] diwyd.—Haiarn poeth neu oer.—Y gaseg ddu a'r ceffyl du.—Careg galed.—Y ceryg celyd.—Y gwr caredig, a'r wraig garedig a da.—Bachgen diwyd a synwrol.—Yr eneth gall.—Y fenyw dda a charedig.—Y pen uchel.—Y bachgen a'r eneth gall.—Bys mawr neu fach.

B.) The black man.—A hard stone.—The high hills.—Small fingers.—Wise queens.—The kind girl.—A good husband and a kind wife.—The black mares or the (black, *omit*) horses.—A sensible husband and (a sensible, *omit*) wife.—A cold hand.—The little girl.—A large hand and a small finger.—Sensible men.—A sensible woman.—Hard stones.—An industrious girl.—The good houses.—A little boy and a little girl.—The big boys and the little girls.—Black dogs.—Cold houses or high hills.—A big head and a large hand.—Cold or hot iron.—Industrious women.

may or may not be used in the *pl.* *Dynion doeth*, or *dynion doethion*, *wise men*.

² *Dŷn* is the general term for man (cf. *L. homo*); *gŵr* is always a term of respect (cf. *L. vir*).

³ *Dynes* is the general term for woman: *gwraig* is always a term of respect.

C.) Ar gareg galed.—Ar y ceryg celyd.—I dy ac o dy.—O Eglwys fawr i Eglwys fach.—Ar fryniau uchel.—Llaw fechan.—Dwyllaw bychain (*Gr.* § 161).—Rhwng bechgyn da.—I dy mawr.—Ar y pen.—O'r ty i'r Eglwys.—O dai i dai.—Rhwng Eglwys fechan a thy mawr.—Y dynion a'r merched caredig.—Yr haiarn poeth a'r llaw oer.—O dai i Eglwysi.—Y gwragedd diwyd a'r gwŷr doeth.—Dyn a dynes ddu.—Y brenin a'r frenines ddoeth.—Caredig wrth fab.—Haiarn a chargeg galed.—Cesyg a cheffylau duon.—Y dynion synwryol.

D.) Between high hills.—A small church on a high hill.—Out of the church.—Into the house.—Small churches on high hills.—Black men and (*black, omit*) women.—On large stones.—Into a house.—Out of the houses.—Good horses and (*good, omit*) mares.—From small houses into large churches.—A big man.—A great man.—Between a hill and a church.—From the hand to the head.—The men and women.—The husbands and wives.—Industrious and sensible women.—Kind to little girls.—On the top.—The good money.—On high and cold hills.—From house to house.—Kind to dogs and horses.

CHAPTER III.

[Adjectives before nouns,—numerals to *four*,—*o* after numerals,—government,—“*dau ddyndu*.”]

Hen dy, *an old house*. Hen dai, *old houses*.
 Pedwar dyn,—pedwar o ddynion, *four men*.
 Tair o'r buchod duon, *three of the black cows*.

Notes and References.

§ 42. Most common adjectives are often in poetry, and occasionally in prose, put before their nouns, and are then followed by the *middle* sound. *Gr.* §§ 469, 473. Y caredig gyfaill, *the kind friend*.

Prif, principal, chief, always precedes. *Unig*, only, precedes: *unig*, lonely, follows. *Càm*, false, precedes: *càm*, crooked, follows. *Hên*, old, and *gâu*, false, most generally, and *gwîr*, true, very often precede.

[All adjective pronouns, except *arall*, other, and *ëll*, all, precede their nouns.]

§ 43. Y garedig fam, *the kind mother*. Why is "garedig" in the *mid.* sound? Gr. § 400.

§ 44. Numerals are placed before their nouns, which, unless preceded by *o*, of, are put in the *singular*: if *o* intervenes, the nouns are *plural*. Gr. § 490.

"Four lions," *pedwar llew*=four lion: *pedwar o lewod*=four of lions.

§ 45. Two or three things, *dau beth neu dri*,—*dau neu dri o bethau*.

Two or three little things, *dau neu dri o bethau bychain*.

When the noun is accompanied by another adj., the construction with *o* is preferable: *dau neu dri o bethau bychain* is better Welsh than *dau beth bychan neu dri*.

§ 46. *Dau*, *tri*, and *pedwar*, have feminine forms,—*dwy*, *tair*, *pedair*. *Dau fab*, two sons; *dwy ferch*, two daughters. *Tri brawd*, three brothers; *tair chwaer*, three sisters. *Pedwar tarw*, four bulls; *pedair buwch*, four cows.

§ 47. *Un*, mas.,—*tair*,—*pedwar*,—*pedair*, govern the *rad.*
Un, fem.,—*dau*,—*dwy*, „ *middle.*
Tri, „ *aspirate.*

[The government of numerals is somewhat irregular. Gr. §§. 491–497.]

§ 48. *Dau* and *dwy* are put in the *mid.* after the article. *Y ddau darw*, the two bulls. *Y ddwy fuwch*, the two cows.

The other numerals, whether mas. or fem., retain the *rad.* after the article. *Y tri dyn*, the three men. *Y tair dynes*, the three women.

§ 49. *Dau ddyn du*, two black men. *Dwy ddynes ddu*, two black women. Gr. § 498, exceptions.

§ 50. VOCABULARY.

Old, *hên*.
 False (=lying), *gâu*.
 False (=wrong), *câm*.
 Crooked, *câm*.—*pl. cwm'*
 True, *gwir*.
 Only: lonely, *unig*.
 Principal, chief, *prif*.
 Dear (=beloved), *ânwyl*.
 Merciful, *trugarog*.
 New, *newydd* (*pl.-ion*.)

One, *ün*.
 Two, *dau*, *f. dwy*.
 Three, *tri*, *f. tair*.
 Four, *pedwar*, *f. pedair*.
 Brother, *brâwd*, *pl. brodyr* (*m.*)
 Sister, *chwaer*, *pl. chwiorydd* (*f.*)
 Friend, *cyfaill*, *pl. cyfeillion* (*m.*)
 Village, *llàn*, *pl.-au* (*f.*)
 Bull, *tarw*, *pl. teirw* (*m.*)
 Cow, *bùwch*, *pl. buchod* (*f.*)

Lion, llew, <i>pl.-od</i> , ¹ (<i>m.</i>)	Arrow, saeth, <i>pl.-au</i> (<i>f.</i>)
Testimony, tystiolaeth, ² <i>pl.-au.</i>	Religion, crefydd, <i>pl.-au</i> (<i>f.</i>)
Joy, llawenydd (<i>m.</i>)	Thing, peth, <i>pl.-au</i> (<i>m.</i>)
God, Dduw, <i>pl.-iau</i> (<i>m.</i>)	Of, o (<i>md.</i>)
Prophet, prophwyd, <i>pl.-i</i> (<i>m.</i>)	Not, nid (<i>rd.</i>)
Prophecy, prophwydoliaeth, ² <i>pl.-au.</i>	

§ 51. EXERCISES.

A.) Hen gyfaill.—Hen lewod.—Y caredig frawd.—Gau grefydd.—Yr hen wr da.—Unig ferch.—Y ddafad unig.—Y prif ddynion.—Yr unig chwaer.—Gwir lawenydd.—Gwir a gau grefyddau.—Y garedig a'r anwyl chwaer.—Y trugarog Dduw.—Y gam dystiolaeth.—Saeth gam.—Y saethau ceimion.—Yr unig ddyn call.—Gwir gyfaill.—Gau neu wir brophwyd.—Y wir brophwydoliaeth (*Gr.* § 396).—Y prif beth.—Hen gyfeillion a chyfeillion newydd.—Hen beth, nid peth newydd.

B.) The principal man.—True prophets, not false prophets.—Crooked arrows.—Old friends.—The old black lions.—A lonely house.—The only sensible girl.—The true God.—The true prophecy.—The new friend and the old friend.—An only brother.—Dear sisters.—A false (= wrong) testimony.—False (= lying), not true religion.—A dear and a kind friend.—From old houses into new houses.—The chief things.—The only sister.—True, not false (= lying) joy.—Dear brothers.—The crooked arrow.—False (= lying) gods.—An old prophet.—The lonely girl.—An only brother.

C.) Un tarw ac un fuwch.—Dau brophwyd a dwy brophwydoliaeth.—Tri brawd a thair chwaer.—Pedwar tarw du a phedair buwch ddu.—Un peth mawr.—Dau neu dri o bethau bychain.—Tri neu bedwar o'r brodyr.—Dwy Eglwys neu dair.—Tair careg neu bedair.—Un neu ddwy o'r saethau ceimion.—Un llew du.—Un llan fach (*Gr.* § 493).—Un rhaw dda.—Y pedwar brawd a'r tair chwaer.—Tri o deirw duon a phedair o fuchod duon.—Dwy neu dair o chwiorydd caredig.—Y tri brawd doeth.—Y ddau wir brophwyd.—Y ddwy fenyw synwrol.—Y tri tharw du a'r pedair buwch ddu.—Tri chi a thri cheffyl.—Y tair llan.—Y pedair saeth gam.

¹ See *Gr.* § 116 (c).

² Give the gender of derivatives ending with *aeth*. *Gr.* § 143.

D.) Three sisters.—Two new friends.—Four old houses.—One black bull and one black cow.—One or two lions.—Three of the black lions, and two of the black sheep.—One high hill.—The only true God.—Between three or four of the kind sisters.—One large spade and one small hand.—The two testimonies.—The two old friends.—The three women.—Three or four arrows.—The three black bulls and the four black cows.—Between two things.—Between three or four of the boys.—Three or four black bulls.—The two good brothers and the two industrious sisters.—Between the two old friends and the three new friends.—The merciful God.—Two or three of the industrious women.—Two or three stones.—One or two small villages.—Three or four true friends.—Two or three good spades.

CHAPTER IV.

[Demonstrative pronouns,—*yma*, *yna*, *acw*, used pronominally,—“*y*, *ddwy gath wen hyny*” or “*hono*,”—*mewn* and *yn*,—*gwyrdd*, *glâs*, *llŷyd*,—*lle* and *mân*.]

Y llwybr hwn or yma, this path. Y goeden hon or yma, this tree.

Ar hyd y llwybrau llydain hyn or yma, along these broad paths.

Notes and References.

§ 52. *Y llwybr hwn = the path this. Gr. § 203.*

§ 53. If an adj. is added, it stands *next to the noun*, either before or after. *Yr unig blentyn hwn, this only child. Y ffordd gul hon, this narrow road.*

§ 54. The adverbs *yma*, here, *yna*, there, *acw*, yonder, are regularly employed as demonstrative pronouns; and the use of them is not, like their English equivalents, to be looked upon as barbarism. In coll. Welsh they occur much oftener than the regular demonstratives.

They are added to nouns *mas.* and *fem.*, *singular* and *plural*.

§ 55. The demonstrative pronouns, and adverbs used pronominally, put in construction with nouns, are the following. (*Gr.* § 202.)

a.) Y ceffyl *hîcn* or *yma*, *this horse*. Y ceffylau *hîcn* or *yma*, *these horses (m.)*
Y gaseg *hôn* or *yma*, *this mare*. Y cesyg *hîcn* or *yma*, *these mares (f.)*

b.) Yr oen *yma*, *that lamb*. Yr ŵyn *yma*, *those lambs (m.)*
Y ddaŵad *yma*, *that sheep*. Y defaid *yma*, *those sheep (f.)*

Pointing to an object under cognizance, and *near* = *there*.

c.) Y llwybr *âcw*, *that or yonder path*. Y llwybrau *âcw*, *those or yonder paths (m.)*
Y ffordd *âcw*, *that or yonder road*. Y ffyrdd *âcw*, *those or yonder roads (f.)*

Pointing to an object under cognizance, but *distant* = *yonder*.

d.) Y mab *hîcnw*, *that son*. Y meibion *hîny*, *those sons (m.)*
Y ferch *hônô*, *that daughter*. Y merched *hîny*, *those daughters (f.)*

Speaking of an object *out of sight (o. of s.)*

☞ In the Exercises, “that (= *there*)” or “that (= *near*)” is to be translated by *yma*; “that (= *yonder*),” by *âcw*; and “that (= *o. of s.*)” by *hîcnw*, *f. hono*.

§ 56. When a sing. noun is preceded by a numeral, and followed by a demonstrative, the demonstrative is put in the *pl.*, but sometimes in the *singular*.

Y pedwar milwr *hîny*, *those four soldiers*.

Y ddwy gath wen *hîny* or *hono*, *those two white cats*.

§ 57. *Trwy* and *drwy*; *tros* and *dros*. *Gr.* § 739.

§ 58. *Mewn* and *yn*. *Mewn* before *indefinitive*, and *yn* before *definitive* words. *Gr.* § 732. *Mewn maes*, *in a field*; *yn y maes*, *in the field*. *Mewn tref*, *in a town*; *yn y dref hon*, *in this town*.

Explain the terms *definitive* and *indefinitive*. *Gr.* § 617, (a).

§ 59. VOCABULARY.

Country, gwlad, <i>pl.</i> gwledydd (<i>f.</i>)	Cloth (woollen), brethyn, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)
Road, way, ffordd, <i>pl.</i> ffyrdd (<i>f.</i> ¹)	Bad, naughty, drwg.
Path, llwybr, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)	Narrow, cwl, <i>pl.</i> -ion.
Pony, mèrlyn (<i>m.</i>), mèrlen (<i>f.</i>); <i>pl.</i> mèrlod. ²	Wide, broad, llydan, <i>pl.</i> llydain.
Child, plèntyn, ³ <i>pl.</i> plànt.	White, gwyn (<i>f.</i> gwèn), <i>pl.</i> gwyn- ion. ⁶
Tree, coeden, ³ <i>pl.</i> coed.	Yellow, melyn (<i>f.</i> melen), <i>pl.</i> mel- ynion.
Wood, coed, (<i>pl.</i>)	Blue, glâs, <i>pl.</i> glèision.
Cat, câth, <i>pl.</i> -od (<i>f.</i>)	Green, gwyrdd, ⁷ <i>pl.</i> -ion; glâs, <i>pl.</i> glèision. ⁸
Soldier, milwr ⁴ (<i>m.</i>)	Grey, llwyd, <i>pl.</i> -ion; glâs, <i>pl.</i> glèision. ⁹
Place, lle, ⁵ <i>pl.</i> lleoedd, <i>coll.</i> llefydd (<i>m.</i>); mân, ⁵ <i>pl.</i> -au.	Through (prep.), trwy, drwy (<i>md.</i>)
Town, trêf, <i>pl.</i> -ydd (<i>f.</i>)	Over (prep.), tros, dros (<i>md.</i>)
Field, cae, <i>pl.</i> -au, maes, <i>pl.</i> meus- ydd (<i>m.</i>)	Along (prep.), âr hŷd (<i>md.</i> or <i>rd.</i>)
Pound (in weight) pŵys, <i>pl.</i> -i (<i>m.</i>)	In, at (prep.), mewn (<i>rd.</i>): yn (<i>nas.</i>)
Half, hanner, <i>pl.</i> -i (<i>m.</i>)	Demonstr. pronouns: see above.
Quarter, cwarter or chwarter, <i>pl.</i> -i (<i>m.</i>)	

§ 60. EXERCISES.

A.) Y merlyn hwn [yma¹⁰].—Y merlod hyn [yma].—Y ffordd hon [yma].—Y gath felen yma a'r gath lwyd acw.—Y

¹ What is the rule? *Gr.* § 139, a), b).

² *Gr.* § 127.

³ Give the gender of derivatives ending with *yn* and *en*. *Gr.* §§ 142, 143.

⁴ Give the plural of *milwr*. *Gr.* § 130.

⁵ *Lle* is the general term for place; *mân* is place when = a spot or a particular place.—The gender of *mân* is irregular. When preceded by the article it is generally *fem.*: when followed by a common adjective (with or without an art. preceding), it is generally *mas.*: when preceded by a numeral, it is *mas.* *Y fân, the place; y fân yma, this place.* *Mân diogel, a safe place; y mân diogel, the safe place.* *Mewn dau fân, in two places.*

⁶ Adjectives denoting colour are almost invariably made plural.

⁷ *Gwèrdd* may be used for *fem.*, but it is not coll. See *Gr.* §§ 159, 160, and *Æ* Note (b).

⁸ *Glâs* is = green when it describes the colour of what grows out of the ground, such as *grass, leaves, &c.*

⁹ *Glâs* is = grey when the colour of *horses, &c.* is described.

¹⁰ Words enclosed in brackets [] may be used instead of those which precede them.

ffyrdd llydain hyn neu'r llwybrau culion acw.—Y plentyn bach yma.—Y plant da yma, a'r plant drwg yna, a'r bachgen a'r eneth ddrwg acw.—Yr hen brophwyd hwnw.—Y ferlen las hono, a'r merlod gleision hyn.—I'r dref fawr hono, a thrwy y cacau [meusydd] gleision yma.—Dau neu dri o'r milwyr hyn.—Y ddau filwr hyn.—Trwy'r gwledydd hyny, ac i'r wlad hon.—O'r lle unig hwn i'r lleoedd [llefydd] oerion hyny.—Ar hyd y ffyrdd culion hyn a thros y bryniau uchel acw.—Y ddwy gath lwyd yna.—Y cathod gwynion hyny.—Dros fryn ac ar hyd llwybr cul.—Y ferlen las yma neu'r ferlen ddu hono.—Y brethyn gwyrdd yma neu'r brethyn glas yna.—O'r fan yma i'r fan acw.—Y coed gleision hyn.—Y gath wen acw.

B.) This field.—These green fields.—Those (*o. of s.*) grey cats.—Between those (= *yonder*) green trees.—One or two of these naughty children.—Through this country, and through those (*o. of s.*) countries.—This good soldier, and those (= *there*) four good soldiers.—Along these narrow paths and along those (= *yonder*) broad paths.—Those (*o. of s.*) villages and towns.—Those (= *there*) three white cats.—Those (= *yonder*) four grey ponies (*f.*)—Through this wood into that (= *yonder*) bad road.—These grey horses and those (= *yonder*) green trees.—Green or blue cloth.—This grey head.—Through that (= *yonder*) green wood, and over a high hill.—This yellow gold.—A black cat or a grey cat.—Into this lonely place.—From that (= *yonder*) place into this place.—Over green fields and along a narrow road.—Two white stones, and three blue stones, and one green stone.

C.) Y ddwy goeden fawr yn y cae acw.—Pwys a hanner, neu bwys a thri chwarter.—Dros dri phwys.—Yr arian hyny.—Tri o'r plant bach hyn.—Dros y ffordd ac i'r cae.—Pedwar pwys a chwarter.—Ar hyd y llwybr cul yma.—Y brethyn da hwnw.—Dau neu dri o bwysi.—Y ddau ferlyn gwyn acw.—Yn yr hen dy hwn.—Yn y tai newyddion hyny.—Y cwn duon hyn a'r cathod melynion yna.—Mewn tref fawr.—Caseg las mewn cae glas.—Yn y fan hono.—Mewn tri neu bedwar o fanau.—Yn y lleoedd unig hyny.

D.) This green thing.—In two or three pounds.—The two white ponies (*m.*) in that (= *yonder*) field.—Little children in lonely places.—Into that (= *there*) road, and through a wood,

and over a hill.—Those (= *there*) white dogs.—At that (*o. of s.*) place.—Over three pounds and three quarters.—In those (*o. of s.*) yellow hands.—This grey cloth or that (= *yonder*) green cloth.—Four pounds or four pounds and a half.—On this grey head.—The grey ponies in green fields.—In two or three places.—In this place, not in that (= *there*) place.—Between these narrow roads and those (= *yonder*) wide paths.—Those (*o. of s.*) two industrious children.

CHAPTER V.

[Possessive pronouns,—government,—contracted forms,—*i'w dy, i'w thy, i'w tai*,—*h* prefixed,—emphatic possessive,—“*fy nhad a'm mam*,”—“*hanner awr wedi dau*.”]

Fy mrawd a'm chwaer, *my brother and sister.*

Ei frawd ef, nid eich brawd chwi, *his brother, not your brother.*

Notes and references.§ 61. *Government of possessives.*

<i>Fy</i> , my, governs	<i>nasal</i> ; <i>fy nghoes</i> , <i>my leg.</i>
<i>Dy</i> , <i>yth</i> , thy; <i>ei</i> , his, its,	<i>middle</i> ; <i>dy goes</i> , <i>thy leg.</i>
<i>Ei</i> , her, its,	<i>aspirate</i> ; <i>ei choes</i> , <i>her leg.</i>
<i>Ym</i> , my; <i>ein</i> , our; <i>eich</i> , } your; <i>eu</i> , their, }	<i>rad.</i> ; <i>ein coesau</i> , <i>our legs.</i>

§ 62. The possessives have a contracted form, employed chiefly after conjunctions, prepositions, and particles ending with *vowels*.

'm, my: a'm plentyn, <i>and my child.</i>	'n, our: a'n plant, <i>and our children.</i>
'th, thy: a'th blentyn, <i>and thy child.</i>	'ch, your: a'ch plant, <i>and your children.</i>
'i, his, its: a'i blentyn, <i>and his child.</i> }	'u, their: a'u plant, <i>and their children.</i> }
'i, her, its: a'i phlentyn, <i>and her child.</i> }	

After the prep. *i* the contracted forms '*i*' and '*u*' are turned into *w*, for euphony. I'w dy, *to his house.* I'w thy, *to her house.* I'w tai, *to their houses.*

§ 63. Words with vowel initials have *h* prefixed to them when following '*m*',—*ei* or '*i*', fem.,—*ein* or '*n*',—*eu* or '*n*'. Fy

aur a'm harian, *my gold and silver*. Ei hawr werthfawr, *her precious hour*. Ein hamser, *our time*. Eu Heglwys newydd, *their new Church*.

§ 64. *Emphatic possessive*. When the possessive is emphatic (e.g., *my parish*, not *yours*), the personal pronoun is added after the noun or the noun and its concomitants. *Gr.* § 522. The following is the form of pers. pron. when thus employed: *i—di—ef—hi :—ni—chwi—hwy* or *hwynt*. [Preliminary Remarks, §§ 21, 22.]

Fy nillad <i>i</i> , <i>my</i> clothes.	Ein dillad <i>ni</i> , <i>our</i> clothes.
Dy ddillad <i>di</i> , <i>thy</i> clothes.	Eich dillad <i>chwi</i> , <i>your</i> clothes.
Ei ddillad <i>ef</i> , <i>his</i> clothes.	} Eu dillad <i>hwy</i> or <i>hwynt</i> , <i>their</i> clothes.
Ei dillad <i>hi</i> , <i>her</i> clothes.	

The pers. pron. is often added when the poss. is not emphatic; but it is then read as an enclitic. *Fy nillad-i*: ein dillad-*ni*.

§ 65. “*Fy nhad a'm mam*,” = *my father and my mother*; *my father and mother*. *Gr.* § 411.

§ 66. *Order*. *Fy mraich*, *my arm*. *Fy unig frawd*, *my only brother*. *Fy nghalon drom*, *my heavy heart*. *Yn fy ngardd fach i*, *nid yn eich gardd chwi*, *in my little garden, not in your garden*.

§ 67. VOCABULARY.

My, our : fy, ym : ¹ ein.	Heart , càlon, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)
Thy, your : dy, yth : ¹ eich.	Arm , bràich, <i>pl.</i> brèichiau (<i>f.</i>)
His, its, their : ei : eu.	Leg , côes, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)
Her, its, their : ei : eu.	Foot , trôed, <i>pl.</i> trâed (<i>m.</i>)
Time , òmsèr, <i>pl.</i> -oedd, <i>or</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)	Rose , rhòsyn, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)
Hour , àwr, <i>pl.</i> òriau (<i>f.</i>)	Flower , blodèuyn, <i>pl.</i> blodau (<i>m.</i>)
Mountain , mynydd, <i>pl.</i> -oedd, <i>or</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)	Heavy , trwm (<i>f.</i> trom), <i>pl.</i> trymion.
Garden , gàrdd, <i>pl.</i> gèrddi (<i>f.</i>)	Long , hîr, <i>pl.</i> -ion.
Rain , gwllaw (<i>m.</i>)	Short , byr (<i>f.</i> bèr), <i>pl.</i> byrion.
Snow , eira (<i>m.</i>)	Precious , gwèrthfawr.
Parish , plŵyf, <i>pl.</i> -ydd (<i>m.</i>)	Red , côch, <i>pl.</i> -ion.
Bell , clòch, <i>pl.</i> clychau (<i>f.</i>)	Past, after , wedi (<i>rd.</i>)
Clothes , dillad (<i>pl.</i>).	O'clock , o'r glòch, àr glòch. ²

¹ *Ym* and *yth* are not at present used except in their contracted forms *in* and *'th*.

² For *ar y glòch*.

§ 68. EXERCISES.

A.) Fy nghalon drom.—Dy blŵyf.—Ei goes hir a'i droed byr.—Ei phlŵyf.—Ein breichiau a'n dwylaw.—Eich traed byrion neu eich coesau hirion.—Eu dillad llwydion.—Fy ngardd fach a'm cae [a fy nghae³] mawr.—Yn dy draed a'th goesau [a dy goesau³].—Ei ardd a'i rosynau.—Ei gerddi a'i blodau.—Eu blodau melynion a'u rhosynau cochion.—O'm gardd fach i'm ty mawr.—I'w blŵyf newydd.—O'i phen i'w thraed.—O'u meusydd i'w gerddi.—Yn fy nghalon i, nid yn eich calon chwi.—Dau flodeuyn coch yn dy ardd di, nid yn ei ardd ef.—Ei hamser, a'i hawr, a'i harian.—Eu hunig ferch.—Eich coes hir a'ch troed byr.—I'm hunig blentyn.—Ei braich hir hi, nid fy mraich fer i.—Eu defaid a'u hŵyn hwy, nid ein defaid a'n hŵyn ni.—Mewn gwlaw ac eira.—Yn yr eira ar y mynydd.—Tri dyn ar y mynydd acw mewn dillad llwydion.—Yr aur trwm yma.

B.) His precious time.—Red roses in her small garden.—My small feet and short legs.—His time and his money.—Her time and her money.—In my legs and arms.—Our red clothes.—In your heavy heart.—Their dear children.—Into their good gardens.—From his small house into his large garden.—From her head to her foot.—In my arms, and legs, and feet.—Her hand and heart.—Thy money and thy precious time.—His new parish and his old parish.—Our long arms and short feet.—Between their hands and hearts.—Through your gardens and fields.—|| *Their*⁴ precious hours.—In || *thy* good house, not in || *my* house.—In || *my* old parish, not in || *his* new parish.—Between these two heavy stones.—|| *Your* short arm and || *her* long foot.—In rain or snow.—From the rain into || *my* house.—This red rose or that (= *there*) white flower.—From || *her* garden into || *their* gardens.—Her precious hours.

C.) Tri⁵ o'r [ar] gloch.—Hanner awr⁶ wedi dau.⁵—Cwarter

³ *Fy* and *dy* occur almost as frequently as the contracted 'm and 'th even after particles ending with vowels.

⁴ Possessives printed in *italics* and having parallels before them, as above, are emphatic, and to be rendered into W. according to § 64.

⁵ Observe the *mas.* gender.

⁶ *Hanner* requires *awr* after it = *half an hour*.

[chwarter] i dri.—Mewn dwy awr a hanner.—Yn ei phen ac ar ei llaw.—Cloch fawr mewn Eglwys fach.—Fy nwy goes a'm dwy law.—Y gerddi a'u blodau cochion.—Chwarter wedi un o'r gloch.—Tri neu bedwar o'r gloch.—Ein hanwyl frawd.—Ein blodau cochion ni, nid eich rhosynau gwynion chwi.—Ei thri rhosyn coch.—Yn ei hen le.—Clychau trymion mewn Eglwysi bychain.—Hanner awr wedi pedwar.—Eu horiau byrion.—Eu hunig fab a'u hunig ferch.—Dwy awr neu dair.

D.) In the snow on that (= *yonder*) high mountain.—From (THE⁷) church into this rain.—The garden and its flowers.—One o'clock.—Four o'clock.—In three hours.—Their only sister.—The small church and its large bells.—Between two and three o'clock.—Half-past three.—A quarter to two.—From his garden into his church.—Our two red roses.—In (THE) church.—A quarter-past four o'clock.—Our merciful God.—|| *Her* white lambs, not || *our* black sheep.—In the snow and rain on the mountains.—Three hours and a half.—|| *Her* short foot, not || *my* long arm.—The white flowers in || *your* gardens, not the red roses in || *their* gardens.—Into her field from her garden.

CHAPTER VI.

[Present tense of *Bod* (to be), first and second persons,—expletive *yr*,—verb before subject,—subject-pron. omitted,—*wyf* and *ydwyf*,—*yn* apposition,—questions and answers: *a*, *onid*, *ai nid*,—2d pers. pl. for sing.,—*dim* as auxiliary,—*a . . . ddim*,—*pobl*.]

§ 69. *Bôd*, to be. Present tense.

Affirmative.

Yr ydwyf (fi), *I am.*

Yr ydwyt (ti), *thou art.*

Yr ydym (ni), *we are.*

Yr ydych (chwi), *you are.*


Negative.

Nid ydwyf (fi), *I am not.*

Nid ydwyt (ti), *thou art not.*

Nid ydym (ni), *we are not.*

Nid ydych (chwi), *you are not.*

§ 70.  The interr. *a*, *onid* or *ai nid*, *a . . . ddim*, and the hypothetical *os*, *os nad*, are followed by the same construction as negatives. *A ydwyf fi? am I? Os ydwyf (fi), if I am.*

⁷ Words printed in SMALL CAPITALS are to be translated.

Notes and References.

§ 71. *Yr* in “*yr ydwyf*,” &c., is an expletive. It is always used before the present *ydwyf*, &c., and the imperf. *oeddw*, &c., except in the following cases: (a) when these tenses are preceded by *neg.*, *interr.*, or *hypothetical* particles, as above: (b) when they are preceded by the subj. or predicate (*Myfi ydwyf yn frenin*, *I am a king*; *brenin ydwyf fi = a king I am*): (c) when they are employed in answering questions (*A ydych chwi yn gynnes? Ydwyf. Are you warm? Yes.*)

§ 72. In simple narration the present *ydwyf*, &c., and the imperf. *oeddw*, &c., are put before their subject. *Yr ydwyf —fi—yn ddyn cryf*, *I am a strong man.*

§ 73. The subject-pronoun need not be expressed, unless it is *emphatic*, or occurs in an *interrogative* clause. [This will be explained more fully further on.]

Yr ydwyf fi yma, or *yr ydwyf yma*, *I am here.*

Yr ydym ni yma, *we are here.* *A ydych chwi yn iach? are you well?*

§ 74. *Wyf* and *ydwyf*. The simple form (*wyf*, &c.) is S.W.: the compound (*ydwyf*, &c.) is N.W. *Gr.* p. 63, *foot-note*. The 2d pers. *wyt* is common to North and South. [In questions introduced by *a*, and in answering questions, the compound form *ydych* (3d pers.) is preferred in S.W. *A ydych efe yn gynnes? Ydych. Is he warm? Yes.*]

§ 75. “*Yr ydych chwi yn bobl garedig*,” *you are kind people.* “*Yn* apposition.” *Gr.* §§ 646, 647. Government of *yn*. *Gr.* § 650.

§ 76. Questions, and answers to questions.

a. How is the interr. *a* used? *Gr.* § 819. How are questions made by *a* answered? *Gr.* § 827.

A ydych chwi yn hoff o'ch plant? are you fond of your children? Ydym (=we are), yes. Nac ydym (=we are not), no.

b. How is the negative interr. *onid* or *ai nid* used *Gr.* § 820.

Onid ydym ni yn bobl gall? are we not sensible people? Ydych (=you are), yes.

c. The subject of the verb used in answering the question

is not expressed. Ydych (not ydych chwi), *you are*; *yes*.
Nac ydych, *you are not*; *no*.

d. The answer is often made (as in Eng.) more fully than by *yes* or *no*.

Are we industrious children?	A ydym ni yn blant diwyd?
Yes:—yes, you are:—yes, very industrious:—yes, you are very industrious.	Ydych:—ydych, yr ydych (chwi):— ydych yn ddiwyd iawn:—ydych, yr ydych (chwi) yn ddiwyd iawn.
No:—no, you are not:—no, not very industrious:— no, you are not very in- dustrious.	Nac ydych:—nac ydych, nid ydych (chwi ddim); <i>or</i> , nac ydych ddim: —nac ydych, ddim yn ddiwyd iawn: —nac ydych, nid ydych (chwi ddim) yn ddiwyd iawn.

§ 77. The 2d pers. pl. is (as in Eng.) used for the singular.
Gr. § 530.

§ 78. *Eng.*, “I am not.” *Welsh*, “Not am I.” (Nid—
ydwyf—fi.)

§ 79. *Dim* (always in the *mid.* sound, *ddim*), is very frequently used as an auxiliary particle in negative sentences, when the subject follows the verb. It comes after the subject, expressed or understood.


Nid ydwyf fi yn bur iach,	} <i>I am not very well.</i>
Nid ydwyf fi <i>ddim</i> yn bur iach,	
Os nad ydych yn drugarog,	} <i>If you are not merciful.</i>
Os nad ydych <i>ddim</i> yn drugarog,	

Used in connection with *a* (*a ... ddim?*) it forms a negative interr. = *onid* or *ai nid?*

Onid [ai nid] ydych chwi yn oer iawn?	} <i>Are you not very cold?</i>
A ydych chwi <i>ddim</i> yn oer iawn?	

§ 80. VOCABULARY.

I, we: fi, ni.	Merry, lawen.
Thou, you: ti, chwi.	Strong, crŷf (<i>f.</i> crêf), <i>pl.</i> crŷfion.
People, pòbl ¹ (<i>f.</i>)	Warm, cŷnnes.
Unkind (to), angharedig (wŷth).	Fond of, hôff o.
Foolish, silly, ffôl, <i>pl.</i> -ion.	Well, healthy, iâch.
Sad, trist.	Middling, symol, gweddol.

¹  *Pobl* and *pl. pobloedd* are peculiar: they are put in the *mid.* after the article, and the adj. coming after them is put in the *mid.*; but the adj., if it has a *pl.* form, assumes that form. Y bobl dduon, *the black people*. Y bobl hyn, *these people*. Y bobl ereill, *the other people*.

Not, nid (<i>rd.</i>)	Where? lle? pa le? ym mha le?
Not (in answers), nàc.	<i>coll.</i> p'le? ym mh'le?
If, os (<i>rd.</i>)	Here, yma.
If...not, òs nad (<i>rd.</i>)	Out, allan; S.W. i maes.
? (e.g., are you?), a? (<i>md.</i>)	Very, pretty, pŵr ² (<i>md.</i>)
Not? (e.g., are you not?), onid?	Very (emphatic), iàwn (after adj.)
ai nid? (<i>rd.</i>) a...ddim?	But, ònd.
How? sùt? pa sùt?	Thank you, diolch i chwi.
Why? pa hàmm? pàmm?	Now, yn àwr, S.W.; yr àwr hòn
Why...not? pa hàmm (or pàmm nad?)	(<i>coll.</i> , yrŵan) N.W.

§ 81. MODEL FORMS.

I am a kind husband.	Yr ydwyf (fi) yn wr caredig.
You are not well.	Nid ydych (chwi ddim) yn iach.
Are we not very strong?	Onid ydym ni yn gryfion iawn?
If you are merry, I am sad.	Os ydych chwi yn llawen, yr ydwyf fi yn drist.
Why am I here?	Pa ham yr ydwyf fi yma?

§ 82. EXERCISES.

A.) Yr ydych chwi yn ddynion angharedig.—Yr ydwyf fi yn ddyn cryf, ond nid wyt ti (ddim³) yn eneth gref.—Yr ydym ni yn hen ac yn ffol.—Nid ydym ni ddim yn iach: a ydych chwi yn iach? Ydym, diolch i chwi, yr ydym yn bur iach.—Nid ydwyf fi ddim yn gynnes,—yr ydwyf yn oer iawn.—A ydwyf fi yn eneth ffol? Nac ydych.—Onid [ai nid] ydym ni yn bobl ddoethion iawn? Ydych.—A wyt ti ddim yn gynnes? Ydwyf.—A wyt ti yn angharedig wrth blant bach? Nac ydwyf ddim [nac ydwyf, nid ydwyf ddim].—Os ydwyf yn hen, nid ydwyf yn ffol.—Os nad ydych chwi yn drist, yr ydym ni yn drist iawn.—Pa le [ym mha le,—lle] yr wyt ti yn awr? Allan yn y gwlaw a'r eira.—Pa ham [pam] yr ydych chwi yma?—Sut yr ydych chwi, fy hen gyfaill? Yr ydwyf yn bur iach, diolch i chwi.—Pa ham nad ydym yn llawen? (*Gr.* § 650.)—Pa ham yr ydwyf yn drist? Nid ydwyf fi ddim yn drist,—yr ydwyf yn llawen iawn.—A ydych chwi ddim yn iach? Nac ydym, ddim yn bur iach.—Nid wyf fi ddim yn

² *Pur* is placed between *yn* apposition and the adjective; *yn bur gryf*.

³ Words enclosed in parentheses in the Welsh Exercises (ddim) may be used or omitted, optionally: words enclosed in brackets [ddim] may be used instead of those which precede them.

gref, ond yr wyt ti yn eneth gref iawn.—Sut yr wyt ti? Symol, diolch i chwi.—Os ydych chi yn famau da, yr ydych chi yn hoff o'ch plant.—Onid ydym ni yn bobl ffolion? Nac ydych chi yr ydych chi yn bur gall.—Lle yr ydym ni yrŵan? Yr ydym rhwng tref fawr a llan fechan.—Pa ham yr ydwyt allan yn y gwlaw?—A ydwyf fi yn fachgen cryf? Nac ydwyt, ddim yn gryf iawn.—A ydym ni yn angharedig wrth y bobl hyn? Ydych chi, yn angharedig iawn.—Nid ydym ni ddim yn hoff o gwn a chathod, os ydych chi.—Yr ydym ni yn ddwy chwaer.—Yr ydych chi yn gyfeillion mawr.—Yr ydwyf yn symol [yn weddol].—A ydym ni yn bobl dda? Ydych chi, yn bobl dda iawn.

B.) Why am I merry? You are not merry,—you are very sad.—Why are you not fond of children? We are very fond of good children.—Are *|| you*⁴ here? Yes; I am—How are you [how do you do]? Middling, thank you. We are middling. I am pretty well. We are very (*emphatic*) well, thank you.—*|| I* am out in the rain: where are *|| you*? *|| I* am out in the snow.—You are not unkind to these good people; but you are very unkind to those (= *yonder*) people.—I am not warm,—I am very cold.—If *|| you* are cold, *|| we* are warm.—I am a foolish old man.—We are healthy and strong.—Are you not very silly people? No, we are not.—Am I an unkind husband? No.—Am I not very strong (*fem.*)? No, not very strong (*fem.*)—Where are you now? We are here.—Are you sad? Yes, very sad; but *|| you* are merry.—Why are you out in the rain? We are not out in the rain,—we are in the house.—Are you two brothers? Yes.—Are you sisters? No.—We are not fond of those (*o. of s.*) people; but we are fond of these people.—Are you pretty well? Yes, we are middling, thank you.—If you are not industrious, you are not good wives.—We are not strong; but we are pretty well.—Why are you merry now?—*|| We* are very well and strong; but *|| you* are not.—Are you warm? Yes, we are very warm.—Are we unkind fathers? Yes, very unkind.—*|| We* are very fond of money: are *|| you* fond of money? No, not very fond of money.—How are you, my friend? I am not very well.—If *|| you* are strong, *|| I* am not strong.—If we are not kind to

⁴ Pers. pronouns printed in *italics*, and having parallels before them, as above, are emphatic, and must be expressed in Welsh.

our wives, we are not good husbands.—Are we not strong men? Yes, very strong.—Why are you not kind to those (*o. of s.*) people?

CHAPTER VII.

[Present tense of verbs, first and second pers., periphrastic form,—*yn* participial,—government of infinitive,—*either . . . or, neither . . . nor*,—answers to questions,—*yn* adverbial,—*â* and *gyda*.]

§ 83. Present tense.

Yr ydwyf (*fi*) yn dysgu, *I am learning.* Yr ydym (*ni*) yn dysgu, *we are learning.*

Yr ydwyf (*ti*) yn dysgu, *thou art learning.* Yr ydych (*chwi*) yn dysgu, *you are learning.*

Nid [*a? onid? os*] ydwyf yn dysgu. *Exercises, §§ 69, 70.*

Notes and References.

§ 84. The present tense Indicative is usually expressed periphrastically. *Gr. § 253.*

§ 85. “Yr wyf *fi* yn gweithio” = *am I working; I am working.* *Gr. § 582.*

§ 86. “Yn darllen,” *reading.* *Yn* participial = *ing* in reading. *Gr. § 267.* It governs the *rad*.

§ 87. “Yn darllen *llyfrau da*,” *reading good books.* Infinitive verbs and participles govern the *rad.* *Gr. § 590.*

§ 88. **Either . . . or : neither . . . nor** (conjunctions).

Either . . . or, naill ai (*or un ai*) . . . **neu** (*or ai*) : **neu.** [*Ai* governs the *rad*.]

You are either reading or writing, *yr ydych chwi un ai yn darllen neu yn ysgrifenu*,—*yr ydych chwi yn darllen neu yn ysgrifenu.*

We see either sheep or dogs, *yr ydym yn gwelod naill ai defaid ai cwn*,—*yr ydym yn gwelod defaid neu gwn.*

Neither . . . nor, [not . . . either . . . or], ni (*nid or nis*) . . . **na** (*or nac*) . . . **na** (*or nac*):¹ **ni** (*nid or nis*) . . . **na** (*or nac*), omitting the second negative.

¹ Compare French. “Je n'ai ni faim ni soif” = *nid oes arnaf na newyn na syched.*

We neither see nor hear, *nid ydym nac yn gwled nac yn clywed*,—*nid ydym yn gwled nac yn clywed*.

We see neither cats nor dogs, *nid ydym yn gwled na chathod na chwn*,—*nid ydym yn gwled cathod na chwn*.

Na governs the *aspirate*. § 28 Words which govern the *asp.* of the 1st class of mutable consonants, govern the *rad.* of the 2d and 3d. *Gr.* §§ 880-884. What particles form an exception to this rule? *Gr.* § 913.

When should *ni*, *na*, be used, and when *nid*, *nac*? *Exercises*, § 32.

§ 89. Answers to questions. *Exercises*, § 76, *d.*

Are you reading? Do you read?	A ydych chwi yn darllen?
Yes:—yes, I am; yes, I do:—yes, I am reading; yes, I do read.	Ydwyf:—ydwyf, yr ydwyf:—ydwyf, yr ydwyf yn darllen.
No:—no, I am not; no, I don't:—no, I am not reading; no, I don't read.	Nac ydwyf:—nac ydwyf, nid ydwyf (fi ddim); or, nac ydwyf ddim:—nac ydwyf, nid ydwyf (fi ddim) yn darllen; or, nac ydwyf, ddim yn darllen.

§ 90. “Yr ydych yn gweithio yn galed,” *you work hard*. *Yn* adverbial. *Gr.* § 345. It governs the *mid.*, like *yn* apposition.

What are the different functions of the particle *yn*? *Gr.* § 734.

§ 91. VOCABULARY.

Book, llyfr, <i>pl.</i> —au (<i>m.</i>)	To start, set out, cychwyn.
Letter (= <i>epistle</i>), llythyr, <i>pl.</i> —au	To intend, bwriadu, bôd àm ² (<i>md.</i>)
To be, bôd. [(<i>m.</i>)	To dirty, soil, diwÿno (<i>coll.</i> dwyno).
To learn: teach, dÿsgu.	Idle, lazy, diog.
To work, gwèithio.	Hard (<i>adv.</i>), yn galed.
To play, chwareu.	Well (<i>adv.</i>), yn dda.
To read, darllen.	Badly (<i>adv.</i>), yn ddrŵg.
To write, ysgrifënu.	Long (<i>adv.</i>), yn hir.
To doubt, aminheu.	Soon (<i>adv.</i>), yn fuan.
To understand, deall.	Back (<i>adv.</i>), yn ôl.
To see, gwled (<i>coll.</i> gwèl'd).	On the point of, ar (before <i>infin.</i> , <i>md.</i>)
To hear, clywed.	With (= <i>in company</i>), gyda, efo ³
To go, myned (<i>coll.</i> mÿn'd).	(<i>asp.</i>), gydag.
To come, dyfod (<i>coll.</i> dôd, dwad).	With (<i>noting instrument, &c.</i>), â, efo (<i>asp.</i>), âg.
To return, go back, dychwelyd, myned yn ôl.	Either, . . . or, } see above.
To return, come back, dychwelyd, dyfod yn ôl.	Neither, . . . nor, }

² = to be for.

³ Efo, N.W., coll.

§ 92. MODEL FORMS.

I am reading.	Yr ydwyf (fi) yn darllen.
We are not coming back.	Nid ydym (ni ddim) yn dyfod yn ol.
Are you working hard? Yes.	A ydych chwi yn gweithio yn galed? Ydym.
We work and play.	Yr ydym (ni) yn gweithio ac yn chwareu.
You hear the bell, but we don't.	Yr ydych chwi yn clywed y gloch, ond nid ydym ni.
You don't doubt the man, do you?	Nid ydych (ddim) yn ammheu y dyn, a ydych chwi?

§ 93. EXERCISES.

A.) Yr ydym yn cychwyn yn awr.—Yr ydych chwi yn chwareu gyda phlant drwg, ond nid ydym ni (ddim).—A ydych chwi yn gweled ceffyl glas yn y cae acw? Ydym.—Pa ham yr ydych yn ammheu y merched?—Nid ydym ni ddim yn ammheu 'r merched.—A ydych chwi ddim yn deall y llyfr? Nac ydym.—Os ydym yn gweithio yn galed, yr ydym yn bobl ddiwyd, onid ydym ni? Ydych, yr ydych chwi yn bobl ddiwyd iawn.—A ydych chwi yn bwriadu myned (*Gr.* § 663, *b*) i'r dref gyda'ch tad? Nac ydwyf ddim.—Os nad ydych yn dysgu eich llyfrau, yr ydych yn blant diog.—Yr ydym ni yn gweithio â'n dwylaw ac â'n penau.—Nid ydym ni (nac) yn darllen nac yn ysgrifenu yn dda.—Yr wyt yn myned naill [un] ai i'r ardd neu i'r cae, onid wyt ti? Nac ydwyf, nid ydwyf ddim yn myned (nac) i'r ardd na'r cae.—Yr ydwyf yn dysgu plant diog iawn.—A ydych chwi am fyned yn ol [ddychwelyd] yn fuan? Ydym, yn bur fuan.—Nid ydych yn bwriadu bod yma yn hir, a ydych chwi? Nac ydwyf, ddim yn hir iawn.—Onid ydych chwi yn clywed y gloch? Nac ydym, nid ydym (nac) yn clywed y gloch nac yn gweled yr Eglwys.—Yr ydych chwi un [naill] ai yn darllen llyfrau neu yn ysgrifenu llythyrau, onid ydych chwi? Ydym, yr ydym yn ysgrifenu llythyrau.—Yr ydwyf ar gychwyn i'r dref yrŵan efo'm dwy chwaer.—Pam yr wyt ti yn diwyno [dwyno] dy ddillad? Nid ydwyf fi ddim yn diwyno fy nillad.—Yr ydwyf yn darllen ac yn ysgrifenu yn ddrwg iawn.—Nid wyt am ddychwelyd [ddyfod yn ol] yn fuan, a wyt ti? Nac ydwyf, ddim yn fuan iawn. Yr ydwyf fi yn ysgrifenu llythyrau hirion; ond nid ydych chwi ddim, a ydych chwi? Nac ydym.—

Yr ydwyf yn gweled naill ai ceffyl neu fuwch yn y cae.—Nid ydych yn dysgu bod yn ddoeth.—Sut yr ydych chwi am fyned yn ol?—A ydych chwi ddim yn deall y llyfrau? Nac ydwyf, nid ydwyf fi ddim.—Yr ydym ni yma gyda [efo] chyfeillion caredig.—Yr ydwyf fi yn clywed yn ddrwg iawn.

B.) You write badly, but you read pretty well.—I neither read nor write well.—If || *you* understand these books, || *we* don't.—We are on the point of starting: are you coming? No, I am not.—Are you playing with these naughty and idle boys? No, we are not.—We are going soon to the village, but not now.—Do we work hard? No, you don't work hard, but you work well. You are soiling your new clothes. No, we are not.—Do you intend to be here long? No (*sing.*), not very long.—Why don't we learn to be wise?—If we are writing letters, we are not idle, are we? No, you are not.—You are returning [going back] very soon. No (*pl.*), not very soon.—Why do we come back now?—We are going with a friend to that (= *yonder*) village: are you not coming? No, I am not coming now.—We don't teach idle children.—|| *You* work with your hands; but || *I* work with my head.—I neither see the church nor hear the bells.—Thou art either playing or reading.—We see neither a house nor a garden.—|| *We* do not hear the bell: do || *you*? No, we do not.—You do not intend to be here long, do you? No, not very long.—Why do we dirty our hands? You do not dirty your hands.—We understand || *your* book, but we do not understand || *his* book.—|| *You* don't work hard; but || *I* do.—|| *We* doubt those (*o. of s.*) men; but || *you* don't, do you? Yes, we do.—You are on the point of starting, are you not? Yes, we are.—Do you intend to return [go back] with your friend? Yes, I do.—I am writing a long letter and reading a good book.—We write pretty well, don't we? Yes, very well; but you read very badly.—You learn to be idle.—Do you intend to work with your hands? Yes, with my hands and head.—Where are you? We are in the garden with your brothers and sisters.—I do not see either dogs or horses in the road.—Do you doubt my sons and daughters? No, we do not doubt either your sons or your daughters.—You doubt either the father or the son. No, I don't.—You soil our books. Do we?

CHAPTER VIII.

[Third pers. pres. of *Bôd*, —*mae*, pl. *maent* with definitive subject,—antithesis,—“*y mae*,”—“*y mae y dynion yma*,”—*it* (it rains),—*djdd* and *diwrnod*,—*nôs* and *nôswaith*,—*brâf*.]

Notes and References.

§ 94. Third person present of *Bôd*. Gr. §§ 613, 614.

§ 95. *Mae*, pl. *maent*, followed by a *definitive subject*.


a. Mae always precedes its subject, and is always accompanied by an infinitive predicate, which in ordinary discourse follows the subject. (Gr. §§ 622, 623.)

Verb. Subject. Indef. predicate.

Y mae (is)—*efe (he)*—*yn ddiog (idle)*: *he is idle.*

Y mae (is)—*y bachgen (the boy)*—*yn chwareu (playing)*: *the boy is playing.*

Explain “definitive” and “indefinitive.” Gr. § 617 (a).

b.  *Mae* can never be preceded by a *predicative noun, or adjective, or participial adjective, unaccompanied by “yn apposition ;”*¹ nor by any word in the **nominative case** (subject-nominative or predicate-nominative); nor immediately by the *negative particles* *nid, nad*, the *interrogative a, onid, ai, nid*, nor the *hypothetical os*.

[If the subject must precede the verb, the verb will be *sydd* or *yw*: if a predicative noun or adj. or participial adj. without *yn*, or one of the preceding particles (*nid, os*, &c.) must precede the verb, the verb will be *yw*. See further on.]

c. Mae may be preceded by such conjunctions as have no particular government (e.g., *ac, and; hefyd, also; neu, or; naill ai—ai, either—or; canys o herwydd, for; fel, as, so that; ond, but; eto, er hyny, yet; yna, then; am hyny, therefore, &c.*); or by a term in an **oblique case**, or a term equivalent in meaning to one in an **oblique case**; such as the *object of the verb* (in periphrastic verbs); a word in the *possessive case*; a *participle*; a *prep. and its object*; an *adverb*

¹ *Yn* apposition is almost always omitted when the predicate goes before the verb: when it happens to be retained, *mae* is used,—*yn* being regarded as a prep. governing the objective case.

or a conjunctive adverb equivalent in meaning and reducible to a prep. and an object (e.g., *pa le?* where? = in what place? *pa ham?* why? = for what reason? *pan*, when = at the time that; *tra*, whilst = during the time that).

[*Llythyr byr y mae efe yn ei ysgrifenu*, he is writing a short letter.

Yr hwn y mae ei dad yma, whose father is here.¹]

Darllen y mae'r bachgen,² the boy is reading. Not "yn darllen."
Gr. § 583, a.

Ar yr hoel y mae eich het, your hat is on the nail.

Sut y mae'r hen wr? how (= in what manner) is the old man?

Yma y mae hi, she is here (= in this place).

§ 96. **Antithesis.** Some words must (as in English) precede the verb, such as *pa le?* where? *sut?* how? *pan*, when; others may or may not precede. When these latter precede the verb, they are *antithetical*, having the force of *it is ... that* or *who*. "Y mae eich meistres yn yr ardd" (*your mistress is in the garden*), is simple narration; but "*yn yr ardd y mae eich meistres*" is antithetical = *it is in the garden that your mistress is; your mistress is in the garden.*³)

Thus *antithesis*, expressed in English sometimes by *it is ... who, it is ... (that)*,⁴ but oftener by *emphasis* on the antithetical term, is in Welsh indicated by *position*. The antithetical term will take precedence in the clause.

§ 97. "Y mae." The expletive *y* is always placed before *mae* and *maent*, except when they begin the sentence; and then *y* may be, and often is, omitted.

§ 98. "Y mae'r dynion," not "y maent y dynion." Gr. § 570. "Y maent hwy." Gr. § 572.

§ 99. "It rains," *y mae hi yn gwlawio*. Gr. § 521.

¹ These constructions will be illustrated hereafter.

² "Yn participial" (*yn darllen*) is regarded as a prep. governing the objective case: hence "*darllen y mae'r bachgen*." The omission of "*yn participial*" does not affect its government, whereas if "*yn apposition*" is omitted, the verb must be *yw*, not *mae*.

³ Words printed in black letters in the Eng. Exercises are antithetical, and their equivalents in W. must take precedence in the clause.

⁴ We have in the Eng. Exercises adopted this construction (*it is, &c.*) oftener perhaps than good English will warrant. The object in doing so was to exhibit more forcibly the Welsh idiom.

§ 100. VOCABULARY.

Master, mèistr, <i>pl.</i> -iaid, -i, -adoedd (<i>m.</i>)	To build, adeiladu.
Mistress, mèistres, <i>pl.</i> -i (<i>f.</i>)	To rain, gwllawio, bwrw gwlaw.
School, ysgol, <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>f.</i>)	To snow, bwrw eira.
Schoolmaster, ysgol feistr, <i>pl.</i> -iaid or -i (<i>m.</i>)	Fine, pleasant, tég, hyfryd, <i>coll.</i> bráf. ⁴
Scholar, ysgolaig, (<i>f.</i> ysgoleiges): <i>pl.</i> ysgolèigion.	Light (= not dark), goleu.
Hat, het, <i>pl.</i> -iau (<i>f.</i>)	Dark (<i>adj.</i>), tywyll.
Nail (= spike), hoel, hoelen, <i>pl.</i> hoelion (<i>f.</i>)	Tidy, tâclus.
River, afon, <i>pl.</i> -ydd (<i>f.</i>)	Another, other, } arall, <i>pl.</i> ereill
Weather, hin (<i>f.</i>), tÿwydd (<i>m.</i>)	<i>pl.</i> other, } (following noun.)
Day, dÿdd, <i>pl.</i> -iau (<i>m.</i>): diwr- nod, ¹ <i>pl.</i> -iau (<i>m.</i>)	To-day, heddyw.
Night, nôs, <i>pl.</i> noswèithiau (<i>f.</i>): nôswaith, ² <i>pl.</i> noswèithiau (<i>f.</i>)	When? pa brÿd? prÿd?
He, it: they, efe, ef, e, o: ³ hÿy.	Where? (= whither?), i ba le? pa le? lle?
She, it: they, hi: hÿy.	Where...from? o ba le?
It (e.g., it rains), hi.	Here, yma.
Is: are, mae: maent.	In this place, yn y fan yma (or hon.)
To run, rhedeg.	There, in that (near) place, yn y fan yna, yna.
To graze, pori.	There, yonder, ⁵ } yn y fan acw, In that place, } acw. There (out of sight), yno.

§ 101. MODEL FORMS.

He is a very good scholar.	(Y) mae (efe) yn ysgolaig da iawn.
They are running into the river.	(Y) maent (hwy) yn rhedeg i'r afon.
The sheep are grazing in the field.	(Y) mae'r defaid yn pori yn y cae.
It is a fine day.	(Y) mae hi yn ddiwrnod braf.
The boys are reading, not play- ing.	Darllen, nid chwareu y mae'r plant.
The nails are there (near).	Yn y fan yna y mae'r hoelion.
She is there (o. ofs.) day and night.	Yno y mae hi ddydd a nos.
Where is the schoolmaster going?	I ba le y mae'r ysgol feistr yn myn-
Where are they coming from?	O ba le y maent yn dyfod? [ed?

¹ *Dydd*, day, the day ("opposed to night"): *diwrnod*, a day ("space of time so called").

² *Nos*, night, the night ("opposed to day"): *noswaith*, a night ("space of time so called").

³ See Preliminary Remarks, § 20, footnote.

⁴ *B* in *bráf* (fr. Eng. *brave*) never changes. *Diwrnod braf*, a fine day (*m.*): *noswaith braf*, a fine night (*f.*)

⁵ The coll. "yonder" (= to or at our house) is expressed by *acw*.
When are you coming yonder? *pa brÿd yr ydych chiwi yn dyfod acw?*

§ 102. EXERCISES.

A.) Nid ydwyf fi ddim yn ysgolaig; ond y mae fy meistr yn ysgolaig da.—Lle y mae fy het arall? Y mae hi ar yr hoel yn y fan acw.—Y mae'r ysgol feistr yn yr ysgol, ac y mae yn dysgu'r plant yn dda iawn.—Lle y mae'r ceryg ereill? Y maent yn yr afonydd.—Y mae hi yn bwrw eira heddyw.—Pa bryd y mae hi yn amser? Y mae hi yn amser yn awr.—Nid ydym ni ddim yn rhedeg i'r afon; ond y maent hwy.—Y maent hwy yn feistriaid caredig; ond nid ydych chwi (ddim).—Darllen ein llyfrau yr ydym ni, ac ysgrifenu llythyrau y mae'r ysgol feistr.—Y mae hi yn ddiwrnod braf heddyw.—Gyda'i lyfrau y mae efe ddydd a nos. (*Gr.* § 454.)—Y mae hi yn oleu yn y dydd, ond yn dywyll yn y nos.—Y mae hi yn noswaith bur dywyll. (*Gr.* § 474, a.)—Yr ydych chwi yn gynnes ar ddiwrnod oer; ond y maent hwy yn oer ar ddiwrnod cynnes.—Nid chwareu y mae'r genethod bach,—darllen eu llyfrau y maent.—Y mae hi yn bwrw gwlaw [yn gwlawio] neu yn bwrw eira.—Sut y mae efe heddyw? Y mae efe yn bur iach, diolch i chwi.—Y mae'r dydd yn hir, a'r tywydd [hin] yn deg.—I ba le y mae eich meistr a'ch meistres yn myned heddyw? I'r dref.—Yn y fan acw, nid yn y fan yma, y maent yn bwriadu adeiladu y ddau dy newydd. O ba le y mae hi a'i brawd yn dyfod? O'r ysgol y maent yn dyfod.—Pa ham y mae eich meistres yn dyfod yma?—Pa bryd y maent yn cychwyn yno? Y maent yn cychwyn yno yn awr.—Nid ydwyf fi ddim yn ddyn taclus; ond y mae fy ngwraig yn ddynes bur daclus.—A ydych chwi yn ysgoleigion da? Nac ydym; ond y mae ein dau frawd yn ysgoleigion pur dda.—I ba le y mae ein cyfeillion ereill yn myned? I'r fan acw.—Y mae hi yn noswaith bur oleu.—Y mae'r bobl dda yma yn gweithio ddydd a nos.—Pa le y mae'r hoelen arall? Yn y fan yna.—Y mae'r plant allan yn y gwlaw.

B.) She is a pretty tidy woman.—|| *You* are not tidy; but your sister is a very tidy girl.—Where are your two boys? They are in (THE) school.—Their other hats are on the nails.—Why is he building another house?—Why are your boys and girls running into the river?—They are building other houses here.—His master and mistress are there (= *yonder*).—Where is the school? It is *yonder* [in that place].—His hat is *there*

(*near*).—Why are || *our* hats here?—|| *We* are not scholars ; but our master is a very great scholar.—It is day.—It is a fine day, and a light night.—The weather is pretty fine now.—Where is the schoolmaster coming from? From (THE) school.—Where are they going to-day? To the town.—The sheep are grazing **in those** (= *yonder*) **fields**.—They are **not reading their books**,—they are **playing** with the other children. Where are your master and mistress now? They are **in the house**.—Why are || *your* sheep grazing here?—Through the day and through the night.—He is here day and night.—In a day and a night.—It is snowing or raining.—It rains at [in the] night, and it is fine in the day.—Why does he run out of the garden into the river?—Why is she there (*o. of s.*) day and night?—How are your master and mistress? They are pretty well, thank you.—The night is dark, but the day is light.—It is a very dark night.—It is here he intends to build his new house.—Why is your mistress going there (*o. of s.*)? —|| *You* are a pretty good scholar ; but your brothers are very idle.—Where are those (*o. of s.*) other hats? They are **here**.—The nails and the iron are **there** (*near*).—We are **building houses, not writing books**.—On a cold day and a dark night.—Your sisters are very tidy ; but || *you* are not.—Where are those (= *yonder*) three men going? They are going **to the village**.—Where is he coming from? From (THE) school.—Why are the children out in the snow?

CHAPTER IX.

[*Ydyw* or *yw* for *mae*, and *ydylnt* or *ynt* for *maent*,—*ydyw* and *yw*,—simple interrogatives,—antithetic interrogatives.]

Notes and References.

§ 103. **Ydyw** (or **yw**) takes the place of *mae*, and **ydylnt** (or **ynt**) that of *maent*, if the verb is *immediately* preceded by the negative particles *nid*, *nad*, *nac* ; the interr. *a*, *onid*, *ai nid* ; or the hypothetical *os*, *os nad*. Gr. §§ 630, 631.

Y mae'r llwybr hwn yn gul iawn, *this path is very narrow.*

Nid ydyw'r llwybr hwn yn gul iawn, *this path is not very narrow.*

Y maent yn dda ac yn ddedydd, *they are good and happy.*

A *ydynt* hwy yn dda ac yn ddedwydd? *are they good and happy?*
Nid yma y mae hi, *she is not here.* Gr. § 630, a.

[If the subject is *indefinitive*, *mae* interchanges with *oes*. See next chapter.]

§ 104. **Ydyw** and **yw**. *Exercises*, § 74. A *ydyw*'r rhosyn yn goch? *Ydyw*.

§ 105. **Simple interrogatives.** *A?* Gr. § 819. *Onid* or *ai nid?* Gr. § 820. Answers, Gr. §§ 826, 827. [Exemplified in *Exercises*, § 76.]

The answer is often made (as in English) more fully than by *yes* or *no*.

Is he running? Does he run?	A <i>ydyw</i> efe yn rhedeg?
Yes:—yes, he is; yes, he does:	<i>Ydyw</i> :— <i>ydyw</i> , y mae:— <i>ydyw</i> , y mae (efe) yn rhedeg.
—yes, he is running; yes, he does run.	

No:—no, he is not; no, he does not:—no, he is not running; no, he does not run.	<i>Nac ydyw</i> :— <i>nac ydyw</i> , <i>nid ydyw</i> (efe <i>ddim</i>); or <i>nac ydyw ddim</i> :— <i>nac ydyw</i> , <i>nid ydyw</i> (efe <i>ddim</i>) yn rhedeg; or <i>nac ydyw</i> , <i>ddim yn rhedeg</i> .
---------------------------------------------------------------------------------	------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

Pl. Yes:—no, &c.

Ydynt:—*nac ydynt*, &c.

§ 106. **Antithetic interrogatives.** *Ai?* = is it... (that)? Gr. §§ 822, 823. *Onid* or *ai nid?*¹ = is it not... (that)? Gr. § 824. Government, Gr. § 825. Answers, Gr. § 829.

The answer is often made (as in English) more fully than by *yes* or *no*. Gr. § 829, a.

Is he reading?	<i>Ai</i> darllen y mae efe?
Yes:—yes, he is reading.	<i>Ië</i> :— <i>ië</i> , darllen y mae efe.
No:—no, he is not reading.	<i>Nage</i> :— <i>nage</i> , <i>nid</i> darllen y mae efe.
Is it not in the garden that they are working?	<i>Onid</i> yn yr ardd y maent yn gweithio?
Yes:—yes, it is in the garden they are working.	<i>Ië</i> :— <i>ië</i> , yn yr ardd y maent yn gweithio.

§ 107. VOCABULARY.

Cowhouse, <i>bèudy</i> , <i>pl.</i> <i>bèudai</i> (<i>m.</i>)	Fire, <i>tân</i> , <i>pl.</i> — <i>au</i> (<i>m.</i>)
Stable, <i>ystàbl</i> , <i>pl.</i> — <i>au</i> (<i>f.</i>)	Breath, <i>anadl</i> (<i>m.</i>)
Water, <i>dŵfr</i> , <i>dŵr</i> , <i>pl.</i> <i>dŷfroedd</i> (<i>m.</i>)	Duty, <i>dyledswydd</i> , <i>pl.</i> — <i>au</i> (<i>f.</i>)

¹ *Onid* and *ai nid* may be employed either as simple or antithetic interrogatives. Cf. § 824 with § 820 in Gr.

Work, employment, gwàith (<i>m.</i>)	Obedient (to), ufudd (<i>i.</i>)
Man-servant, gwâs, <i>pl.</i> gweision (<i>m.</i>)	Disobedient (to), anufudd (<i>i.</i>)
Maid-servant, môrwyn, <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>f.</i>)	To do, make, gwnëyd, <i>orgwneuthur.</i>
Parents, rhieni (<i>pl.</i>)	Is : are, ydyw <i>or</i> yw : ydynt <i>or</i> fynt.
Grandfather, tàid, <i>pl.</i> tèidiau (<i>m.</i>); <i>S. W. coll.</i> tâd cu.	Yes, ydyw, <i>pl.</i> ydynt : ie.
Grandmother, nàin, <i>pl.</i> nèiniau (<i>f.</i>); <i>S. W. coll.</i> mam gu.	No, nac ydyw, <i>pl.</i> nac ydynt : nage.
Happy, dèdwydd.	Is it...that? ai? [See above.]
Unhappy, annèdwydd.	Is it not...that? onid <i>or</i> ai nid? [See above.]
	In (<i>adv.</i>), i mèwn <i>or</i> i fèwn.
	Out, allan (<i>N. W.</i>), i maes (<i>S. W.</i>)

§ 108. MODEL FORMS.

This rose is not red.	Nid yw'r rhosyn hwn ddim yn goch.
Are the roads wide? Yes. No.	A ydyw'r ffyrdd yn llydain? Ydynt. Nac ydynt.
If they are doing their work.	Os ydynt yn gwneyd eu gwaith.
He is an obedient servant, is he not? Yes.	Y mae efe yn was ufudd, onid ydyw? Ydyw. [Nage.]
Is the iron in the fire. Yes. No.	Ai yn y tan y mae'r haiarn? Ië.

§ 109. EXERCISES.

A.) Nid ydyw'r gwas ddim yn gwneyd [gwneuthur] ei ddyledswydd.—Nid ydyw'r gweision ddim yn yr ystablau.—A ydyw fy rhaw i yn yr ardd? Nac ydyw, nid ydyw hi ddim yno.—Onid yw'r tan yn boeth? Ydyw, yn boeth iawn.—A ydyw'r buchod ddim [onid ydyw'r buchod] yn y beudy? Ydynt, y maent.—Y mae'r rhieni yn ddedwydd, os yw'r plant yn ufudd; ond y maent yn annedwydd, os yw'r plant yn anufudd.—A ydyw eu rhieni yn ddedwydd? Nac ydynt: y maent yn bur annedwydd.—Ai nid ydyw eich taid a'ch nain yn myned i'r dref? Nac ydynt, nid ydynt yn myned.—Nid ydyw hi ddim yn bwrw eira heddyw; ond y mae hi yn bwrw gwlaw.—Pa ham nad yw'r gweision ddim yn yr ystabl?—Nid ydyw hi ddim yn bwrw gwlaw, a ydyw hi? Nac ydyw, nid ydyw hi ddim.—Y mae eich taid a'ch nain yn bur hen, onid ydynt? Ydynt, y maent.—Y mae y dwfr yn gynnes, ond nid ydyw yn boeth.—Ai allan yn yr ardd y mae eich rhieni? Ië.—Ai bwrw gwlaw y mae hi heddyw? Nage: bwrw eira y mae hi.—Ai yn y beudy y mae'r morwynion? Nage: yn y ty y maent.—Ai nid yn y fan yma y mae efe yn bwriadu adeiladu ei dy newydd? Nage: yn y fan acw.—Ai i'r dref y mae'r gweision a'r morwynion yn myned? Ië.—Pa ham y mae'r

forwyn yn anufudd i'w meistres?—Nid yw'r gwas ddim yn anufudd i'w feistr.—Os nad ydynt yn ufudd i'w rhieni, nid ydynt yn blant da.—A ydyw eich hen was allan o waith? Ydyw, y mae.—Y mae'r tan allan.—A ydyw eich taid i mewn? Nac ydyw,—y mae efe allan yn y cae; ond y mae fy nain i mewn.—Y mae ei gwr i maes; ond y mae ei merch yn y ty.—Nid ydynt hwy allan o anadl; ond yr ydym ni.—Y mae eich gweision yn gwneyd llwybrau newyddion, onid ydynt? Ydynt, y maent; ac y maent yn gwneyd gwaith da.—Nid ydyw'r dwr ddim yn boeth, a ydyw efe? Nac ydyw, ddim yn boeth; ond y mae yn bur gynnes.—Ai allan yn y caeau y mae'r buchod? Nage: yn y beudai y maent.—Nid gyda'i nain y mae hi yn myned, ond gyda'i thaid.—Nid ydynt i mewn nac allan.—Ai nid i'r ysgol y mae'r ysgol feistr yn myned? Nage, i'r dref.—Y mae'r gwas a'r forwyn allan o anadl.—Ai ar y bryn acw y mae'r Eglwys newydd? Ië.

B.) The water is not hot, but it is warm.—The path is very narrow, is it not? Yes, it is very narrow.—Your new servant is not very obedient, is he? No, he is not.—Is the water hot? No: it is very cold.—Our parents are not there (*o. of s.*), are they? No, they are not.—Is not your man-servant in the stable? Yes: my two servants are there (*o. of s.*).—Are they obedient to their parents? Yes, very obedient.—If she is doing her work, she is an obedient servant.—Is it here that the cowhouse is? Yes.—Is it not in that (= *yonder*) field that the cows are grazing? No: it is in the other field they are grazing.—It is not a fine day to-day,—it is raining.—Is it snowing? No.—Why is your old servant (*m.*) out of work?—Is the fire out? No.—|| *You* understand these books, but || *they* don't.—Our men-servants are out, but our women-servants are in.—Is it not to school they are going? No: they are **going with the servants** (*m.*) to the village or the field.—Is it along this narrow road you are going? Yes.—It is now day, is it not? Yes, it is.—It is not a dark night, is it? No: it is a very light night.—The cows are **not in the cowhouses**: they are **out in the fields**.—If your servants (*m.*) are not in the stables, where are they?—Is her grandfather in? No, he is not in,—he is in the village.—|| *They* are happy; but their grandmother is not happy,—she is very unhappy.—Are they

doing very hard work? No.—If the fire is not hot, the water is not warm.—If the children are disobedient to their parents, they are naughty children.—The women-servants are doing their duty, are they not? Yes, they are.—My two servants (*m.*) are making a new road to the field.—|| *His* parents are very happy; but || *our* parents are not.—A disobedient servant (*m.*) is not a good servant.—The water is very warm, is it not? Yes, very warm.—Is he out of breath? No, he is not.—|| *They* are out of breath; but || *we* are not.—They are not out in the snow; but they are out in the rain.—My grandmother is **in the garden, not in the house.**—His grandfather neither writes letters nor reads books.—Are the servants (*f.*) disobedient to their mistress? Yes, they are very disobedient.—Why don't they do their duty?—If the sons and daughters are not obedient, their parents are unhappy.—Is it here that you intend to build your new house? No.—Is it not to the village they are going? Yes.

CHAPTER X.

[*Oes* for *mae*,—"y mae gwin,"—have = *y mae gan*,—*genyf*,—subject def.,—subject indef.,—order of words,—"y mae genyf geiniog,"—answers to questions,—"much time," "many friends,"—"twopence halfpenny," "three and six."]

Notes and References.

§ 110. *Mae* corresponds not only to "is" and "are," but also to "there is" and "there are."¹ Here the subject must be in W. and Eng. an indefinite term, *i.e.*, not defined or limited by a definite article or its equivalent.

§ 111. *Oes* takes the place of *mae* = "there is," "there are," if the verb is *immediately* preceded by the negative particles *nid*, *nad*, *nac*; the interr. *a*, *onid*, *ai nid*; or the hypothetical *os*, *os nad*. Gr. § 632.

Y mae gwin yn y botel hon, there is wine in this bottle.

A oes gwin yn y botel yna? is there wine in that bottle?

¹ "Y mae yna," and "y mae yno," corresponding exactly to "there is" or "there are," continually occur in colloquial language. Y mae yna (or yno) ddwy ddafad ddu yn y cae acw, *there are two black sheep in that field.*

§ 112. "Y mae gwin." *Gr.* § 589.

§ 113. **Have** = *possess*, is expressed by "y mae gàn" = *is (or are) with*. *Gr.* § 331, &c.

Y mae'r cleddyf gan y milwr (= *is the sword with the soldier*), *the soldier has the sword*.

Y mae gan y milwr gleddyf (= *there is with the soldier a sword*), *the soldier has a sword*.

When the object of the prep. *gan* (= the subject of *have*) is a pers. pronoun, the pronominal prep. *genyf* is used. [*On pronominal prepositions*, see *Gr.* §§ 361, 374, &c.]

Gènyf (fi²), *with me*.

Gènym (ni), *with us*.

Gènyt (ti), *with thee*.


Gènych (chwi), *with you*.

Gàddo (ef), *with him*.

Gàddynt (hwy), *with them*.

Gàddi (hi), *with her*.

§ 114. *Ydyw gan* takes the place of *y mae gan* after the particles *nid*, *naid*, &c. (see above, § 111), if the subject of the verb is *definitive*; but *oes gan*, if the subject is *indefinitive*.

 The *subject* of the clause in W. will be in Eng. the *object* of *has* or *have*: therefore, in translating from Eng. into W., see whether the *object* is *definitive* or *indefinitive*.

SUBJECT DEFINITIVE.

Y mae'r rhosyn gwyn gan fy modryb, *my aunt has the white rose*.

Nid yw'r rhosyn gwyn gan fy modryb, *my aunt has not the white rose*.

SUBJECT INDEFINITIVE.

Y mae gan Myfanwy ddannedd gwynion, *Myfanwy has white teeth*.

A oes gan Myfanwy ddannedd gwynion? *has Myfanwy white teeth?*

§ 115. Y mae—y cleddyf—gan y milwr. } *Gr.* § 332 (b)
Y mae—gan y milwr—gleddyf.³ }

§ 116. "Y mae genyf geiniog," *I have a penny*. "Y mae yma fwrdd mawr," *there is here a large table*. *Gr.* § 594.

§ 117. Answers to questions.

Is there a chair in my bedroom? A oes cadair yn fy ystafell wely?

Yes:—yes, there is: yes, there is Oes:—oes, y mae:—oes y mae
one. un.

² The pers. pronouns need not be expressed after the pronom. prep., unless they are emphatic. Observe the form of the pers. pron.: see Preliminary Remarks, § 23.

³ Or, "y mae cleddyf gan y milwr;" but this order is less common.

No:—no, there is not :—no, there is not one.	Nac oes:—nac oes, nid oes: nac oes, nid oes un (<i>or yr un: see next ch., § 128.</i>)
Have you a sharp knife?	A oes genych chwi gyllell finiog?
Yes:—yes, I have :—yes, I have one.	Oes :—oes, y mae (<i>genyf</i>) :—oes, y mae genyf un.
No:—no, I have not : no, I have not one.	Nac oes:—nac oes, nid oes (<i>genyf</i>): —nac oes, nid oes genyf un (<i>or yr un</i>).
Has your uncle my sword?	A ydyw fy nghleddyf i gan eich ewythr?
Yes :—yes, he has it.	Ydyw:—ydyw, y mae (<i>efe</i>) ganddo.
No :—no, he has it not.	Nac ydyw: nac ydyw, nid ydyw (<i>efe ddim</i>) ganddo.

§ 118. Eng. "Much time." W. "Much of time,"—*llawer o amser*.

Eng. "Many friends." W. "Many of friends,"—*llawer o gyfeillion*.

§ 119. "Dwy (*geiniog*) a dimai" = *two (pence) and a halfpenny; twopence halfpenny*.

The word *ceiniog* is usually omitted when *dimai* or *ffyrting* is added.

"Tri a chwech" = *three and six*: "tri swllt a chwecheiniog" = *three shillings and sixpence*.

The words *swllt* and *ceiniog* are very often left out when another numeral is added,—as in Eng., "three and six."

§ 120. VOCABULARY.

Knife, cýllell, <i>pl.</i> cýllyll (<i>f.</i>)	Candle, cànwyll, <i>pl.</i> —au (<i>f.</i>)
Sword, cleddyf, <i>pl.</i> —au (<i>m.</i>)	Tooth, dànt, <i>pl.</i> dànnedd (<i>m.</i>)
Fish, pysgodyn, <i>pl.</i> pýsgod (<i>m.</i>)	Paper, pàpur, <i>pl.</i> —au (<i>m.</i>)
Apple, afal, <i>pl.</i> —au (<i>m.</i>)	Newspaper, papur newydd, <i>pl.</i> papurau newyddion (<i>m.</i>); newyddiadur, <i>pl.</i> —on (<i>m.</i>)
Pear, rhwnen, rhwynyn, <i>pl.</i> rhwynyn (<i>f.</i>)	Ink, inc (<i>m.</i>)
Plum, eiren, eirinen, <i>pl.</i> eirin (<i>f.</i>)	Shilling, swllt, <i>pl.</i> sýlltau (<i>m.</i>)
Bottle, pòtel, <i>pl.</i> —i (<i>f.</i>)	Penny, cèiniog, <i>pl.</i> —au (<i>f.</i>)
Wine, gwîn, (<i>m.</i>)	Sixpence, chwecheiniog, <i>pl.</i> —au (<i>m.</i>)
Table, bwrdd, <i>pl.</i> býrddau (<i>m.</i>)	Halfpenny, dimai, <i>pl.</i> dimèiau (<i>f.</i>)
Chair, cadair, <i>pl.</i> cadeiriau (<i>f.</i>)	Farthing, ffýrting, <i>pl.</i> —od (<i>f.</i>)
Bed, gwely, <i>pl.</i> —au (<i>m.</i>)	Farmer, amaethwr, <i>pl.</i> amaethwyr; ffèrmwr, <i>pl.</i> ffèrmwyr (<i>m.</i>) ⁴
Room, ystafell, <i>pl.</i> —oedd (<i>f.</i>)	
Bedroom, ystafell wely (<i>f.</i>)	

⁴ In the Vocabularies two terms are sometimes given, one W., and the other borrowed from Eng., as *amaethwr* and *ffèrmwr*. The term borrowed from Eng. is the one used in *colloquial language*.

Uncle , ewythr (<i>coll.</i> ewyrth), <i>pl.</i>	Sharp , miniog.
-od <i>or</i> -edd (<i>m.</i>)	But, only , nid . . . ond (<i>rd.</i>)
Aunt , môdryb, <i>pl.</i> -oedd <i>or</i> -edd (<i>f.</i>)	Also , hefyd.
Tailor , tèiliwr, <i>pl.</i> teilwriaid (<i>m.</i>)	With , gan (<i>md.</i> : see above).
Much, many , llawer (<i>o.</i>)	To have (= <i>possess</i>), bod gan. [See
Plenty, enough , digon (<i>o.</i>)	above.]
Six , chwêch.	

§ 121. MODEL FORMS.

There are chairs and tables in his bedroom.	Y mae cadeiriau a byrddau yn ei ystafell wely.
Is there ink in that bottle? Yes.	A oes inc yn y botel yna? Oes.
No.	Nac oes.
My uncle has a newspaper.	Y mae gan fy ewythr bapur newydd.
The farmer has not the sword.	Nid yw'r cleddyf (ddim) gan yr amaethwr.
Have they four and six.	A oes ganddynt bedwar a chwech?
They have only threepence half-penny.	Nid oes ganddynt ond tair a dimai.

§ 122. EXERCISES.

A.) Y mae cylllell finiog ar y bwrdd.—A oes ganddynt gyllyll miniog yn eu dwylaw? Oes, y mae ganddynt.—A oes llawer o ganwyllau ar y bwrdd yn yr ystafell arall? Nac oes, nid oes yno ond dwy.—Y mae llawer o bysgod mawr yn yr afonydd hyn, onid oes? Oes, y mae.—Nid oes gan Myfanwy (*Gr.* § 461) lawer o afalau a rhwynyn, a oes? Nac oes, nid oes ganddi lawer; ond y mae ganddi ddigon.—A ydyw'r cleddyfau miniog genych chwi? Ydynt, y maent genym.—Nid yw'r ffyrlling ddim genyf fi: a ydyw hi gan Iorwerth? Nac ydyw, nid ydyw hi ddim ganddo.—Y mae gan ei hewythr inc coch; ond nid oes ganddo inc du.—Onid oes gan y teilwriaid frethyn glas? Nac oes; ond y mae ganddynt ddigon o frethyn du.—Os oes digon o lyfrau yn yr ystafell, y mae ein dau ewythr yn ddedwydd.—Y mae gan Arthur ddwy eiren [eirinen], ac y mae gan Myfanwy dair; ond nid oes gan Iorwerth yr un.—A oes gwely yn yr ystafell yma? Oes: y mae yma ddau wely, a dwy gadair; ac y mae yma fwrdd hefyd.—Nid oes genym ni na phapur nac inc; ond y mae gan ein modryboedd ddigon o bapur ac o inc.—Nid oes genyf fi bapur newydd [newyddiadur]: a oes genych chwi un? Nac oes.—Y mae'r ddimai gan Arthur: a ydyw'r ffyrlling genych chwi? Nac ydyw, nid ydyw hi ddim genyf fi.—Y mae'r

ceiniogau genym; ond nid yw'r sylltau ddim genym.—A oes ganddo ef chwecheiniog? Nac oes; nid oes ganddo ond ceiniog a dimai.—Os nad oes tan yn ei hystafell wely, nid yw fy modryb ddim yn ddedwydd.—Nid oes yma ond un ganwyll.—Y mae gan Myfanwy geiniog a dimai, ac y mae gan ei modryb ddwy a dimai.—Nid oes gan yr amaethwr [ffermwr] lawer o arian,—nid oes ganddo ond pedwar a chwech.—A oes genyf fi ddannedd gwynion? Oes: y mae genych ddannedd gwynion iawn.—Y mae'r ddau chwecheiniog ganddi; ond nid yw'r dimeiau na'r ffyrllingod ddim ganddi.—Nid oes genyf fi ond tri a chwech, ac nid oes gan fy modryb ond tair a dimai.—Nid yw'r rhwenn [rhwynnen] ganddo, ond y mae'r afal ganddo.—Ai yn ei wely y mae Arthur? Iä.

B.) There are good bells in these rooms, are there not? Yes, there are.—Is there a table in my bedroom? Yes, and a chair also.—If there is not wine in that (*near*) bottle, there is plenty of wine in these bottles.—Are there many apples on the trees in your garden? Yes, and plenty of pears and plums.—You have very sharp knives, have you not? Yes, we have.—There is not a candle in your bedroom; but there is a chair there, and also a table.—Is there much wine in these bottles? No, there is not much?—|| *I* have a shilling, and my aunt has three and sixpence; but my uncle has only fourpence halfpenny.—Have you the two farthings? No, I have them not.—Have the tailors enough cloth? Yes, they have.—|| *We* have the swords: have || *you* the sharp knives? Yes, we have them.—Iorwerth has not the newspaper: have you it? Yes, I have it.—We have not very black teeth, have we? No, you have not,—you have very white teeth.—If those (*o. of s.*) farmers have not plenty of money, they are not happy.—There are not many plums on these trees, are there? No, there are not many.—Have the servants many bottles? No, they have but four.—Is there a tailor in this village? Yes, there are two. Is there not enough paper on the table in her room? No, there is not enough.—He has a sixpence; but he has not a shilling.—Myfanwy has twopence halfpenny, and her aunt has threepence halfpenny.—Arthur has two large fish; but Iorwerth has not one.—He is a happy man, if there are plenty of fish in the river.—There

faint, ychydig (= a little). **Some** (*adj.*): *peth, rhywfaint o, ychydig o*.

Has the farmer any butter? Yes, he has some. *A oes gan yr amaethur ddim ymenyn? Oes, y mae ganddo beth.*

They have some paper, *y mae ganddynt beth papur* [*rywfaint o, ychydig o bapur*].

b.) When **some** (*adj.*) is unemphatic, it need not be translated into W.

I have some paper (= I have paper), *y mae genyf bapur*.

c.) **Somebody, some one**: *rhywun*, pl. *rhywrai*.

Something: *rhywbeth* (*m.*)

I see something, *yr wyf yn gweld rhywbeth*.

§ 125. **Any, no, not any, none, &c.**, in interr., neg., and hypoth. sentences.

a.) **Any** (*adj.*), qualifying numeral objects: *yr ūn* or *ūn* (*sing.*); *dim* (*pl.*): *unrhyw*. [See below, c.]

Unrhyw is followed by *sing.* or *pl.*, and has the force of *any of any sort*.

☞ *A* or *an*, having the force of *any*, very often corresponds to *yr un*. [Have you *an* apple? *pl.*, have you *any* apples?]

Have you a (W.=*any*) good book in your possession? *a oes genych chwi yr un llyfr da ar eich helw?*

Has the shoemaker any shoes? *a oes gan y crydd ddim esgidiau?*

If he has any objection (whatever), *os oes ganddo unrhyw wrthwyn-ebiad*.

No or **not any** (*adj.*), qualifying numeral objects: *nid ... yr un* (*sing.*); *nid ... dim* (*pl.*): *nid ... unrhyw*. In negative interr. *a ... yr un?* *a ... dim?*¹ with emphasis on *yr un* and *dim*, when it is necessary to distinguish the *negative* from the *simple* interr.

If there is no bed in the room, *os nad oes yr un gwely yn yr ystafell*.

If there are no fish in the river, *os nad oes dim pysgod yn yr afon*.

Has your little girl no other shoe? *a oes gan eich geneth fach yr un esgid arall?*

Have they no chairs and tables? *a oes ganddynt hwy ddim cadeiriau a byrddau?*

We have no objection (whatever), *nid oes genym ni unrhyw wrthwyn-ebiad*.

¹ The negative interr. *onid* and *ai nid* (is or are not?) may be used; but they are not followed by *yr un* and *dim*.

Onid oes eirin ar y goeden yma? are there not plums on this tree?

A oes dim eirin ar y goeden yma? are there no plums on this tree?

b.) **Any** (*adj.*), qualifying nouns of quantity, abstract nouns, &c.: *dim* (sing.)

No or **not any** (*adj.*): *nid ... dim* (sing.) In negative interr. *a ... dim?* with emphasis on *dim*.

Has the farmer any butter to sell? A oes gan yr amaethwr ddim ymenyn ar werth?

Have you no [not any] bread? A oes genych chwi ddim bara?

If there is any comfort in these words. Os oes dim cysur yn y geiriau hyn.

There is no [not any] comfort in this place. Nid oes dim cysur yn y lle yma.

c.) When any (*adj.* and *noun*) is = *some* (namely, in sentences not negative), it is often rendered by *rhyw*; *rhai*; *peth*.

I have cheese: have you any? Y mae genyf fi gaws: a oes genych chwi beth?

If you have any other book. Os oes genych chwi ryw lyfr arall.

We have apples: have you any? Y mae genym ni afalau: a oes genych chwi rai?

d.) The equivalents of *any*, like *any* itself, may be, and often are, left out, when unemphatic.

Is there any bread (= is there bread) in the house? *a oes bara yn y ty?*

No, when unemphatic = *not*, may be rendered by *nid* simply.

She has no (=not) cheese, *nid oes ganddi gaws*.

e.) **Any** (*noun*): *nêb*; *yr un* or *un*, pl. *rhai*; *dim*. [See above, c.]

Neb refers to persons, and is generally sing. = *any one, any body*.

Yr un or *un* is singular, and particularises = "one," and refers to persons or things. *Rhai* may be used in pl., when *any* = *some*.

Dim generally refers to things, and implies quantity or number,—if number, it is plural. *Dim* followed by *o* is sometimes used of persons.

None or **not any** (*noun*): *nid ... neb*; *nid ... yr un* or *un*, pl. *nid ... rhai*; *nid ... dim*. In negative interr. *a ... neb?* *a ... yr un?* *a ... dim?* with emphasis on *neb*, *yr un*, and *dim*.

None or **not any**, in answers to questions: *neb*; *yr un*; *dim*.

Anybody, any one: *neb*; (= somebody) *rhywun*, pl. *rhywrai*.

Anything: *dim*; (= something) *rhywbeth*.

Nobody, no one, not ... anybody, &c.: *nid ... neb*; *a ... neb?* In answers: *neb*.

Nothing, not . . . anything: *nid . . . dim*; *a . . . dim*? In answers: *dim*.

Is there anybody [are there any] in the room?	A oes neb yn yr ystafell?
No, nobody,—no, none.	Nac oes, neb.
Is there nobody [are there none or not any] in church?	A oes <i>neb</i> yn yr Eglwys?
Do you see any of the men?	A ydych chwi yn gweled neb o'r dynion?
No, I don't see any [I see none] of them.	Nac ydwyf, nid wyf yn gweled neb o honynt.
Are there not any [are none] of your friends here.	A oes <i>neb</i> o'ch cyfeillion yma?
Arthur has knives: has Iorwerth any?	Mae gan Arthur gyllyll: a oes gan Iorwerth rai [ddim]?
We have plenty of cheese: have they any?	Mae genym ni ddigon o gaws: a oes ganddynt hwy ddim?
They have not any [none].	Nid oes ganddynt ddim.
Has the shoemaker any of those shoes?	A oes gan y crydd ddim o'r esgidiau hyny?
Has not he any [has he none] of those shoes?	A oes ganddo ef <i>ddim</i> o'r esgidiau hyny?
No, he has not any [none] of them.	Nac oes, nid oes ganddo ddim o honynt.
None of the children are in school.	Nid oes neb [yr un, dim] o'r plant yn yr ysgol.
Have you anything in your pocket?	A oes genych chwi ddim [rywbeth] yn eich llogell?
Has he nothing [not anything] in his garden?	A oes ganddo <i>ddim</i> yn ei ardd?
No, he has nothing: no, nothing.	Nac oes, nid oes ganddo ddim: nac oes, ddim.

§ 126. In elliptical answers (e.g., *oes*, *beth* = *oes*, *y mae ganddo beth*) the substantive, or substantive word, following the verb, is put in the *mid*. sound.

Has the farmer any honey?	A oes gan yr amaethwr ddim mel?
Yes, some:—yes, plenty:—no, none.	Oes, <i>beth</i> :—oes, <i>ddigon</i> :—nac oes, <i>ddim</i> .

§ 127. **Position.** All adjective pronouns (except *arall* and *oll*) precede their nouns. *Gr.* § 214.

Government. *Gr.* § 218.

Dim; *yr un* or *un* (mas.); *rhai*; *peth*, govern *rad*.

Rhyw; *yr un* or *un* (fem.); *unrhyw*, „ *mid*.

§ 128. **Un**, *one*, has very often *yr* placed before it, when it

comes after negative particles, negative hypoth., and interr. introduced by *a*. [See "any," above, § 125, e.]

Have you one? *a oes genych chwi un or yr un?*

Has not she one? *a oes ganddi hi yr un?*

We have not one, *nid oes genym ni un or yr un.*

If he has not one, *os nad oes ganddo un or yr un.*

§ 129. "Some of the men," *rhai o'r dynion.* } *Gr.* § 187 (b):
 "Some of them," *rhai o honynt.* } also 750 (a).

§ 130. Genitive with *o*. *Gr.* § 444.

Digon o fara, plenty of bread. *Rhai o'r adar, some of the birds.*

§ 131. VOCABULARY.

Bird, *aderyn, pl. adar (m.)*

Nest, *nŷth, pl.-od (m.)*

Word, *gair, pl. gèiriau (m.)*

Comfort, *cysur, pl.-on (m.)*

Cattle, *gwartheg (pl.)*

Bread, *bara (m.)*

Cheese, *caws (m.)*

Butter, *ymenyn (m.)*

Honey, *mél (m.)*

Door, *drws, pl. drwsau (m.)*

Shoe, *èsgid, pl.-iau (f.)*

Shoemaker, *crŷdd, pl.-ion (m.)*

Shop, *siðp, pl.-au (f.) masnachdy,*
pl. masnachdai (m.)

Shopkeeper, *siðpwr, masnachwr*
(m.: pl. Gr. § 130).

Objection, *gwrthwynebiad, pl.-*
au (m.)

Some . . . or other, *rhyw . . . neu gilydd.*

Nothing at all [in the world], *nid . . . dim yn y byd.*

In my possession, *ar fy helw.²*

Right (to), *hàwl (i: m.)*

Pocket, *llogell, pl.-au (f.), pòced,*
pl.-i.

Account (of), *hanes (am: md.),*
pl.-ion (m. N.W., f. S.W.)

Stranger, *gwr [dyn] dieithr; f.*
gwraig [dynes] ddieithr: pl. di-
eithriaid, pobl ddieithr (m. and f.)

Strange, *dieithr.*

Ready (to), *parod (i).*

Angry (with), *dig (wrth).*

To walk, *cèrdded.*

To ride, *marchogaeth.*

At, by, *wrth (md.)*

Always, *bób amser, yn wàstad.*

On sale, to sell, *àr wèrth.*

Some, any, &c., } See above.
No, none, &c., }

§ 132. EXERCISES.

A.) Pa le y mae'r adar bach? Y mae rhai yn y nyth, a rhai ar y goeden.—Y mae rhyw wartheg dieithr ar y ffordd, onid oes? Oes, y mae.—A oes gan y siopwr ddim mel ar werth? Oes, y mae ganddo beth, ond nid llawer.—Nid oes gan y masnachwr ddim hawl i fyned yno; ond y mae gan ei wraig.—Y mae rhai o honom am gerdded i'r dref, a rhai am

² Often = the phrase "to bless myself."

farchogaeth.—Nid ydwyf yn deall yr un gair.—A oes dim hanes yn y llyfr yna am yr hen Eglwys hon? Oes, y mae peth; ond nid oes llawer.—Nid oes neb o honom yn barod i fyned.—Nid oes yr un o'r adar yn y nyth.—A oes dim cadeiriau yn yr ystafell? Nac oes, yr un.—Yr ydych yn darllen rhyw lyfrau neu gilydd yn wastad.—Y mae rhyw hen wraig wrth y drws.—A oes neb o'r gweision yn barod? Nac oes, nid oes neb o honynt yn barod.—A oes *neb* o honoch yn dyfod i'r Eglwys? Nac oes, neb.—Nid oes gan y crydd yr un swllt ar ei helw.—A oes yr un¹ fuwch arall yn y beudy? Nac oes, yr un.—Nid oes yr un teiliwr na chrydd yn y llan yma; ond y mae yma ddau siopwr.—Y mae'r bobl ddieithr wrth y drws.—A oes dim cysur yn ei eiriau? Nac oes, ddim.—Nid oes genym ddim caws nac ymenyn; ond y mae genym fara.—A oes *yr un* o'r morwynion yn y ty? Nac oes, nid oes yr un o honynt.—A oes gan y crydd *ddim* ar ei helw? Nac oes, nid oes ganddo ddim yn y byd ar ei helw.—A oes ganddo rywbeth yn ei siop [fasnachdy]? Nac oes, ddim yn y byd.—A ydyw'r siopwr yn ddig wrth neb? Nac ydyw, wrth neb.—Y mae genych beth o'r caws, onid oes? Oes, y mae genyf beth o hono.—Os *oedd* ganddo rywbeth yn ei siop.

B). Has your friend any honey? No, || *he* has none; but his father has some.—There are some birds in this wood, but not many.—Are any of the servants ready to go with their master? Yes, some are now ready to go.—There is a (W. = *some*) stranger at the door.—There are some strange cattle in the fields, are there not? Yes, there are.—They are always riding to some places or other.—Is there anybody in? No, nobody.—There is no comfort in her words.—There is not a (W. = *any*) shoemaker in the village.—There are no birds in the nest.—Are any of them going to the village? Yes, some of them are going now.—Have you any bread? No, we have no bread; but we have some (*unemphatic*) cheese.—Are any of these houses on sale? No, none of them are on sale.—I have not a (W. = *any*) penny in my pocket.—The shoemaker has nothing in his possession [to bless himself].—Have the shopkeepers no right to be here? No, they have not.—Has

¹ *Yr un*, notwithstanding the article *yr*, is indefinite in this construction: hence the verb *oes*, not *ydyw*.

she anything? No, she has nothing in the world.—Has the farmer any cattle to sell? Yes, he has some.—Is there another (W. = *any other*) bird in the nest? No, there is not one.—I have some (*unemphatic*) butter, thank you.—Has not the shopkeeper anything in his shop? No, not anything.—None of us intend to walk.—Some of you are riding.—Are they angry with anybody? No, they are not angry with anybody.—These shoemakers have nothing to sell; but you have something.—Has not he another (W. = *any other*) shoe. No, he has not another (W. = *any other*) shoe?—These men are always angry with somebody or other.—We have not a (W. = *any*) penny to bless ourselves.

C.) A oes gan eich ewythr yr un gyllell? Nac oes, yr un.—A oes gan y crydd *ddim* esgidiau? Nac oes, *ddim*.—A oes ganddi hi *ddim* ymenyn? Nac oes, *ddim*.—Y mae ganddynt fel, onid oes? Oes, *ddigon*.—A ydych chi yn gwneyd rhywbeth? Ydym: y mae rhai o honom yn marchogaeth, a rhai yn ysgrifenu llythyrau.—Nid ydyw'r teilwriaid hyn yn gwneyd dim yn y byd; ond y mae'r cryddion yn gweithio yn galed.—Y mae genym ni *ddigon* o fara a chaws: a oes genych chi *ddim*? Oes, y mae genym beth; ond nid oes genym lawer.—Yr ydym ni bob amser yn barod i chwareu.—Nid oes gan fy modryb unrhyw wrthwynebiad.—Nid oes gan y bachgen bach yr un *ddimai* yn ei logell [*boced*].—Os oes genych unrhyw wrthwynebiad arall.—Y mae rhywrai neu gilydd wrth y drysau hyn yn wastad.—Nid oes dim o'r plant yn yr ysgol.—Nid oes gan neb o honom arian yn ein pocedi [*llogellau*].—Y mae gan y siopwr beth caws; ond nid oes ganddo *ddigon*.—A oes gan yr amaethwr *ddim* defaid? Nac oes, nid oes ganddo *ddim*.—Nid oes neb o honynt yn deall yr un gair o'r llyfr.—Nid oes genyf fi *ddim* ymenyn; ond y mae genych chi beth.

D.) Has the stranger any objection? No.—The strangers have no objection (whatever).—If the stranger (*f.*) has anything.—If she has nothing.—Do you see any one there (= *you-der*)? No, I don't see any one.—They have plenty of books: do they read some of them? Yes, they do.—|| *We* have a very good garden: have || *you* one? Yes, we have.—|| *You* have plenty of bread: have the strangers any? Yes, they have some, but they have not enough.—None of the servants are

ready.—There is no account in this book of those (*o. of s.*) old churches.—There is nothing in his pocket.—Is there anybody in the other room with your uncle? No, there is nobody.—Where is her shoe? There is not a (*W. = any*) shoe here.—There are no houses on sale in this town.—Are there any strangers coming with your husband? No, none.—Are there any cattle in that (*= yonder*) field? No, there are none.—Have you anything in your possession? No, nothing.—There is no comfort here, is there? No.—Are there any shopkeepers in this village? No, there is not one.—Have these people any (*unemphatic*) right to be here? Yes, they have.—Have you anything in your pocket? No, I have nothing at all.—Does she see any one? No, no one.—Has not the soldier a sword? No, he has not one.—If you see none (*i.e., persons*) of them.—There is some comfort in these words.—I have some (*unemphatic*) gold in my pocket.—Where are the cattle? There are none in these fields.—Those (*o. of s.*) girls are always doing something or other.—My uncle has not a (*W. = any*) shilling to bless himself.—They have nothing at all to sell.—None of us understand a word of your book.—Some of them are walking along the road, and some are riding in the fields.—Where is there any (*unemphatic*) account of these old churches?—Are none of you ready to start? No, none.—There are some strangers at the door.

CHAPTER XII.

[Antithetic personal pronouns,—relative pronouns,—*sydd*,—negation of *sydd*,—*dyma*, *dyna*, *darw*,—relative pronouns omitted,—*pŵr* and *môr*.]

§ 133. *Antithetic personal pronouns.*

- | | | |
|---------------------|-------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| 1. Myfi, <i>I.</i> | 2. Tydi, <i>thou.</i> | 3. Efe, <i>he</i> : hyhi, <i>she.</i> |
| 1. Nyni, <i>we.</i> | 2. Chwyhwi, <i>you.</i> | 3. Hwyt-hwy, <i>they.</i> |

Give the contracted or colloquial form. [Prelim. Remarks, § 17.]

§ 134. *Relative pronouns.*

Yr hwn (<i>m.</i>); yr hon (<i>f.</i>);	} <i>who, whose, whom, which,</i> <i>that.</i> (<i>Gr.</i> § 205.)
y rhai (<i>pl.</i>),	
Ag, indeclinable,	

Ag is less emphatic than “*yr hwn*,” &c. [See *Gr.* §§ 857–859.]

Notes and References.

§ 135. *Sydd* is used when the subject is antithetical (*e.g.*, it is Arthur that is a good scholar,—is it Arthur that is a good scholar?), and when the predicate is *indefinitive*. [Order: subject—verb—indef. predicate.] *Gr.* § 639 (3), *and notes*.

Y gwr ieuanc yma sydd yn ysgolaig da, *this young man is a good scholar.*

Eich chwaer sydd yn chwaraeu, nid chwychwi, *it is your sister who is playing, not you.*

§ 136. When the subject is antithetical, the negative, interr., and hypoth. particles belong to it, not to the verb: hence the verb is not affected. [Order: particle—subject—verb—predicate.] *Gr.* §§ 618, 620.

Nid fy meistr sydd yn sefyll wrth y drws acw (= *not my master is, &c.*), *it is not my master who is standing at that door.*

Ai eich meistres sydd yn darllen fy llyfr? *is it your mistress who is reading my book?*

§ 137. In relative and interr. clauses introduced by the subject, the subject is not necessarily antithetical.

Dyma'r bachgen, yr hwn sydd yn¹ sal, *this is the boy who is poorly.*

Dyma'r bobl, y rhai sydd² yn dlawd, *these are the people who are poor.*

Pwy sy'n ofalus? *who is (or are) careful?*

[In other clauses (especially in translations) *sydd* often occurs where *mae*, with its subject following, would be the proper copula.³]

§ 138. **Negation of *sydd*.** When the subject is not antithetical, the negative particle belongs to the verb, and the verb must be *yw* or *ydyw*, *pl.* *ynt* or *ydynt*, not *sydd*. *Gr.* § 619.

Dyma'r eneth, yr hon nid yw yn iach, *this is the girl who is not well.*

Dyma'r plant, y rhai nid ynt yn ufudd, *these are the children who are not obedient.*

Another way of negating *sydd* is by retaining it, and adding “*heb fod*” = *without being*: this form of negation is more common than the preceding, especially in interr. clauses.

¹ *Sydd* is often contracted into *sy'n*: “*yr hwn sy'n sal.*”

² *Sydd* is both sing and pl. Some use *ynt* or *ydynt* as plural of *sydd*; but this does not exist in colloquial language, and it is doubtless wrong. [*Gr.* § 643 (a)].

³ This point is discussed at length in the Appendix to the “*Rules of the Welsh Initial Changes*,” by Dr. Charles Williams (pp. 39, 40).

In colloquial language "sydd ddim" occurs continually.

Dyma'r ferch ieuanc sydd heb fod [sydd ddim] yn iach, *this is the young woman who is not well.*

Pwy sydd heb fod [sydd ddim] yn barod? *who is not ready?*

Pwy sydd ddim yn ysgrifenu yn dda? *who does not write well?*

The interrogative clause is also often negated by expanding the clause into an interr. and a relative = "who is there that is not?"

Pwy sydd nad yw yn clywed y gloch? *who is there that does not hear the bell; who does not hear the bell?*

§ 139. Ai chwychwi sydd [not *ydych*] yma? *is it you that are here?* Gr. § 641.

§ 140. **Dyma** and **dyna**. Gr. §§ 201, 551 (a).

§ 141. **Relative pronouns**. Read "Relative clause," Gr. § 853, &c.

The relative is often omitted. Gr. § 868.

Dyma'r ferch ieuanc sydd (or yr hon sydd) bob amser mor garedig wrth eich plant, *this is [here's] the young woman who is always so kind to your children.*

Dacw'r dynion nad (or y rhai nid) ydynt yn gwneyd eu dyledswydd, *those are [there are, yonder are] the men who don't do their duty.* Gr. § 877.

§ 142. Gr. 474 (a).

Y mae hi yn wraig bur daclus, *she is a pretty tidy woman.*

Y mae hi yn wraig mor daclus, *she is such a tidy woman.*

Gr. § 692. [This rule applies to qualified predicate-adjectives as well as to adverbs.]

Y mae hi yn bur ufudd, *she is pretty obedient.*

Y mae hi yn wastad mor ufudd, *she is always so obedient.*

§ 143. VOCABULARY.

Kitchen, cegin, *pl.*-au (*f.*)

Gentleman, gwr boneddig, boneddwr:
pl. boneddigion, bonèddwyr (*m.*)

Lady, gwraig foneddig, boneddiges:
pl. boneddigesau (*f.*)

(First) cousin, cèfnder, *pl.* cèfndyr
(*m.*): cyfnither, *pl.*-oedd (*f.*)

Rock, cràig, *pl.* crèigiau (*f.*)

Young, ièuanc, *pl.* ieuainc; *coll.*
ifanc, *pl.* ifainc.

Rich, cyfoethog (*pl.*-ion).

Poor (= *not rich*), tlàwd, *pl.* tlòdion.

Poor (= *not good*), sâl, (*pl.* sèilion).

Poorly, ill, sick, sâl, (*pl.* sèilion),
clâf (*pl.* clèifion).

Right (*adj.*), iàwn.

Dangerous, perýglus.

Careful, gofalus.

Unkind (to), brwnt, (*f.* brònt) *pl.*
brýntion; angharedig (wrth).

Untidy, annâclus.	Who? whose? whom? pŵy?
Ugly, hÿll.	This is, here is, here's, } dyma (md.)
Handsome, hàrdd. ⁴	These are, here are, } (md.)
Beautiful, prÿdferth. ⁴	That is, there is, there's, } dyna
Pretty, tlŵs, ⁴ coll. clŵs: pl.	Those are, there are (near), } (md.)
tlÿsion, clÿsion.	That is, there is, } (md.)
Is: are, sÿdd.	there's = yonder is, } dâcw (md.)
To stand, sefyll.	Those are, there are } = yonder are,
To sit, èistedd.	So (noting comparison) } môr (md.)
To sell, gwèrthu.	Such (qualifying adj.) } môr (md.)
To wear, gwisgo.	So or such very, mor hynod o.
To love, caru.	
A young woman, merch ieuanc.	
A young lady, boneddiges ieuanc.	
Here I am, &c., dyma fi, &c. [Prelim. Remarks, § 23.]	
Here I am going, dyma fi yn myned.	

§ 144. MODEL FORMS.

Who is poor? You are poor.	Pwy sy'n dlawd? Chwychwi sy'n dlawd. Nid chwychwi sydd.
You are not.	
Here's my friend coming.	Dyma fy nghyfaill yn dyfod.
This is the gentleman who is so rich.	Dyma'r gwr boneddig (yr hwn) sydd mor gyfoethog.
She is such a handsome woman.	Y mae hi yn ddynes mor hardd.
Is this the lady who is not well?	Ai dyma'r foneddiges sydd heb fod [sydd ddim,—nad yw,—yr hon nid yw] yn iach?
Who does not love good people?	Pwy sydd nad yw [sydd ddim] yn caru pobl dda?

§ 145. EXERCISES.

A.) Ai y gwr sydd yn y gegin? Nage, y wraig sydd yn y gegin.—Pwy sydd yn myned i'w wely? Myfi sydd.—Ai'r cryddion hyn sy'n gwneyd esgidiau seilion? Nage.—Nid y gwr boneddig, ond ei was, sydd yn sefyll ar y graig beryglus acw.—Dyma'r wraig foneddig (ag) sydd mor gyfoethog.—Lle y mae'r boneddigion ereill? Dyma hwy [coll. nhw].—Y mae'r wlad yma yn brydferth iawn, onid ydyw hi? Ydyw, y mae hi.—Lle y mae'r wraig sal? Dacw hi yn eistedd yn y gadair.—Ei gefnder, nid efe, sy'n gwerthu ymenyn a chaws.—Nyni sy'n bobl ofalus, nid hwynt-hwy.—Onid eich cyfnither sydd yn myned i'r dref? Nage, fy nghefnder sydd yn myned yno.—Pa le y mae'r foneddiges ieuanc? Dacw hi yn y ffordd yn

⁴ The distinction between these words is not strictly observed.

marchogaeth ceffyl glas.—A ydych chwi yn gweled y gwr boneddig ieuanc hardd (ag) sydd yn sefyll wrth y tan? Ydwyf.—Y mae fy nghefnder bob amser mor hynod o ofalus.—Y mae'r dyn tlawd yn eistedd wrth dân sal yn yr ystafell arall.—Dacw ddyn ieuanc hardd.—Y mae efe yn wastad mor hynod o annaclus.—Os ydym ni yn hyll, yr ydych chwi yn glws.—Pwy sydd ddim yn caru pobl mor garedig?—Pwy sydd nad yw (*pl.* nad ynt) yn deall fy ngeiriau?—Y mae'r ferch ieuanc (yr hon *or* ag) sydd yn eistedd wrth y tan yn bur sal.—Dyna'r ffordd iawn i'r dref.—Ai dyna'r ddwy foneddiges ieuanc⁵ (y rhai) sydd heb fod yn iach? Ië.—Dacw'r boneddigion (y rhai) sydd bob amser yn gwisgo dillad mor seilion.—Ai dyna'r cryddion (y rhai) sy'n gwerthu esgidiau seilion? Ië.

B.) Who is here? It is I.—Who is a friend to a poor man? You are not (*E.c.* § 136).—Is this the lady who is so kind to those (*o. of s.*) poor people? Yes.—Where is your sick brother? Here he is sitting in this chair by the fire.—These are my only cousins (*mas.*) who are always kind.—Are these the flowers that are so beautiful? Yes.—Who is going to (HIS) bed? Arthur is going to (HIS) bed.—Where are you? Here I am.—Where are her cousins (*mas.*)? Here they are.—Do you see that (= *yonder*) handsome young lady who is walking in the field? Yes; and she is very handsome.—They are so very unkind to their children.—Who is poor? It is I who am poor and poorly.—It is not this lady that is so ill.—There are [*yonder* are] the two handsome young gentlemen walking along the road.—Is it you who are going to (YOUR) bed now? Yes.—Who are standing at the door? Your daughters and their two cousins (*fem.*)—Who are rich people? They are not rich people.—Is it your cousin who is so ill? No, it is not he,—it is my uncle who is.—Here's the book, there's (*near*) the paper, and *yonder* is the school.—It is you who are always so very untidy.—Are these the young women who are so very unkind to their father and mother? No.—Who are ugly? You are not ugly,—we are ugly.—They sell such pretty things.—He wears such poor clothes.—There's (*near*) an ugly man.—That is (*near*) the young woman who is always in the

⁵ *Ieuanc* in sing., *Gr.* § 498 (c), *exception* (a).

kitchen.—Does the tailor, who is now in your kitchen, sell red cloth? Yes, he does.—Who are not careful and industrious? || *Your* cousins (*mas.*)—Who is there that does not love kind and good people?—This is the right thing.—Who is right? **You** are right.—Myvanwy is such a pretty girl.—Is this the dangerous rock? Yes.—Are these your cousins (*fem.*) who are not well? No.—Who are not careful and industrious? These young men and those (*near*) young women.—This lady is always so very kind to poor people.—Why do his uncles wear black clothes?—Don't you see those (= *yonder*) two young ladies? Yes, we do.

C.) Onid yw ein hamser, yr hwn nid yw ond byr, yn werthfawr? Ydyw, y mae yn werthfawr iawn.—Y mae'r merched a'r dynion ieuainc, (y rhai) sydd yn y fan acw, mewn lle peryglus iawn, onid ydynt? Ydynt, y maent.—Y mae hi yn ddynes front [angharedig] iawn.—Pa ham y mae hi mor front wrth ei morwynion?—Dacw ferlod tlysion.—Dyma'r tai newyddion sydd ar werth.—Dyma'r gwr boneddig (ag) sydd yn ysgolaig mor dda.—Pwy sydd nad ydynt [sydd ddim] yn gwneyd eu dyledswydd?—Pwy sydd yma? Myfi.—Pwy sydd yn iawn? Nid chwychwi sydd,—nyni sydd yn iawn.—Ai hwynt-hwy (*coll.* y *nhw*) sydd yn angharedig wrth y ddau blentyn? Nage, chwychwi (*coll.* y *chwi*) sydd.—Lle y mae'r dyn claf? Dyma efe.—Yr ydych chi yn ddyn mor hynod o ddiog.—Dyma'r morwynion (ag) sydd bob amser yn gwneyd eu dyledswydd.—Nid fy nghefndyr sydd yn gwerthu y pethau hyn.—Pwy sydd heb fod yn deall? Myfi.—A ydyw'r boneddigesau (y rhai) sy'n dyfod yma gyda'ch ewythrod, yn sal? Nac ydynt: nid oes yr un o honynt yn sal.—Ein cefndyr, nid ein cyfnitheroedd, sy'n bwriadu myned i'r dref gyda'r amaethwr.—Y mae'r plant nad ydynt [y rhai nid ydynt] yn ufudd i'w rhieni, yn blant drwg.—Nid yw'r gweision (ag) sydd heb fod yn ofalus, ddim yn weision da.

D.) That is (*near*) the young gentleman who is so rich.—Children, who do not love their parents, are naughty children.—Here's a pretty pony (*f.*)—The lady who is standing in that place [*yonder*] is not very rich.—If your cousins (*mas.*) are not poor, they are poorly.—Why is she so unkind to her little brother?—Is not this the young woman who is unkind

to her brothers and sisters? Yes.—Good people do not love children who are not obedient to their parents.—Who is selling that (= *yonder*) ugly mare?—This country is very beautiful.—Are these the three young girls who read and write so well? Yes.—Who does not do his duty? You.—Who is there (*near*)? I am here.—It is Myvanwy, not her cousin, who is a careful little girl.—Who is soiling his new clothes? I am not.—**Her aunt** is unkind, not her grandmother.—Where are the other ladies? There (= *yonder*) they are.—Who are careful servants? **They** are.—The young man, who is not well, is in (*his*) bed.—Where is the dangerous rock? Here it is.—These are the women who are doing nothing.—This shop-keeper has such very pretty things in his shop.—Where is the sick man? There he is (*near*) sitting in the chair.—It is not these gentlemen who are so rich.—Why does the lady, who is walking with your aunts, wear such poor clothes?—Is the woman, who is sitting by the fire in the other room, very poor? Yes, very poor: she has not a sixpence to bless herself.—Those are (*near*) the boys and girls, who do not work hard.—This is the tailor who does not make good clothes.—Who is poorly in this house? None of us are poorly.—It is your aunts, not your uncles, that are going with your grandfather.—It is not these young men who are going with that (= *yonder*) gentleman.—You are always so very untidy.—Their cousins are such handsome young men.

CHAPTER XIII.

[Genitive without *o*,—*whose*, *rel.*,—*whose*, *inter.*,—*mine*, Arthur's, &c.—*a friend of mine*,—*who has?*]

Notes and References.

§ 146. Genitive without "o," or *mere apposition* genitive.
Gr. §§ 434–438. In what sound is the genitive put?

Eng. The king's son,—the son of the king. } Gr. § 404.
W. Son (of) the king. (Mab y brenin.) }

Eng. A king's crown,—the crown of a king. } Gr. § 405.
W. Crown (of) a king. (Coron brenin.) }

§ 147. **Whose** (*rel.*): yr hwn, &c. See *Exercises*, § 134.

“This is the farmer whose son is poorly.”

Dyma'r amaethwr mab yr hwn sydd yn glaf=*son of whom is poorly.*
Gr. § 876.

Dyma'r amaethwr yr hwn y mae ei fab yn glaf=(*as to*) *whom is his son poorly.* Gr. § 875.

Whose? (*interr.*): pwy? Gr. § 833. The genitive retains the *rad.* sound.

“Whose hammer is in your hand.”

Morthwyl pwy sydd yn eich llaw?=*hammer of whom is in your hand?*

§ 148. **Mine, thine, &c., Arthur's.** In Welsh, name the object referred to, or substitute *un* (one), *pl. rhai* (ones).

“Whose razor have you?” *ellyn pwy sydd genych?*

Yours. W. || *Your* razor,—|| *your* one. (Eich ellyn chwi,—eich un chwi.)

“Whose gloves are on the table?” *menyg pwy sydd ar y bwrdd?*

Myvanwy's. W. *Gloves of Myvanwy*,—ones of *Myvanwy*. (*Menyg Myfanwy*,—*rhai Myfanwy*.)

§ 149. **Eng. Of mine,—of Arthur's.** W. *To me*,—*to Arthur*. (*I mi*,—*i Arthur*.)

A nephew of mine, *nai i mi*. A friend of Arthur's, *cyfaill i Arthur*.

§ 150. **Have.** Read *Exercises*, § 113.

“Who has?” *Have* and *has*, headed by an interrogative, a relative, or an antithetical subject, will be expressed in Welsh in the following manner.

“Who has a hammer?”

Gan bwy y mae morthwyl?=*with whom is there a hammer?*

“I [it is I who] have a hammer.” “I have not a hammer.”

Genyf fi y mae morthwyl=*with me there is a hammer.*

Nid genyf fi y mae morthwyl=*not with me is there a hammer.*

“This is the carpenter who has hammers.”

Dyma'r saer gan yr hwn y mae morthwylion=*with whom there are hammers.*

Dyma'r saer gan yr hwn nid oes morthwylion (*negative*).

Dyma'r saer yr hwn y mae morthwylion ganddo, } =*whom there are ham-*
Dyma'r saer yr hwn y mae ganddo forthwylion, } *mers with him.* Gr. § 865.

Dyma'r saer yr hwn nid oes morthwylion ganddo, } (*negative*).

Dyma'r saer yr hwn nid oes ganddo forthwylion, }

This construction is also expressed quite as often by “*sydd a...gan—*,” or (omitting *a*) “*sydd gan—*,” and in nega-

tions by “*sydd heb gan—*”¹ [“*A...gan*” and “*heb gan*” are participles = *having*, and *not having*: so that the construction may be explained by (*e.g.*) “*who is having?*” “*who is not (or without) having?*”]

Who has a hammer? *pwyl sydd a morthwyl ganddo?—pwyl sydd ganddo forthwyl?*

Who has not a hammer? *pwyl sydd heb forthwyl (ganddo),—pwyl sydd heb ganddo forthwyl?*

This is the carpenter who has hammers, *dyma'r saer sydd a morthwylion ganddo,—sydd ganddo forthwylion.*

This is the carpenter who has not hammers, *dyma'r saer sydd heb forthwylion (ganddo),—sydd heb ganddo forthwylion.*

§ 151. *Iddo*, to or for him. *Iddynt*, to or for them.
[Prelim. Remarks, § 24.]

§ 152. VOCABULARY.

Crown , coron, <i>pl.-au (f.)</i>	A hair , <i>blewyn, blewyn o wallt;</i> (S.W.) <i>gwälltyn (m.)</i>
Top , head, <i>pèn, pl.-au (m.)</i>	Steeple , <i>clòchdy (m.) Gr. § 130.</i>
Glove , <i>maneg, pl. menyg (f.)</i>	Liberal (<i>adj.</i>), <i>haelionus.</i>
Scythe , <i>pladur, pl.-iau (f.)</i>	Clean (<i>adj.</i>), <i>glân.</i>
Razor , <i>ellyn, pl.-od (f.)</i>	Dirty (<i>adj.</i>), <i>bùdr, pl.-on.</i>
Hammer , <i>mòrthwyl, pl.-ion (m.)</i>	Single (<i>e.g.</i> , a single hair), <i>yr un.</i>
Carpenter , <i>saer, pl. seiri (m.)</i>	To live , <i>bÿw.</i>
Gardener , <i>gàrddwr (m.) Gr. § 130.</i>	To hide , <i>cùddio.</i>
Neighbour , <i>cymmydog, pl.-ion (m.); cymmydoges, pl.-au (f.)</i>	To climb , <i>dringo.</i>
Nephew , <i>nài, pl. nèioedd (m.)</i>	To look (at) , <i>èdrych (ar).</i>
Niece , <i>nith, pl.-oedd (f.)</i>	Whose (<i>rel. and interr.</i>) See above.
Face , <i>gwyneb, pl.-au (m.)</i>	Mine, Arthur's. [See above.]
Hair (of the head), <i>gwallt (m.)</i>	For, to, i.

§ 153. MODEL FORMS.

Whose razor is on the table?	<i>Ellyn pwyl sydd ar y bwrdd? Eich ellyn [un] chwi.</i>
Yours.	
She has my gloves, not yours.	<i>Fy menyg i sydd ganddi, nid eich menyg [rhai] chwi.</i>
The gardener, whose daughter is in the kitchen, is poor.	<i>Y mae'r garddwr, yr hwn y mae ei ferch [merch yr hwn sydd] yn y gegin, yn dlawd.</i>
Why do you hide your sister's gloves?	<i>Pa ham yr ydych yn cuddiomenyg eich chwaer?</i>
Who has my razors?	<i>Gan bwy y mae fy ellynod?—pwyl sydd a fy ellynod i ganddo?</i>

¹ And also by the forms mentioned in *Exercises*, § 133.

Your nephew or niece has them.	Gan eich nai neu eich nith y maent.
Who has a pretty face? You have.	Gan bwy y mae gwyneb clws? Genych chwi (y mae). Pwy sydd ganddo wyneb clws? Chwychwi (sydd).
Whose ink has she? Iorwerth's.	Inc pwy sydd ganddi hi? Inc Iorwerth.
Is he a friend of yours?	A ydyw efe yn gyfaill i chwi?

§ 154. EXERCISES.

A.) Menyg pwy sydd ar y bwrdd? Fy menyg i.—Ai maneg eich nith sydd genych? Nage: maneg Myfanwy sydd genyf.—Pwy sydd yn byw yn y ty yma? Neioedd a nithoedd i mi sydd yn byw yma.—Onid ydyw'r garddwr yn gyfaill i'ch cymmydog? Ydyw, y mae'n gyfaill mawr iddo.—Gan bwy y mae pladur finiog? Genyf fi y mae un.—Pwy sydd ganddo forthwyl trwm [pwy sydd a morthwyl trwm ganddo]? Myfi.—Pa ham y maent yn edrych ar wynebau budron plant y garddwr?—Pa le y mae coron y frenines? Dyma hi.—Y mae fy nghymmydoges, yr hon y mae ei dwy ferch [dwy ferch yr hon sydd] yn cerdded gyda'r boneddigion acw, yn byw mewn ty clws iawn.—Y mae'r amaethwyr acw, y rhai y mae eu plant mor hoff o ddringo i ben creigiau uchel, yn gefndyr i ni.—Pladuriau gweision ein cymmydog sydd genym, nid eich pladuriau chwi.—Papur newydd pwy sydd genych? Eich un chwi neu un eich nai.—Pwy sydd ganddynt wynebau glan? Nyni.—Dyma'r eneth fach sydd ganddi wyneb glan a chlws.—Yr ydym yn edrych ar y ddau ddyn sydd heb ddim gwallt (ganddynt) ar eu penau.—Pwy sydd heb ddim gwallt (ganddo) ar ei ben? Nai fy nghymmydog.—Y mae genych chwi lawer o wallt ar eich pen; ond nid oes genyf fi yr un blewyn [gwallt-yn].—Nid oes gan y saer yr un ddimai ar ei helw.—Ar bwy y mae'r seiri yn edrych? Nid ydynt yn edrych ar neb.—Nid oes gan yr hen arddwr yr un blewyn o wallt ar ei ben.—Y mae rhai o honynt yn bur haelionus.—Dyma'r bobl sydd a digon o arian ganddynt.—Y mae'r boneddigesau ieuainc sydd yn marchogaeth y merlod duon acw, yn ferched boneddwyr cyfoethog a haelionus.—Y mae Myfanwy yn gyfnither iddynt.—I bwy yr ydych yn gwneyd y cadeiriau hyn? I ewythr y dyn ieuanc acw sy'n cerdded gyda'ch merch.—Gan bwy y mae gwyneb budr? Ganddi hi.—Pwy sydd yn hoff o ddringo i ben

clochdai?—Pa ham y mae hi yn cuddio maneg mab fy nghymydog?—Dyma'r seiri y rhai nid oes ganddynt forthwylion.

B.) Where is the young lady's black glove? Here it is.—Who has my sharp razor? **Your nephew** has it.—Who has my niece's gloves? **I** have them.—Your nephews are rich; but they are not liberal.—Whose children are on the top of the steeple? Ours.—Whose hammer has he? The carpenter's.—Has she **red hair**? No; she has **black hair**.—Has the carpenter **my hammer**? No; he has **not yours**,—he has **mine**.—The gentleman, whose three sons are at your school, is a cousin of mine.—The two little girls, whose brothers are climbing that (= *yonder*) dangerous rock, live in this village with their grandmother.—Who lives here? An old friend of ours.—Whose scythes have we? You have **ours, not theirs**.—Her grandfather has not a single hair on his head.—At whom are you looking? We are looking at the gardener's pretty little girl, who has an apple in her hand.—Why do the gardener's children hide their faces?—Their faces are so very dirty.—Whose hands are clean? Iorwerth's and Arthur's.—Who have clean faces? My neighbour's (*fem.*) nephews and nieces.—None of them are liberal people.—|| *Our* children are looking at the church; but yours are climbing to the top of the steeple.—That (= *there*) is my neighbour (*fem.*) whose daughters wear red stockings.—The shopkeeper, whose sons and daughters are now standing at that (= *yonder*) door, sells very good black cloth.—Does he see the two men who have no hair on their heads? Yes.—Whose scythe is out in the rain? My neighbour's, not mine.—He is a cousin of theirs.—Are you a neighbour of his? Yes.—Who has their black stockings? **You** have not them.—Who has not a scythe? This farmer's servant has not one.—Whose crown is in that (= *yonder*) gentleman's hands? The queen's.—Their nieces are very poor: they have not a single shilling in their possession.—Whose gloves has that (= *yonder*) man in his dirty hands? He has **not ours**,—he has **Myvanwy's**.—The old gentleman, whose horse my son has, is a very kind man.—The young lady, whose aunt is sitting in that (= *yonder*) chair, is a daughter of a rich and liberal man.—Are these the gardeners who have four spades? Yes; and those (= *there*) are the carpenters who

have four hammers.—My nephews are neighbours of theirs.—Where is the shoemaker who has not a single shoe in his shop? Here he is.—I am doing this work for him.—For whom are you making these new clothes? For these young men who have such poor clothes.—Why do you hide your servant's spade?—Who has these gentlemen's razors? We have not them.—Where are those (*o. of s.*) three men who have no hair on their heads? There (= *yonder*) they are.

CHAPTER XIV.

[*Sydd* and *yw*,—"ysgrifenwyr da *yw* eich plant,"—"ysgrifenwr da *ydyw* fi,"—*onide* and *aie*?]

Notes and References.

§ 155. "Arthur *sydd yn* fachgen da." "Arthur *yw y* bachgen da." If the predicate, following the verb, is definitive, *yw* (or *ydyw*) is used, not *sydd*. *Gr.* § 639 (3) *d.*

§ 156. When an indefinite noun, adjective, or verbal adjective, is the predicate, and is *antithetical*, it precedes the verb, and the verb must be *yw* (or *ydyw*).

Du¹—*ydyw*—*lliw ei wallt*=*black is the colour of his hair.*

Dyn *synwryol iawn*—*ydyw*—*ei hewythr*=*a very sensible man is her uncle.*


This construction is often met with in simple narration, instead of *mae* with its subject and predicate following. "Geneth *glws ydyw Myfanwy*" is often="Y *mae Myfanwy yn eneth glws.*"

§ 157. Whenever the predicate is definitive, *yw* (or *ydyw*) is the copula, and the subject or the predicate will precede it according to antithesis; i.e., the antithetical term, whether subject or predicate, must take the lead.

Pwy *yw eich meistres?* (*who is your mistress?*) *Myfanwy yw fy* *meistres*, **Myvanwy** *is my mistress.*

Pwy *yw Myfanwy?* (*who is Myvanwy?*) *Fy meistres yw Myfanwy*, **Myvanwy** *is my mistress.*

§ 158. In these cases the term to be negatived is the first, whether it is the subject or the predicate. [Order: particle

¹  When the predicate takes this position "yn apposition" is dismissed, as in the above examples.

(neg., hypoth., or interr.); subject or pred.; verb; subject or pred.] *Gr.* §§ 637, 639.

Nid efe ydyw'r ysgolaig goreu, **he is not the best scholar.**

§ 159. "Ysgrifenywyr rhagorol *yw eich* wyrion," *your grandsons are excellent writers.* *Gr.* § 642.

"Darllenwyr sal iawn *ydym ni*," *we are very poor readers.* When a pers. pron. is the subject, and *follows* the verb, the verb agrees with it in number and person.

Darllenwr sal *ydwyf (fi)*,—*ydwyt (ti)*,—*ydwy (efe)*.

Darllenwyr sal *ydym (ni)*,—*ydych (chwi)*,—*dynt (hwy)*.

§ 160. **Onide?** is it not? am I not? art thou not? &c.

Aie? is it? am I? art thou? &c.

These adverbs are put at the end (and sometimes in the middle) of sentences beginning with any part of speech *except a finite verb*,—*onide*, when the sentence is affirmative, and *aie* when the sentence begins with a negative particle. *Gr.* § 830.

Chwychwi sy'n bobl haelionus, *onide?* *it is you who are liberal people, is it not?*—**you** *are liberal people, are you not?*

Nid hwynt-hwy ydyw'r marchogwyr goreu, *aie?* **they are not the best riders, are they?**

[What takes the place of *onide*, when the sentence begins with a finite verb? *Gr.* § 830. What takes the place of *aie*? *Gr.* § 819. "Yr ydych chwi yn bobl haelionus, *onid ydych chwi?*" "Nid ydych chwi yn farchogwyr da, *a ydych chwi?*"]

Aie signifies also *is it so?* after a remark has been made; and it, either alone or with "yn wir," is used in the same way as the Eng. "*indeed?*"

He is an excellent reader. Darllenwr rhagorol yw efe.

Indeed? O, indeed?

Aie? aie yn wir? O, aie? O, aie yn wir?

§ 161. VOCABULARY.

Writer, ysgrifênwr¹ (*m.*)

Reader, darllênwr (*m.*)

Walker, cêrddwr (*m.*)

Rider, marchogwr (*m.*) [*raith (m.)*]

Father-in-law, *tad-yng-nghyf-

Mother-in-law, mam-yng-nghyf-

raith (*f.*)

Son-in-law, mab-yng-nghyfraith
(*m.*) [*nghyfraith (f.)*]

Daughter-in-law, merch-yng-

Brother-in-law, brawd-yng-nghyfraith (*m.*)

Sister-in-law, chwaer-yng-nghyfraith (*f.*)

¹ The student must henceforth supply the plural of "compound nouns formed regularly." *Read Gr.* § 130.

Grandson, <i>wyr</i> , <i>pl. wŷrion (m.)</i>	O (<i>interj.</i>), O (<i>md.</i>)
Grand-daughter, <i>wyres</i> , <i>pl. wŷrion</i>	Indeed, <i>yn wir</i> .
Colour, <i>lliw</i> , <i>pl.-iau (m.)</i>	Indeed? <i>aie? aie yn wir? yn wir?</i>
Excellent, <i>rhagorol</i> .	Is it not? &c. [See above, § 159.]
Tall, <i>tâl</i> ; <i>super. tâlaf</i> .	Is it? &c. [See above, § 159.]
Best, <i>goreu</i> .	

§ 162. EXERCISES.

A.) Pwy ydyw'r gwr ieuanc acw sy'n cerdded gyda'r ysgol feistr? Fy mrawd-yng-nghyfraith i ydyw efe.—Pwy ydych chwi? Wyr y gwr boneddig acw ydwyf.—Ysgrifenwyr a darllenwyr rhagorol ydyw brodyr-yng-nghyfraith eich cymmydog.—Du, onide, ydyw lliw ei cheffyl? Nage, glas ydyw.—Chwiorydd-yng-nghyfraith y masnachwr sy'n byw yn y ty hardd yma, ydyw'r merched ieuainc hyn, onide? Ië.—Nid doeth ydyw ei eiriau, aie? Nage, yn wir.—Ai eich wyres chwi ydyw'r eneth ieuanc acw sy'n sefyll wrth ddrws yr Eglwys? Nage; nith fy nghymmydoges ydyw hi.—Nid defaid eich tad-yng-nghyfraith sy'n pori yn y cacau hyn, aie? Nage: fy nefaid i ydynt.—Pwy wyt ti, a phwy yw'r bachgen yma? Wyr garddwr y foneddiges acw ydwyf fi, a nai y saer ydyw'r bachgen yma.—Eich wyrion chwi ydyw'r darllenwyr goreu yn yr ysgol, onide? Ië: hwynt-hwy (*coll. y nhw*) ydyw'r darllenwyr a'r ysgrifenwyr goreu.—Dyma ferlyn fy mam-yng-nghyfraith, a dacw un fy nhad-yng-nghyfraith. O, aie yn wir?—Nid nyni ydyw'r bechgyn talaf, aie? Nage: yr ydych chwi yn bur dal; ond Iorwerth ac Arthur ydyw'r bechgyn talaf.—Dyma fy nwy ferch-yng-nghyfraith. O, aie yn wir?—Os chwyechwi yw'r marchogwyr goreu, nyni ydyw'r cerddwyr goreu.—Cerddwr sal iawn ydych chwi; ond y mae eich dau frawd-yng-nghyfraith yn gerddwyr rhagorol.—O fy anwyl gyfaill, ai chwyechwi sydd yma? Ië, myfi sydd yma.—Ceffyl pwy ydyw'r ceffyl hardd acw? Ceffyl fy merch-yng-nghyfraith ydyw. O, aie yn wir?—Eich brodyr-yng-nghyfraith ydyw'r marchogwyr goreu.—Pwy ydych chwi? Meibion-yng-nghyfraith y gwr acw sy'n marchogaeth yn y ffordd.—Marchogwyr rhagorol ydych chwi a'ch tri mab-yng-nghyfraith.—Nid y ferch ieuanc acw ydyw fy wyres i: dyma fy wyres i.—Ai y foneddiges acw sy'n cerdded ar hyd y ffordd ydyw eich mam-yng-nghyfraith? Ië.—Ai eich tad-yng-nghyfraith ydyw'r gwr boneddig acw sy'n sefyll wrth ddrws yr ystabl? Ië.—Ellyn

finiog eich mab-yng-nghyfraith sydd genych, onide? Nage, nid ei ellyn ef, ond ellyn fy nghymmydog sydd genyf.—Nid glas, aie, ydyw lliw eich merlyn newydd? Nage: du ydyw ei liw.—Pwy ydynt hwy? Wyrion cymmydog i mi ydynt.

B.) **You** are the best rider, and **your brother-in-law** is the best walker.—Who are they? They are || **your grandsons**.—Who are you? We are **the sons and daughters of poor parents**.—Is this handsome young lady **your grand-daughter**? Yes.—Is **this gentleman** [is it this gentleman who is] your brother-in-law? No: **that** (= *yonder*) gentleman is my brother-in-law.—Those two young men, who are walking with your two servant-women, are **your father-in-law's servants**, are they not? Yes, they are || **his servants**.—The colour of his hair is **black**, is it not? Yes.—These sharp scythes are **not yours**, are they? No, they are **not ours**,—they are **our uncle's**.—Your sons-in-law are **tall men**, are they not? Yes.—We are not the best readers,—**you** are the best readers and writers.—**That** (= *yonder*) **short old man** is not my father-in-law: my father-in-law is a **very tall man**.—Who are these young ladies? They are **that** (*near*) **old lady's grand-daughters**. Indeed?—Who are his son-in-law's best friends? We are not his friends,—|| **your grandsons** are his best friends.—She has **your sister-in-law's pony**, not yours. O, indeed?—Are you good riders? No, indeed, we are not; but our cousins are excellent riders.—**He** is the best writer, is he not? Yes; but **I** am the best reader.—Are **you** their masters? No: they are || **our** masters.—You are **not the master of this school**, are you? No; I am **the master of a small school in another town**.—Whose grand-daughters are you? We are **the grand-daughters of the tall old gentleman who is in the other room**.—His grandsons are good scholars, are they not? Yes, indeed, they are excellent scholars.—O my dear friend, why are you so idle?—**You** are not the carpenter's brother-in-law, are you? No; **that** (*near*) **man** is his brother-in-law.—You are **not the gardener's sister-in-law**, are you? No; I am **that** (= *yonder*) **farmer's sister-in-law**.—Whose daughters are these handsome young women? They are **the daughters of a neighbour of yours**.—If we are the best walkers, they are the best riders.—**Our grandson** is the tallest boy in school,

is he not? Yes, **he** is the tallest boy; but **he** is not the best reader and writer.—Is the colour of your stockings **black**? No, it is **red**.—None of us are fond of yellow colours.—Who are we? You are **the nephews and nieces of a dear friend of mine**.

CHAPTER XV.

[Interrogatives: what? which? what! what a—? what sort of? how much? how many? one, *pl.* ones,—“how many have?”—the suffix *aid.*]

Notes and References.

§ 163. Interrogatives.

What? which? (*adj.*): *pa?* *coll.* *pwyl?* (*md.*)

What books are there here? *Pa* [*pwyl*] *lyfran* *sydd* *yma?*

Which hammer have you? *Pa* *forthwyl* *sydd* *genych* *chwi?*

What? (*n.*): (*pa*¹) *beth?* **What!:** (*pa*) *beth!*

What? (= *how much?*): (*pa*) *faint?* *beth?*

What has he in his pocket? (*Pa*) *beth* *sydd* *ganddo* *yn* *ei* *logell?*

What! are you disobedient? (*Pa*) *beth!* *a* *ydych* *chwi* *yu* *an-*
ufudd?

What is your age? (*Pa*) *faint* [*beth*] *ydyw* *eich* *oed?*

What a—! (*pl. what—!*): *y* *fath—!* (*md.*)

What a wonder! *Y* *fath* *ryfeddod!*

What great scholars! *Y* *fath* *ysgoleigion* *mawr!*

What sort (or kind) of?: *pa* *fath?* (*md.*)

What sort of a man is he? *Pa* *fath* *ddyn* *ydyw* *efe?*

Which (*n.*): *pa* *un?* *coll.* *p'un* and *p'run?* (*sing.*); *pa* *rai?*
coll. *p'rai?* (*pl.*): *pwyl*² (*sing.* and *pl.*)

Which is yellow? Which are green? *Pa* *un* *sy'n* *felyn?* *Pa* *rai* *sy'n*
wyrddion?

Which of you is a poor walker? *Pa* *un* [*pwyl*] *o* *hono*
ch *sy'n* *gerdd-*
wr *sal?*

Which of them are the best riders? *Pa* *rai* [*pwyl*] *o* *honynt* *ydyw'r*
marchogwyr *goreu?*

How much? (*n.*): (*pa*) *faint?* **How much? (*adj.*):** (*pa*)
faint *o?*

¹ *Pa* is often omitted: “*pa beth*” or “*beth*”; “*pa faint*” or “*faint*”; “*pa sawl*” or “*sawl*?”

² *Pwyl* of persons only; *pa un* and *pa rai* of persons or things.

- How much has her grand- Pa faint sydd gan ei hwyres?
daughter?
How much corn is there in that Pa faint o yd sydd yn y sach yna?
sack?
How much of the blue paper is Pa faint o'r papur glas sydd ar y
there on the table. bwrdd?
- How many?** (*n.*): (pa) sawl un? (pa) faint? **How many?**
(*adj.*): pa sawl (followed by sing.: *rd.*); pa faint o?
- How many have we? Pa sawl un [pa faint] sydd genym?
How many pins has she? Pa sawl pin [pa faint o binau] sydd
ganddi?

§ 164. **One**, pl. **ones**: un *pl.* rhai (followed by the adjective).

There is a black one here, *y mae yma un du (f. un ddu).*

Have you black ones? *a oes genych chiw rai duon?*

We have three black ones, *y mae genym ni dri (f. dair) o rai duon.*
Exercises, § 145.

§ 165. "How many have gold?" *gan ba faint y mae aur?*
—pa faint sydd ag aur ganddynt?—pa faint sydd ganddynt
aur? [Read *Ex. § 150.*]

§ 166. "A sack of corn." When the "full" of the object named is meant (a *sack* of corn = a *sackful* of corn), the suffix **-aid** (pl. **-eidiau**) should be appended to the Welsh word.

A sack of corn, *sachaid o yd.* A bottle of wine, *potelaid o win.*

A basket of apples, *basgedaid o afalau.* A cup of water, *crpanaid o ddwfr.*

☞ The gender of **-aid** depends on the noun to which it is suffixed.
Gr. § 145.

§ 167. VOCABULARY.

Smith , gôf, <i>pl.</i> -iaid (<i>m.</i>)	Needle , nòdwydd, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)
Trade , crèfft, <i>pl.</i> -iau (<i>f.</i>)	Pin , pin, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)
Tradesman , crèfftwr (<i>m.</i>)	Pound (<i>in money</i>), pùnt, <i>pl.</i> pùn- noedd, pùnnau (<i>f.</i>)
Name , enw, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)	Sovereign , penadur, <i>pl.</i> -on (<i>m.</i>), sòfren, <i>pl.</i> sòfrod (<i>f.</i>) <i>Gr. § 127.</i>
Age , òed, òedran (<i>m.</i>) [and <i>f.</i>]	Fellow —(e.g., <i>fellow-servant</i>), cyd- (<i>cyd-was</i> : <i>md.</i>)
Wonder , rhyfeddod, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)	Empty , gwâg, <i>pl.</i> gwèigion.
News , newydd (<i>m.</i>), or newyddion	Full (of), llawn (o ³), (<i>pl.</i> -ion).
Value , gwèrth (<i>m.</i>) [(<i>pl.</i>)	Right (= <i>not left</i>), deheu, de.
Mile , milltir, <i>pl.</i> -oedd (<i>f.</i>)	Left , chwith, àswy.
Week , wÿthnos, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	
Corn , fÿd (<i>m.</i>)	
Sack , sâch, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	

³ *Llawn* often occurs without *o*, and is then followed by *rad.* *Yr*
ydwyf yn llawn geiriau, I am full of words.

One, *pl. ones*, un, *pl. rhai*.

Still; yet; again, &c.

What? &c. [See above.]

Hence, from here, oddi yma.

What is the distance to—? pa faint [beth] o ffordd sydd i⁴—?

How old are you? what is your age? pa faint [beth] ydyw eich oed?

§ 168. EXERCISES.

A.) Pa newyddion sydd genych? Nid oes genym ddim newyddion da.—Pa faint o arian sydd gan eich mam-yingnghyfraith? Y mae ganddi dair punt neu bedair.—Y mae gan yr amaethwr yma dair sachaid o yd rhagorol: pa faint sydd genych chwi? Nid oes genyf fi (nac) yd na sach. Pa faint o ffordd sydd oddi yma i'r Eglwys? Dwy filltir a thri chwarter.—Pa sawl diwrnod sydd mewn wythnos?—Pa faint o honynt sydd yn gweled gwerth ysgolion? Nid oes neb o honynt yn gweled dim gwerth mewn ysgolion.—Ar ba ddiwrnod y maent yn myned yno? Y maent yn myned yno heddyw.—Ym (*Gr.* § 97) mha gae y mae'r yd goreu? Yn y cae yna.—Y mae gan y gof dair sofren felen; ond nid oes gan y crydd yr un swllt ar ei helw.—Beth ydyw crefft neioedd y gofaiid hyn? Seiri ydynt.—A ydynt hwy yn grefftwyr da? Ydynt, y maent yn grefftwyr rhagorol.—Pa un ydyw eich troed deheu? Dyma fy nhroed deheu, a dyma fy nhroed chwith.—Pa rai o'r dynion yma ydyw'r gofaiid goreu? Nid oes yr un o honynt yn of da.—Pa faint [beth] o'r gloch ydyw hi? Y mae hi yn hanner awr wedi dau.—Pa fath grefftwr ydyw'r gof? Y mae efe yn grefftwr pur dda.—Pa beth! ai fy nodwyddau a'm pinau i sydd gan yr eneth? Nage, nodwyddau a phinau ei modryb sydd ganddi.—Pa sawl sach sy'n llawn o yd? Nid oes ond tair yn llawn: y mae'r sachau ereill yn weigion.—Y mae'r cryddion yn darllen papurau newyddion. Y fath ryfeddod!—Beth ydyw enw eich nith? Myfanwy ydyw ei henw.—Beth [pa faint] ydyw ei hoed?—Beth sydd ganddo yn ei law aswy? Dau benadur a thair ceiniog.—Gan ba sawl un [gan ba faint] o'ch cyd-weision y mae aur ac arian? Y mae gan rai o honynt lawer o bunnoedd.—Pa sawl un o honoch sydd ganddo yd ar werth? Nid oes gan yr un o honom yd ar werth.—Pa beth! a ydyw'r saer yma eto?—Pa rai o honoch sy'n myned yno eto?—Nid oes gan was yr amaethwr yr un bladur; ond y mae genym ni rai rhagorol.—Pa sawl buwch sydd gan

⁴ = how much [what] of road is there to—?

ein cymmydog? Y mae ganddo ddwy o rai duon a thair o rai cochion.—Pwy o honoch sy'n gwneyd ei ddyledswydd? Myfi.—Pwy o honom ydyw'r marchogwyr goreu? Chwychwi a'ch tri chefnider.

B.) How much corn is there here? There are only three sacks (*Ex.* § 166).—How many shillings are there in a pound?—What excellent horses they have!—What is the trade of that tall man who is standing at the stable door? He is a **smith**.—What has she in her right hand? She has a sovereign and a half sovereign.—What is the distance from here to your grandfather's house? Three miles and a quarter.—How many are here?—Which hat have you? I have **my old hat**.—What news have they to-day? They have no news. What a great wonder!—What o'clock is it? It is three o'clock, or a quarter past three.—What! are you here still? Yes, I am here still.—How many of them are coming here again?—Which of the two girls has my pins? **This girl** has them.—What sort of needles has the shopkeeper? He has very good needles.—What! are they not yet ready? No, they are not yet ready.—Which of you has the carpenter's heavy hammer? My grandson has it.—They have three grey horses and three or four black ones.—|| *My* brother has not a scythe: has || *your* brother one? Yes, he has a very sharp one.—Which sack is empty? This sack is not empty,—it is full of corn.—Where are the empty sacks? Here they are.—How old are his two children?—Which of them are the best walkers? The smith's two sons.—What sort of a man is your fellow-servant? He is a very industrious and careful man.—We are looking at a man who has neither hands nor feet.—Which is your right foot? This is my right foot, and this is my left hand.—What is the value of this large table? Four pounds.—What is the distance to the village from || *your* house, and what from here? The village is four miles from || *my* house, and two miles and a half from here.—What is your grandson's name? Iorwerth.—How many sacks of corn have || *you*, and how many has the other farmer? || *I* have four sacks, and my neighbour has two.—Whose pockets are full of sovereigns? Yours.—|| *You* have many pounds; but || *I* have not one.

C.) Pa un o'r amaethwyr sydd ag yd (ganddo) ar werth?—

Pa rai o'r crefftwyr hyn sy'n gweled gwerth mewn llyfrau?
 —Nid oes yr un o'honynt.—Pa sawl Duw sydd? Nid oes
 ond un Duw.—Pa sawl un sy'n barod i gychwyn? Nid oes yr
 un yn barod.—Y fath feibion a merched gofalus sydd genych!
 —Nid oes ganddo ef ddim yd: pa faint sydd genych chwi?
 Sachaid a hanner.—Pa le y mae'r sach wag? Dyma hi.—Pa
 beth! a ydych chwi ddim yn barod eto? Nac ydym, yn wir,
 nid ydym ni ddim yn barod eto.—Mewn pa fath le y mae efe
 yn gweithio?—Pwy o'honynt sy'n anufudd i'w rhieni?—Pa
 rai o'r merched ieuainc sydd a nodwyddau a phinau ganddynt?
 —Y fath erddi mawr sydd genych!—Pa faint ydyw oed y
 foneddiges ieuanc acw sy'n eistedd wrth y tan?—Nid oes gan
 blant ein cymmydog ddim cyllyll; ond y mae gan ein plant
 ni ddwy neu dair o rai miniog iawn.—Gan bwy [gan ba un]
 o'honynt y mae fy sofrren i? Gan Myfanwy y mae hi.—Pa
 sawl un [pa faint] o'r gwartheg sydd yn y beudy?—Pa un
 ydyw y llaw aswy [chwith]?—Pa ham nad ydych yn ysgrif-
 enu â'ch llaw dde?—Pa gareg sy'n drom? Y gareg yma.

D.) At which door is the smith standing? At this door.—
 Which of them has such long feet? That (*near*) man who is
 reading a newspaper.—How much has her neighbour (*fem.*)?
 —How many have needles and pins?—What news is there
 from the town? Very good news.—What is their objection?
 They have no objection (whatever).—What! is he playing
 with the cats and dogs? Yes. What a wonder!—On how many
 of these trees are there pears? There are no pears on any of
 them.—In which field are the three servants working? In that
 (= *yonder*) field.—In what sort of a house does your grand-
 mother live? She lives in a very pretty house.—|| *You* have
 a very sharp scythe: what sort of one has your fellow-
 servant? He has not a sharp one.—My other fellow-servant
 has four excellent ones.—How many of these men are good
 tradesmen? None of them are good tradesmen.—What is your
 trade? I am a **carpenter**.—How many days are there in
 four weeks?—What is her name, and what is her age?—
 What sort of razors have you? Very good ones.—Who is
 coming this week? Two of our best friends.—Here is a black
 one (*m.*); and there (*near*) are three red ones.—These old
 books are of no value, are they? No, they are not.

CHAPTER XVI.

[Two pence a yard,—we both, both of us,—we three,—the rel. *ag*,—apposition,—*llath* and *llathen*,—compound prepositions.

Notes and References.

§ 169. Eng. A or an } before nouns of measure and
W. Y or yr (*the*) } weight, and of time.

Two pence a yard, *dw y geiniog y llath*. A shilling a pound, *swllt y pwys*.

§ 170. “We both,” &c.

We (us) both,—both of us : *ni ein dau* (*f. dwy*), = *we our two*.

You both,—both of you : *chwi eich dau* (*f. dwy*), = *you your too*.

They (them) both,—both of them : *hwy eu or ill dau* (*f. dwy*), = *they their two*.

Y naill a'r llall o honom (the one and the other of us), and *pob un o honom* (every one of us) are also used. “Both of them are coming,” *y mac'r naill a'r llall [y mae pob un] o honynt yn dyfod*.

“We three,” “we four,” &c., are expressed in the same way; *i.e.*, by putting a possessive pronoun before the numeral.

You three are good riders, *yr ydych chwi eich tri yn farchogwyr da*.

§ 171. “Pawb *ag* sydd yn chwervhin,” *all who laugh*. *Gr.* § 859.

172. Apposition, and words put in juxtaposition. *Gr.* §§ 420, 421.

Y mae'r llyfr gan Myfanwy, merch-yng-nghyfraith fy nghymmydog, Myfanwy, my neighbour's daughter-in-law, has the book.

Y mae ganddo ŵyn, defaid, a gwartheg, he has lambs, sheep, and cattle.

§ 173. Compound prepositions ending with a substantive. Government, *Gr.* § 373.

How used before personal pronouns. *Gr.* § 743. Form of the personal pronoun. [*Preliminary Remarks*, §§ 21, 22.]

Pa faint o honoch sydd yn erbyn y dyn? how many of you are against the man?

Yr ydym i gyd yn ei erbyn, we are all against him.

§ 174. VOCABULARY.

Linen (cloth), *llian*, *pl. lliciniau* (*m.*) **Yard** (*a measure*), *llâth*; *llathen* :¹
Silk, *sidan*, *pl. -au* (*m.*) *pl. llatheni* (*f.*)

¹ Use *llath* in “*y llath*,” *a* or *per yard*, and when a numeral, *pa*

Pound (<i>in weight</i>), pŵys, <i>pl.</i> -i (<i>m.</i>)	Several, àmryw (before noun: <i>md.</i> †)
Weight (<i>heaviness</i>), pŵysau (<i>pl.</i>)	Every, each (<i>adj.</i>), pòb (before sing. noun: <i>rd.</i>)
Weights, pŵysau (<i>pl.</i>)	Every one, each (<i>noun</i>), pob un.
Weight, consequence, pŵys (<i>m.</i>)	All (= <i>every thing</i>), pob peth.
Measure, mèsur, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)	All (<i>persons</i>), pawb.
To measure, mèsur.	All of us, pawb o honom.
To weigh, pŵyso.	All (<i>in apposition to subject or object</i> : we or us all), i gŷd, òll.
To give, rhoddi, rhòl.	Both (<i>conj.</i>), no equivalent. ²
To earn, ennill.	Both (= <i>the two</i>), y ddau (<i>f. y ddŵy</i>); y naill a'r llall; pob un.
To buy, prynu.	
To laugh (<i>at</i>), chwèrthin (<i>àm bèn.</i>)	
Who (<i>rel.</i>), ag.	

Compound Prepositions ending with a Substantive.

At; at me, am ben; am fy mhen (i).³

Against; against me, yn èrbyn; yn fy erbyn (i).

On account of; on my account, o achos; o'm hachos (i) or o fy⁴ achos (i).

§ 175. EXERCISES.

A.) Pa faint y pwys ydyw'r ymenyn? Swllt y pwys.—Pa sawl pwys o fel sydd genych? Y mae genyf fi amryw bwysi; ond nid oes gan fy nghymydoges yr un.—Pa faint y llath ydyw'r llian gwyn yma? Pedwar a chwech y llath ydyw.—Nid oes gan y siopwr ond dwy lath o'r sidan melyn: ond y mae ganddo amryw latheni o'r sidan du.—Pa le y mae'r genethod ereill? Y mae amryw o honynt yn yr ardd yn darllen.—A ydyw pob peth yn iawn? Ydyw.—Yr ydym yn mesur pob llathen o'r llian, ac yn pŵyso pob pŵys o'r ymenyn.—Y mae pob un o feibion y saer yn ennill punt (yn) yr wythnos.—Nid oes neb o honom ni yn ennill punt mewn tair wythnos.—Beth ydyw pŵysau yr haiarn trwm yma? Y mae yn pŵyso pedwar pŵys a hanner.—A ydych chiwi i gyd yn rhoddi mesur da? Ydym, yr ydym ni i gyd bob amser yn rhoddi mesur a phŵysau da.—Nid oes gan y siopwr hwnw ddim pŵysau na mesurau yn ei siop.—A ydyw'r peth o bŵys mawr? Nac ydyw, nid ydyw o ddim pŵys yn y byd.—Y mae'r ysgol

sawl, *chwarter*, or *hanner*, immediately precedes: *tair* llath; *pa sawl* llath? *chwarter* llath; *hanner* llath. "Un" is followed by *llathen* (sometimes by *llath*). In other cases use *llathen*, *pl. llatheni*: *llathen* dda; *llathen* a hanner.

² *Crystal* or *yn gystal* (as well) is sometimes found. "Yn gystal da a drwg," both good and bad. But "da a drwg" is better Welsh.

³ = round or on my head.

⁴ See Ex. § 68, foot-note 3.

feistr yn edrych ar bob un o honoch.—A ydyw pawb o honoch yn chwervthin am fy mhen? Nac ydyw, nid ydyw pawb o honom yn chwervthin am eich pen; ond y mae amryw.—Pa ham y maent oll mor drist? O'ch achos chwi,—yr ydych yn blant mor anufudd.—Pa faint sydd ganddi hi o'r sidan glas? Nid oes ganddi ond chwarter llath o hono.—Pa ham yr ydych i gyd yn myned yn erbyn y dynion? Nid ydym i gyd yn eu herbyn; ond y mae rhai o honom.—Pa un o honoch sy'n ysgrifenywr da? Yr ydym ni ein dau [y mae'r naill a'r llall o honom,—y mae pob un o honom] yn ysgrifenywyr da.—Yr ydwyf am roi'r llyfr yma i Iorwerth, cyfaill fy mhlant.

B.) All is not right.—He sees every thing.—They are not all industrious,—several of them are idle.—What a yard is this green silk? It is only four and three pence a yard.—We have only one yard of this blue silk; but we have three or four yards of that white linen.—(THE) cheese is a shilling a pound, and (THE) butter is two shillings a pound.—Who earns three shillings a day? That (*near*) young man, the gardener's son.—These women have several pounds of cheese; but the smith's wife has only one.—What is the weight of this fish? It weighs three pounds and a quarter.—Several of the shopkeepers in this town give good weight and measure.—Do all of them give good measure? Yes, always.—Have you weights and measures? Yes, we all have.—Are they weighing the cheese? No,—they have no weights.—The thing is of no consequence.—What are the weights of these two books? Each weighs two pounds and three quarters.—You are all laughing at the tailor's sons. No, indeed; we are all laughing at **|| you**.—Why are you all against me? We are not all against you; but several of us are.—The gardener is unhappy on account of his children,—they are so idle and disobedient.—All of us are kind to poor people.—Are all (OF) these children naughty? No, they are not all naughty; but several of them are.—They are all buying butter and cheese.—We are looking at every one of them.—Each of us has a pound of butter and a yard and a half of white linen.—She is going to buy three or four yards of that (*o. of s.*) blue silk.—How many yards have you? We have only a yard and three quarters.—Each of us earns two pounds a week.—Are you all measuring the cloth? Yes.

C.) A ydyw'r ddwy foneddiges yn ein herbryn? Ydynt.—Y mae'r ddau yn chwervthin am ei phen, onid ydynt? Ydynt.—Pa beth! a ydych chiwi eich tri yma? Ydym, yr ydym ein tri yma.—Y mae'r llyfrau ereill gan eich brawd Arthur.—Y mae pawb (ag) sy'n byw yn y wlad hono yn bobl ddedwydd.—Dyma'r unig lathen o sidan coch (ag) sydd gan y masnachwr.—Y mae ganddynt oll ymenyn, caws, a mel.—Y maent ill [eu] dau yn annedwydd o achos eu meibion.—Y mae gan fy ŵyr Iorwerth afalau, rhwynyn, ac eirin.—Dyma'r fuwch oreu (ag) sydd yn y cae.—A ydynt hwy eu [ill] dwy yn eich erbyn? Ydynt, y maent eu [ill] dwy yn ein herbryn.—Y mae'r naill a'r llall yn glws.—A ydyw'r brethyn a'r lliau yn dda? Ydynt, y mae pob un yn dda iawn.—Yr ydym ni ein dau yn llawen o'u hachos hwy.—A ydych chiwi eich pedair yn myned gyda'ch modryboedd? Ydym.—Y mae digon o win ym mhob potel.—Y mae Arthur a Myfanwy, cefnder a chyfnither y plant yma, yn darllen ac yn ysgrifenu yn rhagorol.—Y mae gan bob un [y naill a'r llall] o honynt ddigon o aur ac arian.—Y mae hi yn chwervthin am ein pen ni ein dau.

D.) Your cousin Myvanwy has plenty of needles, pins, and paper.—Both are excellent readers.—I give a penny every day (*Gr.* § 454) to each of these good boys.—We are selling every thing we have.—Both (*f.*) are buying new hats.—These men work hard both day and night.—Both children laugh at the farmer's servant.—Are all, who are good scholars, good people? No.—Are you four going to the town? Yes, we are.—All of you have good children, industrious servants, and kind neighbours,—why are you so unhappy? We are unhappy on your account,—you are such an idle man.—Is every boy who goes to school, a good scholar? No.—These are the best silks that he has in his shop.—|| *We* both are ready: are || *they* both ready? Yes, they are.—He is both rich and liberal.—Why do you write such unkind letters against them? —Are his words of great consequence? No, they are of no consequence.—Why are they both measuring the garden?—Both he and his sisters are tall and handsome.—Both of us (*f.*) have very kind masters.—Are they both in? Yes.—This is the only yard of linen I have.—There are chairs, beds, and tables in every room.—She gives three pounds and a half of

cheese to each.—Where are you three (*f.*) going?—We are all going there (*o. of s.*) on her account.—They laugh at you both, and they intend to write against you.—My brother Arthur has them all.—These young women, your gardener's daughters, are buying new clothes.

CHAPTER XVII.

[Comparison of adjectives,—position,—government,—*yn* not before *mor* and *cyn*,—"gwraig *fwy* diwyd," "gwraig *mor* ddiwyd,"—as, so, how,—"*pa mor* aml?"—how deep,—*wyned*!—most,—*y rhai gorcu*,—the wiser,—partitive gen.,—adverbs of quality,—*ym mhell*,—*siarad* and *Uefaru*,—than I,—than my,—irreg. adjectives.]

Notes and References.

§ 176. Comparison of adjectives. *Gr.* §§ 170–174, and notes.

What suffixes are added to the adjective? What adverbs correspond to *as* or *so*,—*more*, *less*,—*most*, *least*?

The comparison made by suffixes may be called the "inflected comparison," and that made by placing *mor*, *mwy*, &c., before the positive, the "periphrastic comparison."

All adjectives may not be compared by inflection; but almost all regular adjectives *may* be compared periphrastically: therefore, if you are uncertain whether a given adjective is compared by inflection, use the periphrastic.

Inflected.

Doeth, *cyn* ddoethed, *mor* ddoeth, doethach, doethaf.

Compare *call*,—*cryf*,—*pell*,—*eghur*,—*ffol*,—*sal*,—*hardd*.

Periphrastic.

Cysurus, *mor* gysurus, *mwy* cysurus, *mwyaf* cysurus.

Compare *gofalus*,—*ufudd*,—*diwyd*,—*miniog*,—*peryglus*.

§ 177. Position. *Gr.* § 471. General rule:—adjectives of the equal and comparative degrees *follow* or *precede*: superlatives *follow*: periphrastic forms *follow*.

Cyn ddoethed gwr, } *as wise a man.* Doethach gwr, } *a wiser man.*
Gwr cyn ddoethed, } *as wise a man.* Gwr doethach, } *a wiser man.*

Y gwr doethaf, *the wisest man.*

Mab mor ofalus, *as careful a son.* Y mab mwyaf gofalus, *the most careful son.*
 Mab mwy gofalus, *a more careful son.*

§ 178. **Government.** *Gr.* § 473.

Cyn gryfed dyn, *as strong a man.* Cryfach dyn, *a stronger man.*

§ 179. “Yn apposition” and “yn adverbial” are not to be used before *mor* and *cyn*.

Mae Iorwerth cyn ddoethed (*or mor ddoeth*) ag Arthur.

Mae'r mab yn siarad cyn galled (*or mor gall*) a'r tad.

§ 180. “Ystafell fwy cysurus,” *a more comfortable room.*
 § *Gr.* 474 (a).

But *mor* and *cyn* retain the *rad.*, even after a *fem. sing.* “Ystafell mor gysurus.” “Gwraig cyn galled.”

§ 181. **As, so, how.** Read *Gr.* §§ 481–484.

a.) But when “how,” followed by an adjective or an adverb, introduces a question, direct or indirect (e.g. “How white is the snow?” “I do not know how white the snow is”—not marking admiration, as in “How white the snow is!”) it is usually rendered by *pa mor* or *pa cyn*.

Pa cyn gryfed [pa mor gryf] yw'r llew? *how strong is the lion?*

Pa mor aml [pa cyn amled] yr ydych yn myned? *how often do you go?*

b.) “How,” followed by an adjective denoting *size, measure, &c.* (e.g. *how deep is the river?*) is rendered either by *pa cyn*, *pa mor*, as above; or (perhaps oftener) by *beth* or *pa faint* with a substantive (= *what is the depth of the river?*). [Exemplified in *Ch. xx.*]

§ 182. “Lased yw'r coed!” *how green the trees are!*
 [Not *glased.*] *Gr.* § 888 (b).

§ 183. *Most*, indefinite super. (e.g. *a most liberal man*): *iawn*, *dros ben*, and sometimes *o'r* with a super. adjective.

He is a most learned man, *y mae efe yn ddyn dysgedig iawn: yn ddyn dysgedig dros ben: yn ddyn o'r dysgedicaf.*

§ 184. “Y rhai goreu,” = *the best ones.* *Y rhai* (the ones) is generally put before the super. adjective, when plural and unaccompanied by a noun. *Yr un* (the one) is sometimes found before the sing. super.

Nid ein gerddi ni ydyw'r rhai goreu, *our gardens are not the best.*

Eich gardd chwi ydyw'r oreu (*or yr un oreu*), *your garden is the best.*

§ 185. "He is the *wiser* of the two." *Gr.* § 485.

§ 186. "Y cryfaf o honoch," *the strongest of you.* [Partitive genitive.] *Gr.* § 444.

§ 187. **Adverbs of quality.** *Gr.* § 345. These adverbs are the same in form as adjectives having "yn apposition" before them: in fact, the same words are adjectives or adverbs according to the words qualified by them.

"A ydyw efe yn dda?" is he *good*? "A ydyw efe yn darllen yn dda?" does he read *well*?

They are also compared, like adjectives.

Yn ddoeth, cyn ddoethed, yn ddoethach, (yn) ddoethaf.
Wisely, as wisely, more wisely, most wisely.

Yn gysurus, mor gysurus, yn fwy cysurus, yn fwyaf cysurus.
Comfortably, as comfortably, more comfortably, most comfortably.

☞ "Yn" before the inflected superlative is oftener omitted than retained: *ddoethaf*, most wisely; *gallaf*, most sensibly. [Observe the *middle* sound.]

§ 188. VOCABULARY.

Excuse, èsgus, <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>m.</i> or <i>f.</i>)	Often, yn àml, yn fynych.
Learned, dysgedig.	As, so, how, mòr, cyn (<i>md.</i> <i>Gr.</i> § 691, <i>a.</i>)
Comfortable, cysurus.	How—? pa mor—? pa cyn—?
Far, distant, pell. ¹	As or so; as, cyn or mor...a (<i>asp.</i>),
Plain, clear, èglur.	That (<i>conj.</i>), fèl. [ag.]
To lose, còlli.	So...that, cyn or mor...fel.
To wonder (at), rhyfeddu (wrth).	Than, nâ (<i>asp.</i>), nag.
To know, gwybod.	More (<i>adv.</i>), mwy (<i>rd.</i>)
To talk (to), siarad (â or efo).	Less (<i>adv.</i>), llai (<i>rd.</i>)
To speak (to), siarad (â or efo); llefaru (wrth). ² [rhai.]	Most (<i>adv.</i>), mwyaf (<i>rd.</i>)
The one, <i>pl.</i> the ones, yr un, <i>pl.</i> y.	Least (<i>adv.</i>), lleiaf (<i>rd.</i>)
Far (<i>adv.</i>), ym mhell (or yn bell.)	A most. [See above.]

By far, much (*with comp.*), yn llawer (*rd.*); o lawer (*after the word*),

By far (*with super.*), o lawer, o ddigon (*after the word*).

Than I, &c., na mi or myfi; na thi or thydi; nag ef or efe,—na hi or hyhi, &c. [So "as I," &c.]

Than my, &c., na'm [na fy]; na'th [na dy]; na'i: *pl.* na'n, na'ch, na'u. [So "as my," &c.]

¹ "Yn apposition" and "yn adverbial" are generally, but not necessarily, followed by the nasal of *pell*. *Gr.* § 732 (*e*) (*b*). "Y mae efe ym mhell" or "yn bell." "Gweled ym mhell" or "yn bell."

² *Llefaru* is to speak = to discourse. "to hold forth."

Irregular adjectives. *Gr.* § 175.

<i>Pos.</i>	<i>Equal.</i>	<i>Comp.</i>	<i>Super.</i>
Da, <i>good</i> ,	cystal, cŷn gystal, mor dda,	gwell,	goreu.
Hen, <i>old</i> ,	cyn hyned, mor hen,	hŷn, hynach,	hynaf.
Ieuanc, <i>young</i> ,	cyn ieuenged, mor ieuanc,	iau, ieuengach,	ieuengaf

Give the Welsh for the adverbs *well, carefully, correctly*. [*Exercises, § 187.*]

§ 189. EXERCISES.

A.) A ydyw'r gwas mor ddysgedig a'i feistr? Nac ydyw. —Nid ydych chwi cyn gryfed ag ef.—A ydyw'r sidan yma cyn gystal a'r sidan acw? Ydyw,—y mae yn llawer gwell nag ef.—Y mae Myfanwy cyn llawened geneth [yn eneth cyn llawened] a neb yn y wlad.—A ydynt hŵy yn forwynion mor ofalus a'm [a fy] morwynion i? Ydynt,—y maent yn fŵy gofalus o lawer na'ch morwynion chwi.—Y mae gwraig y garddwr cyn daclused ac mor ddiwyd a neb o honynt.—Y maent yn ddoethach ac yn fŵy dysgedig na ni; ond nid ydynt cyn ddoethed ac mor ddysgedig a'n tad.—Pwy sydd yn gallach dyn [yn ddyn callach] nag ef? Ei ewythr.—Nid ydynt yn ddynion mŵy annedwydd na'u cymmydogion.—Pa un yw'r ieuengaf o'r ddau? Arthur ydyw'r ieuengaf o'r plant.—Pa un o'ch dwy nith ydyw y fwyaf gofalus [yr un fwyaf gofalus]? Yr hynaf.—Eich plant chwi ydyw'r rhai goreu a'r rhai mwyaf diwyd yn yr ysgol.—Efe ydyw'r dyn mwyaf dysgedig yn y dref, onide? Ië; a'i wyres ydyw'r foneddiges ieuanc brydferthaf yn y dref.—Dyma'r gyllell fwyaf miniog sydd genyf.—Goched ydyw'r rhosyn!—Mor ofalus ydych bob amser!—Efe ydyw'r marchogwr goreu o lawer [o ddigon].—Os ydych yn hŷn na myfi, nid ydych cyn hyned a'm brawd hynaf.—Nid ydym ni cyn gystal darllenwyr a chwi; ond yr ydym yn llawer gwell darllenwyr na'ch brawd ieuengaf.—Y mae hi yn iau o lawer na thi; ond nid ydyw cyn ieuenged a'th [a dy] chwaer.—A ydyw eich ty chwi mor gysurus a thy eich cymmydog?—Y mae ei hewythr yn haelionus dros ben [iawn].—Chwychwi ydyw'r lleiaf gofalus o bawb o honom.—Y mae eich merch hynaf yn llai gofalus na'ch merch ieuengaf.

B.) Is he a better farmer than his cousin? No,—**his cousin**

is the better farmer of the two.—She is not as young as you ; but she is younger than your two sisters.—This young man is as good a carpenter as his uncle ; and he is a much better carpenter than you.—**You** are the most tidy and the most careful of your four brothers.—These are the best horses I have : they are as good as any in country.—Your houses are much more comfortable than ours.—Which of them are the most learned ?—**You** are by far the strongest of us all.—This is the best one (*f.*) the farmer has.—We are as merry and as comfortable as any of them.—He is not as good a rider as I (*am*³) ; but he is a much better walker than I (*am*).—His niece is a most beautiful girl.—Is not your mother kinder than your aunt ? Yes, much kinder, and wiser also.—How beautiful this country is !—How silly we always are !—They are most merry girls.—My grand-daughter is older than you ; but she is not as old as your eldest sister.—Is **Myvanwy** your youngest daughter ? Yes.—If they are more sensible people than we (are), they are not richer.—She is as industrious a woman as any of you, and more industrious than some of you.—Who is the best ? **The gardener's son** is the best.—Are **they** the most untidy ? No, **they** are not the most untidy,—we are the most untidy.—You are in a most dangerous place.—If we are less tidy than their parents, we are more tidy than they (are).—**The eldest daughter** is the least careful of the children.—Which of these scythes is the sharpest ?—Of the two, **Myvanwy** is the more careful.—What is more precious than time ?—Your three sons are not older than my three daughters.—These are the best ones we have.

C.) Pa cyn dywyllled [pa mor dywyll] ydyw'r nos ?—Nid ydynt yn gwybod pa mor anufudd ydyw'r plant.—Yr ydych yn siarad mor ddoeth [cyn ddoethed] fel y mae pawb yn rhyfeddu.—Y maent yn ysgrifenu yn llawer gwell [yn well o lawer] na ni, ac yn darllen yn llawer cywirach [yn gywirach o lawer].—Pwy sy'n darllen oreu ? Mab yr ysgol feistr.—Nid ydyw eich ty ddim ym mhell oddi yma, a ydyw ? Nac ydyw.—Nid ydynt yn gweled ym mhell.—Yr ydych chwi yn gweled ym mhellach na hwy.—Hwynt-hwy sy'n gweled bellaf.—A ydyw efe yn llefaru yn dda ? Ydyw, yn wir, yn dda iawn.—

³ The verbs enclosed in parentheses are not, at present, to be translated.

Cyn belled ag y maent yn gweled.—Yr ydym yn rhyfeddu wrth eich brawd.—Y mae ein geiriau mor eglur fel nad oes ganddynt ddim esgus.—Dyma'r dynion sy'n siarad gallaf, ac yn gwneuthur eu dyledswydd yn fwyaf gofalus.—Y mae pawb o honynt yn gweithio eu goreu.—Nid oes neb o honoch yn gwybod pa cyn amlled [pa mor aml] yr ydym yn darllen y llyfrau hyn.—Mor synwyrol y mae hi yn siarad!—Pa un o'r tair geneth sydd yn darllen gywiraf ac yn ysgrifenu oreu?—Y mae hi mor dywyll [cyn dywyllled] fel nad ydym yn gweled dim yn y byd.—Pwy sy'n siarad â'r [efo'r] morwynion?—Pa mor fynych [pa cyn fynyched] y mae hi yn colli ei hamser?

D.) || *He* does not see as far as I (do); but || *you* see further.—The men are so careful that they lose nothing.—What is plainer? Nothing is plainer.—Do you wonder at the man? No.—Who reads most correctly? This gentleman's eldest daughter.—Do you see that distant hill? Yes.—You read as well as that learned man, and much better than we (do).—What is your excuse? I have no excuse,—your words are so plain.—The town is further from here than the village.—I do not know how often the children go to school.—How well they work!—Do you know how precious time is?—He always speaks (= *discourses*) well.—That gentleman is a most learned man.—We always do our best for them.—Why are you so fond of talking to the servants?—How often do they talk to those (*o. of s.*) gardeners?—He does not read as correctly as the other boy; but he reads much more correctly and writes much better than you.—**That** (= *yonder*) **young lady** rides best.—Who works best? || *Your* gardener's youngest son.—They are both tall girls; but **Myvanwy** is the taller of the two.—She always does her best for us.—How often does the gardener work in the garden? Very often.—They very often lose something or other.—I do not wonder at the shoemaker's son,—he is so very idle.—**This room** is by far the most comfortable.—Why are you taking the best (*pl.*)?—Is this knife sharper than the one you have? No, it is not.—**These** are the most comfortable houses in the town.—You are less careful than your youngest son.

CHAPTER XVIII.

[Demonstrative pronouns,—*hyn* and *hynj*,—*yr hyn*,—all,—“*yn rhy garedig*,”—comparison of adjectives,—irregular adjectives.]

Notes and References.

§ 190. Demonstrative pronouns used by themselves. Learn *Gr.* §§ 195–201.

Put the following sentences in the singular. “*Y rhai hyn ydyw'r tai mwyaf, a'r rhai acw ydyw'r gerddi lleiaf.*”—“*Nid y rhai yna yw fy esgidiau i.*”—“*Y rhai hynny ydyw'r marchogwyr goreu.*”—“*Ai y rhai yna ydyw llyfrau yr ysgol feistr?*”—“*Nid y rhai hynny yw ein cyfnitheroedd.*”

Give the coll. and contracted forms of “*y rhai hyn*,” and “*y rhai hynny.*”

§ 191. **Hyn**, *this*, **hynny**, *that*. *Gr.* § 549, with notes and examples.

§ 192. **Yr hyn** (rel.), *which; that which, what*. *Gr.* § 860.

§ 193. **All**.

All (= *the whole*): *y cwb*l (*m.*)

This is all, *dyma'r cwbl*.

All (*the —, my —, this —*): *holl* (*ml.*) before noun; *ôll* or *i gŷd*, after noun.

All the news, *yr holl newyddion*,—*y newyddion i gyd* (or *oll*).

All my money, *fy holl arian*,—*fy arian i gyd* (or *oll*).

All these stockings,—*yr holl hosanau hyn*,—*yr hosanau hyn i gyd* (or *oll*).

☞ All the men of the country, *holl ddynion y wlad*, &c. [Not “*yr holl ddynion*,” &c.] *Gr.* § 404.

All (*that*), rel.: *yr hyn ôll*, *y cwb*l. *All this*; *hyn ôll*, *hyn i gŷd*.

Is this all (that) you have? *Ai dyna y cwbl* [*yr hyn oll*] *sydd genych?*

All this is very pretty, *y mae hyn oll* (or *i gyd*) *yn glws iawn*.

§ 194. “*Y maent yn rhy garedig.*” “*Yr ydych yn siarad yn rhy ddysgedig.*” *Gr.* §§ 690–692.

§ 195. Comparison of adjectives. *Gr.* § 174, notes (a) and (b).

Rhâd,	cyn rhâted, mor rhâd.	rhâtach,	rhâtaf.
Trwm,	cyn drŷmed, mor drwm,	trŷmach,	trŷmaf.

Compare *drud*,—*diog*,—*gwag*,—*tlawd*,—*clws*.

§ 196. VOCABULARY.

To take, cymmeryd.	What, which. [See above.]
Goose, gŵydd, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	Demonstr. pronouns. [See above.]
Fat, tew, <i>pl.</i> -ion.	This-much, this, hÿn, hynyma.
Dear (= <i>costly</i>), drŷd.	That (<i>out of sight</i>), hÿny.
Cheap, rhâd.	A great deal or much (<i>adv.</i>), yn llawer, o lawer.
Loud, high, uchel.	Too (<i>noting excess</i>), rhy (<i>md.</i>)
All. [See above.]	

Irregular adjectives. *Gr.* § 175.

<i>Pos.</i>	<i>Equal.</i>	<i>Comp.</i>	<i>Super.</i>
Mawr, <i>large, big, great,</i>	cymmaint, cyn gym-maint, mor fawr,	mŵy,	mwyaf.
Bach, bychan, <i>small, little,</i>	cyn lleied, mor fach or fychan,	llai,	lleiaf.
Uchel, <i>high, loud,</i>	cyfuch, cyn uchel, mor uchel,	uwch,	uchaf.
Hir, <i>long,</i>	cyhyd, cyn hired, mor hir,	hŵy, hirach,	hwyaf, hiraf.

§ 197. EXERCISES.

A.) Pa un o'r ddwy ydyw'r hwyaf? Hon [honyma] ydyw'r hwyaf o lawer.—Hwnacw ydyw'r mynydd uchaf.—Y mae'r ŵydd yma yn dewach na hona [honyma].—Onid yw y rhai hyn yn llawer mŵy na'r rhai hyny?—Nid hwnyma ydyw'r lleiaf, aie? Nage, hwnyma ydyw'r lleiaf.—Mae hwn cyhyd [cyn hired] a hwnacw, os nad yw yn hŵy.—Os yw honyma yn rhy ddud, y mae honyma yn llawer rhy rad.—Mae rhai o'r plant yn rhy ieuainc, ac y mae rhai yn llawer rhy hen.—Y mae hÿn yn ddigon.—Yr wyf yn cymmeryd yr hyn sydd ar y bwrdd.—Dyma y cwbl [yr hyn oll] sydd gan y masnachwr.—Yr ydym yn deall hyn i gyd [oll].—Pa faint o fara sydd ar y bwrdd? Hÿn.—Nid oes genym ond hynyma o fel.—Y mae'r gwaith hwn yn cymmeryd fy holl amser.—Y mae'r holl wyddau hyn yn rhy dewion o lawer.—I ba le y mae'r holl weision yn myned? I ben y mynydd.—Os ydyw hwna yn hŵy na hwn, hwn ydyw'r trymaf a'r goreu o ddigon.—Mae ei ardd ef cyn gymmaint [mor fawr] a'ch cae chwi.—Y mae holl blant yr ysgol yn chwerrthin am ben eu meist, yr hyn nid yw yn beth iawn.—A oes genych chwi hoelion hŵy na'r rhai hyn? Nac oes.—Y mae'r morwynion yn siarad yn rhy uchel yn y gegin.—Pa faint o yd sydd gan y ffermwr? Dyma'r cwbl sydd

ganddo.—Y mae hon yn ferlen cyn glysed a merlen eich cyfnither.—Yr ydych mor ddiog fel y mae pawb yn rhyfeddu.—Nid ydym yn ddiocach na chwi.—Pwy ydyw hwnw?—Pwy ydyw y rhai acw? Dwy ferch y garddwr ydynt.—Hwnacw ydyw'r dyn tlotaf yn y dref.—Y mae'r eiren cyn gymmaint [mor fawr] a'r afal, os nad yw hi yn fwy.—Nid ydyw'r mynydd yma cyn uched a hwnacw.—Nid yw hyny ddim yn iawn.—Os ydyw hon yn rhy fechan, y mae hona yn rhy fawr o lawer.—Ai hynyna [hyna] yw'r cwbl sydd genych? Ië.—Y mae holl blant yr ysgol yn chwethin am ein pen.—A ydyw holl lyfrau eich ewythr genych? Nac ydynt; ond y mae genyf amryw o honynt.—Y mae hyn yn garedig iawn yn eich mab.—Y mae y rhai'n yn llawer llai na'r rhei'ny.

B.) This (*m.*) is a great deal too dear.—If these are too dear, those (= *there*) are a great deal too cheap.—Who is that (= *yonder* : *f.*)? The carpenter's youngest daughter.—That (*o. of s. : m.*) is not so long and so heavy as this (*m.*)—Is **that** (= *yonder*) the highest mountain in this country? No: **this** is the highest.—Is **this** (*f.*) the largest? No: **that** (= *there*) is the largest and the cheapest.—**This** is the fattest goose the farmer has.—These geese are much dearer than those (= *there*).—Who is talking too loud? **You** are talking too loud.—These are a great deal smaller than those (*o. of s.*)—Why do you take all? This is all I have of the green cloth.—You are doing what is not right.—Is not this right? No.—Is that (*o. of s.*) much?—Is **not this** the best thing?—We take what is on the table.—Is it this-much you have? Yes.—We are as poor as any of them, if not poorer.—All the fat geese are in the river.—We understand all those (*o. of s.*) words.—Where are all your nephews and nieces going? To the top of that (= *yonder*) mountain.—Some of those (*o. of s.*) are too dear, and many of them are a great deal too cheap.—All my uncle's houses are on sale.—This (*f.*) is not as long as that (= *there* : *f.*)—If it is not as long, it is much higher.—**Those** (= *there*) are the longest and largest.—This (*f.*) is as small as that (= *yonder* : *f.*), if not smaller.—If that (= *yonder* : *m.*) is not as high as this (*m.*), it is much longer.—This (*f.*) is a great deal too small.—**This** is the cheapest cloth the shopkeeper has.—**That** (= *there*) is all they have.—They laugh at their

friends, which is not right.—He knows and understands all this.—Are not those (*o. of s.*) much smaller than these? Yes.—That (*o. of s.*) is as cheap and as good a pony as any in the country.—These geese are as fat as those (= *there*), and much heavier.—How much has the woman? She has only this-much.—|| *Your* servants (*m.*) are a great deal too idle; but they are not as idle as || *our* servants.—Does he intend to take all this? Yes.—All my neighbour's sons and daughters are too fond of playing.—She has not all her aunt's needles; but she has many of them.—We are fond of all the school children.—Why do the women talk so loud? They don't talk as loud as you.—That (*o. of s.*) is not kind of (*W. = in*) our neighbour.—You are as big as your eldest brother, and much bigger than your cousin.—This is, indeed, too bad.

CHAPTER XIX.

[Conjunctive pers. pronouns, —emphatic possessive, —habit or custom —not...neither, &c., —“nid ydym ni na chwithau,” —“y bydd,” —“anaml y byddant,” —duration and point of time.]

Notes and References.

§ 198. **Conjunctive personal pronouns.** Give the different forms. *Ex.* §§ 18, 20–24.

The conjunctive pronoun includes the idea of *mutual relation*, or *contrast*; and its force may be expressed sometimes by *also* or *as well as*, and sometimes by *but*, *on the other hand*, added to the pers. pronoun.

It is employed in phrases and clauses of *like construction*; i.e. *where affirmatives are joined to affirmatives, and negatives to negatives.*

Arthur, and <i>you</i> , and <i>I</i> .	Arthur, a <i>chwithau</i> , a <i>minnau</i> .
Your cousin and <i>you</i> have time.	Y mae gan eich cefnder a <i>chwithau</i> amser.
They praise our sisters and <i>us</i> .	Y maent yn canmol ein chwiorydd a <i>ninnau</i> .
We don't blame either her mother or <i>her</i> .	Nid ym ni yn beio ei mam na <i>hithau</i> .
Neither you nor <i>I</i> are idle.	Nid ydych chiwi na <i>minnau</i> yn ddiog.
We are reading, and <i>they</i> are writing.	Yr ym ni yn darllen, ac y maent <i>hwythau</i> yn ysgrifenu.

Her parents are well, and <i>she</i> is <small>Welsh.</small>	Y mae ei rhieni yn iach, ac y mae <i>hithau</i> yn iach.
I don't laugh, neither does <i>he</i> play.	Nid wyf fi yn chwertthin, ac nid yw <i>yntau</i> yn chwareu.
Myfanwy is as pretty as <i>you</i> (are).	Y mae Myfanwy cyu dlysed a <i>chwithau</i> .
You are reading: [but or on the other hand] <i>I</i> am writing.	Yr ydych chi yn darllen: yr yd- wyf <i>finnau</i> yn ysgrifenu.

§ 199. **Emphatic possessive.** [Read *Ex.* § 64.] The conjunctive is used when *emphatic possessives* are joined together. Give the form of the conjunctive when thus employed. *Ex.* § 21.

<i>His</i> parish and <i>her</i> parish.	Ei blwyf ef a'i phlwyf <i>hithau</i> .
<i>My</i> gloves are as good as <i>your</i> gloves.	Mae fy menyg i cyn gystal a'ch menyg <i>chwithau</i> .

§ 200. **Habit or custom** (e.g. "I often go from home" = I am in the habit of going, &c.), *may* be expressed by the present tense ("yr wyf yn myned," &c.); but it is more idiomatically expressed by the future of *bod* with the present part. of the other verb.

<i>Sing.</i> Byddaf,—byddi,—bydd,	} yn myned, ¹ <i>I</i> go, &c.
<i>Pl.</i> Byddwn,—byddwch,—byddant,	

§ 201. **Not...neither** [neither...nor], *ni* (nid or nis)...ac *ni* (nid or nis) *before finite verbs.* When *neither* and *nor* of the latter clause are = *not* (or *nor*) *either*, "chwaith" may be added in Welsh. [Read *Ex.* § 88.]

We are not warm, neither are you cold.	Nid ym ni ddim yn gynnes, ac nid ydych chiwithau ddim yn oer.
We are not idle, neither are you [and you are not either].	Nid ym ni ddim yn ddiog, ac nid ydych chiwithau <i>chwaith</i> .

§ 202. "Nid *ydym ni* na chiwithau yn hoff o chwareu." *Gr.* § 577.

§ 203. "Pa mor fynych *y* bydd efe yn dyfod yma?" *Gr.* §§ 709, 712. *Y* governs the *rad*.

§ 204. "*Anaml y* byddant yn ymweled â ni," *it is seldom they visit us.* *Gr.* § 693.

¹ Exactly the same form exists in Irish. "In the Irish language there are forms called *Consuetudinal tenses*: as, *bidhim*, I am usually; *bhidhinn*, I used to be." (Professor Rushton's *Rules and Cautions*, § 352.) With *bidhim* cf. *byddaf*, I am usually; with *bhidhinn* cf. *byddwn*, I used to be.

§ 205. Duration and point of time. *Gr.* §§ 454, 740

Y maent yn bwriadu aros yma dair awr, or am dair awr, *they intend to remain here for three hours.*

Byddant yn dyfod yma bob mis, *they come here every month.*

§ 206. VOCABULARY.

Clergyman, offèiriad, <i>pl.</i> offèir-iaid (<i>m.</i>)	To prefer, bod yn well gan. ³
Medical man, doctor, meddyg, <i>pl.</i> -on (<i>m.</i>)	Once, ùnwaith.
Month, mis, <i>pl.</i> -oedd (<i>m.</i>)	Twice, dwywaith.
Lesson, gwèrs, <i>pl.</i> -i (<i>f.</i>)	Not, ni, } <i>Gr.</i> § 913, (<i>a.</i>)
Market, màrchnad, <i>pl.</i> -oedd (<i>f.</i>)	Not? oni? }
Clean, glân.	Ever, un amser.
Honest, gonest.	Never, ni...un amser or byth.
Dishonest, anonest. [gar (<i>i.</i>)	Sometimes, weithiau.
Willing (to), boddlon or ewyllÿs-	Away, ymaith, i ffwrdd.
To visit, ymweled â or âg.	Seldom, yn anaml, yn anfynych.
To praise, cànmol. [(ar).	Home (= to home), âdref.
To blame, find fault with, bêio	At home, gartref.
To stay, remain, aros.	From home, oddi cartref.
To wish, ewyllÿsio, bod am. ²	For (noting duration of time), am (<i>md.</i>)
I prefer...to, y mae yn well genyf...na or nag.	Not...neither, &c. [See above.]
Once a week, unwaith (yn) yr wythnos.	
Gyda mi (or <i>myfi</i>).	
Ymweled â mi (or â <i>myfi</i> .)	} <i>Prel. Remarks</i> , § 26.

§ 207. EXERCISES.

A.) Y mae efe a minnau yn ddynion gonest.—A ydyw dy frawd a thithau yn foddlon i aros gartref gyda ni? Ydym, yr ydym ein dau yn foddlon.—Nid ydwyf fi nac yntau yn ewyllÿsio gwneyd hyny.—A ydyw hithau hefyd am fyned ymaith [i ffwrdd]? Nac ydyw.—Y mae Iorwerth yn darllen cyn gywired ag yntau.—Bydd gwraig y meddyg a'm gwraig innau yn ymweled â'r bobl seilion ddwywaith bob wythnos.—Bydd fy ngweision i a'i weision yntau yn myned i'r farchnad unwaith bob dau fis.—Anaml y byddwn yn gweled y meddyg; ond bydd yr offeiriad yn ymweled â ni yn fynych iawn.—Call iawn y bydd efe yn siarad bob amser.—Y maent am aros oddi cartref (am) dair wythnos.—A fydd eich cymmydog yn marchogaeth weithiau i'r farchnad? Na fydd un amser [byth]:

² = to be for.

³ = to be better with.

y mae'n well ganddo gerdded na marchogaeth.—Y mae'r offeiriad yn canmol fy chwaer a minnau; ond y mae'n beio y plant ereill.—Y mae Myfanwy a chwithau yn dysgu gwersi hirion, ac yr ydym ninnau yn dysgu gwersi byrion.—Y mae yn well gan fy ngwraig i aros gartref; ac y mae'n well gan eich gwraig chwithau fyned oddi cartref.—Pa bryd y mae'r meddyg yn dyfod adref? Nid yw yn bwriadu dyfod adref am dri mis.—Nid oes gan eich brawd na chwithau ddwyllaw glan.—Ni byddwn ni ddim yn ymweled â hwy, ac ni byddant hwythau un amser yn ymweled â ninnau.—Pa mor aml y byddwch yn ymweled â'r ysgol? Byddaf yn ymweled â hi ddwywaith (yn) yr wythnos, ac weithiau yn amlach na hyny.—Nid ydynt yn gwybod pa mor anfynych y bydd hi yn dyfod adref.—Y maent hwy mor anonest a chwithau, ac yr ydych chiwthau mor anonest a hwythau.—Byddaf yn gweled rhai o honynt bob diwrnod marchnad.—Nid ydynt hwy yn bobl anonest, ac nid ydym ninnau chwaith.—Pa ham yr ydych chiwi a'ch cyfaill yn myned i ffwrdd mor fuan?—Ni bydd ein rhieni byth yn myned oddi cartref; ond byddwn ni yn myned weithiau.—Bydd y foneddiges yn canmol ei morwynion weithiau, oni bydd hi? Bydd, weithiau.—Y mae yn well genym ddwfr na gwin.—A fyddwch chiwi un amser yn canmol pobl anonest? Na byddaf, un amser.

B.) Do you ever go from home? No, never: I prefer staying at home.—|| *You* and || *I* have clean hands and faces.—Neither Arthur nor she are willing to do that (*o. of s.*)—Do || *you* also wish to go away? No (*sing.*)—His neighbour's children are as honest as you (are).—The medical man works as hard as he (does).—The clergyman of our parish visits us once a month, and sometimes oftener than that.—|| *We* blame their nephews, and || *you* blame their nieces.—My mother and I are often from home, but oftener at home.—|| *Our* children come home from school once a week; and || *their* children come home once a month.—It is seldom we find fault with your cousins (*f.*) or you.—It is very seldom we play with the school children: we prefer learning our lessons.—|| *He* and || *I* intend to remain here with the medical man for two or three months.—Our friends are not willing to do what is dishonest, neither are we.—|| *They* never visit us, neither do

|| *we* visit them.—|| *We* are not willing to do that (*o. of s.*), and || *they* are not either.—The clergyman of our parish never goes to the market: he prefers staying at home with his books and papers, his wife and children.—|| *Her* face is as clean as || *yours*.—We sometimes go with them to the town on a market day.—Do they prefer wine to water? Yes.—You do not know how seldom they visit us.—Do you ever go to the market? No, never.—My neighbour either rides or walks twice every week to the town.—How often does he learn his lesson well? Not often.—He wishes to remain here with us for two or three months.—Do the doctor's children ever learn their lessons well? No, never.—My friend is angry with || *my* brothers, and || *I* am angry with || *his* brothers.—How often do || *your* parents and || *her* parents go to the market? They go to the market every market day.—|| *They* are rich: || *we* are poor.—|| *They* are not honest people; but || *you* are.—|| *She* does not wish to remain at home, neither do || *I* wish to come home.—Why do || *you* and they wish to go away so soon?—We prefer these to those (= *there*).—We neither praise nor blame the medical men.—This farmer has many sacks of corn: || *I* have not a single sack.—Don't you sometimes praise idle and disobedient servants? No, never.—They often visit him, don't they? No: it is very seldom they visit him.

CHAPTER XX.

[Pers. pron. as object,—cardinal numerals,—“ten feet *high*,”—“five years *old*,”—I owe,—I want,—I am afraid,—distance of place, and measure,—“how deep is the river?”—*blynedd*, *blwydd*, *blwyddyn*,—“tall for his age,”—“what is the matter with you?”—two inches taller, taller by two inches.]

Pron. preposition.

Arnaf, on or upon *me*. Gr. § 378. Give the form of the pers. pron. *Prel. Remarks*, § 23.

Notes and References.

§ 208. Mae Iorwerth yn <i>fy</i> ngharu (i),	} Gr. § 600.
<i>Iorwerth loves me.</i>	
Mae Iorwerth yn <i>ei</i> hammheu (hi),	
<i>Iorwerth doubts her.</i>	

S. Yn fy ngharu (i) : yn dy garu (di) : yn ei garu (ef) ; yn ei charu (hi).
 Yn fy hammheu (i) : yn dy ammheu (di) : yn ei ammheu (ef) ; yn ei hammheu (hi).

Pl. Yn ein caru (ni) : yn eich caru (chwi) : yn eu caru (hwy or hwynt.)
 Yn ein hammheu (ni) : yn eich ammheu (chwi) : yn eu hammheu (hwy or hwynt).

⚡ Infinitives with vowel initials are aspirated after *ei* fem., *ein* and *eu*.
 Observe the form of the personal pronoun. *Prel. Remarks*, § 22 (a).

§ 209. **Cardinal numerals.** Government : *Gr.* §§ 492–495.

When is *deg* used? *Gr.* § 496.—What is peculiar about *blynedd*, *blwydd*, and *diwrnod*? *Gr.* § 497.—State the difference between *pump* and *pum* ; *chwech* and *chwe* ; *deg* and *deg* ; *cant* and *can*. *Gr.* § 499.

§ 210. **Extent of place or time.**

Eng. The room is ten feet *high*.

W. The room is ten feet *of height*. (Mae'r ystafell yn ddeg troedfedd o uchder.)

Eng. The boy is five years *old*.

W. The boy is five years *age*. (Mae'r bachgen yn bum mlwydd oed.¹)

§ 211. Eng. I owe. W. There is on me. (Y mae arnaf.)

I owe you a pound, *y mae arnaf bunt i chwi* (=I owe a pound to you.)
 I owe him nothing, *nid oes arnaf ddim iddo* (=I don't owe anything to him.)

What do we owe them? *beth sydd arnom ni iddynt?* (=what do we owe to them?)

§ 212. Eng. I want. W. There is on me want. (Y mae arnaf eisieu.)

Eng. I am afraid. W. There is on me fear. (Y mae arnaf ofn.)

The soldier wants a sword, *mae ar y milwr eisieu cleddyf*.

We are afraid of bulls, *mae arnom ofn teirw*.

"Eisieu cleddyf." "Ofn teirw." *Gr.* § 437.

☞ Observe the construction when a pers. pronoun is the object.

"I want you," *mae arnaf eich eisieu (chwi)*, =there is on me *your want*.

"They are afraid of us," *mae arnynt ein hofn (ni)*, =there is on them *our fear*.

In the above idiomatic construction, *mae* interchanges with *oes* (not with *yw*), even when the subject is apparently *definitive*.

¹ Probably for "yn bum mlwydd o oed," = *of age*.

The soldier does not want the sword, *nid oes ar y milwr eisieu y cleddyf*.

We are not afraid of the bulls, *nid oes arnom ofn y teirw*.

I don't want you, *nid oes arnaf eich eisieu (chwi)*.

They are not afraid of us, *nid oes arnynt ein hofn (ni)*.

§ 213. Distance of place, and measure. Gr. § 454.

Mae efe yn byw bum milltir oddi yma, *he lives five miles hence*.

Mae hi dri mis neu bedwar yn hŷn na mi, *she is three or four months older than I*.

Yr wyf am adeiladu'r ty ddwy droedfedd yn uwch, *I intend to build the house two feet higher*.

§ 214. "How deep is the river?" Read *Exercises*, § 181 (b).

What is the depth of the river? *beth (or pa faint) yw dyfnder yr afon?*

How high is the steeple? *pa cyn uched [pa mor uchel] ydyw'r clochdy?*

§ 215. VOCABULARY.

Foot (<i>measure</i>), trødfedd, <i>pl.-i</i>	I owe. I want. }	} See above.
Inch, môdfedd, <i>pl.-i (f.) [(f.)]</i>	I am afraid. }	
Height, ùchder (<i>m.</i>)	Deep, dŵfn (<i>f. dōfn</i>), <i>pl. dyfnion</i> .	
Height = tallness, taldra (<i>m.</i>)	<i>Gr. § 174, a, b.</i>	
Length, hŷd (<i>m.</i>)	Five, pŷmp, pŷm.	
Breadth, width, llêd (<i>m.</i>)	Six, chwêch, chwe.	
Depth, dŷnder (<i>m.</i>)	Seven, sàith.	
Size, màint (<i>m.</i>)	Eight, wŷth.	
Want, èisieu (<i>m.</i>)	Nine, naw.	
Fear, òfn (<i>m.</i>)	Ten, dêg, deng.	
Tea, te (<i>m.</i>)	Hundred, cànt, càn : <i>pl. cannoedd</i>	
Coffee, coffi (<i>m.</i>)	(<i>m.</i>)	
Sugar, slwgr, <i>pl. slygrau (m.)</i>	By (<i>noting quantity and measure</i>),	
Milk, llâeth (<i>m.</i>)	wrth.	
Pint, pèint, <i>pl.-iau (m.)</i>	By (<i>noting difference, after comp.</i>) o.	
Year, blynedd; blŷydd; blwydd-	Much or greatly (<i>with verb</i>), yn	
To like, hoffi. [yn (<i>f.</i>) ²	fawr.	

Tall for his age, tal o'i oed (= *of his age*).

What is the matter with you? *beth sydd arnoch chwi?* (= *what is on*

There is nothing the matter with me, *nid oes dim arnaf fi.* [*you?*]

This house is five feet higher, *mae'r ty hwn bum troedfedd yn uwch.*

The steeple is higher by ten feet, *mae'r clochdy yn uwch o ddeg troedfedd.*

² *Blynedd* is used with cardinal numerals: *blwydd*, with cardinal numerals when *age* is expressed: *blwyddyn* in other cases. Saith mlynedd, *seven years*. Wyth mlwydd oed, *eight years old*. Y flwyddyn newydd, *the new year*; blwyddyn a hanner, *a year and a half*; y drydedd flwyddyn, *the 3rd year*. [*Un flwyddyn* is an exception.]

The *pl. of blynedd* and *blwyddyn* is *blynyddoedd* or *blynyddau*. Deg o flynyddoedd. Am flynyddoedd.

The *pl. of blwydd* is *blwyddi*. Oen blwydd, *a year old lamb*: *pl. wyn blwyddi*. Buwch flwydd, *a year old cow*: *pl. buchod blwyddi*.

Irregular adjective.

Llydan, *wide, broad*, cyn llêted, mor llydan, llêtach, llêtaf.

§ 216. EXERCISES.

A.) Nid oes neb yn fy hoffi i; ond y mae pawb yn eich hoffi chwi.—Y mae'r offeiriad yn ei chanmol hi a chwithau yn fawr iawn.—Nid yw'r boneddigion ddim yn eich ammheu chwi; ond y maent yn eu hammheu hwy.—Yr ydym yn eich gweled ac yn eich clywed.—Beth yw hyd y bwrdd yma,—a ydyw efe yn naw troedfedd o hyd? Ydyw, ac yn bum troedfedd a chwe modfedd o led.—Pa faint ydyw ei uchder? Tair troedfedd a hanner.—Beth ydyw oedran ei dau blentyn? Y mae'r bachgen yn ddeng mlwydd oed, a'r eneth yn chwech.—Y mae deng mlynedd yn amser hir, ond y mae can mlynedd yn llawer hwy.—Blwyddyn newydd dda (*Gr.* § 475) i chwi, fy nghyfaill!—Os ydych chiwi am aros yn y wlad bell am saith mlynedd, nid ydym ni am aros ond am flwyddyn a hanner.—A ydyw eich merch fach yn wyth mlwydd oed? Ydyw: dyna ydyw ei hoed.—Y mae arnaf naw swllt neu ddeg i chwi, onid oes? Nac oes: nid oes arnoch i mi ond chwech a chwech.—Beth sydd ar y meddyg i chwi? Pump a chwech: dyna'r cwbl sydd arno i ni.—Y mae ar wraig y meddyg eisieu pum pwys o de, ac y mae arnaf finnau eisieu chwe phwys o goffi.—Nid oes arno ef eisieu dim.—Onid oes ar y garddwyr ein heisieu ni? Nac oes: nid oes arnynt eich eisieu chwi na ninnau.—Y mae arnom ofn ei wraig; ond nid oes arnom ei ofn ef.—Pa ham y mae ar wraig y crydd ofn y masnachwr? Y mae arni hi lawer o arian iddo.—Nid oes arnaf fi ofn neb.—Pa cyn belled yr ydych chiwi yn byw oddi yma? Yr ydym yn byw ddeng milltir oddi yma.—Y mae eich ty chwi bedair troedfedd yn uwch [yn uwch o bedair troedfedd] na'n ty ni.—Y mae mab-yng-nghyfraith yr offeiriad bum mlwydd yn hŷn [yn hŷn o bum mlwydd] na'i wraig.—Beth sydd ar yr eneth? Nid oes dim arni.—Y mae Iorwerth yn fachgen tal o'i oed, a chryf o'i faint.—Mae'r Eglwys yma yn lletach o chwe throedfedd na'n Heglwys ni.

B.) What is the height of the steeple? It is a hundred feet high.—How deep is this river? It is ten feet deep, and five yards broad.—How old is [what is the age of] your youngest

son? He is five.—We intend to be from home for six years.—Indeed! six years is a long time.—This is a bad year.—My nephews wish to stay with me for a year and a half or two years.—He is five or six years older than his wife.—How far do they live from here? They live a hundred miles from here.—We do not like || *them*; but we like || *you* very much.—Do you like this tea? No, indeed, I do not like it: I prefer the coffee.—He does not doubt || *her*; but he doubts || *you*.—Why do the strangers doubt us?—|| *We* do not like them: do || *you*? Yes, || *we* like them very much.—What is the matter with them? There is nothing the matter with them.—Don't I owe him seven or eight pounds? Yes: you owe || *him* eight pounds, and you owe || *us* ten pounds.—She is afraid of dogs; but she is not afraid of cows.—They are afraid of || *them*; but they are not afraid of || *you*.—He has only nine pounds in his pocket, and he wants ten.—Arthur does not want any tea: he prefers coffee to tea.—Do you want any sugar in your tea? No, thank you.—Is that (= *yonder*) river deep? No, not very deep: it is only five feet deep.—This boy is only nine years old.—Indeed! he is very tall for his age.—That young man, your son's friend, is very strong for his size.—What is the length of this room? It is six yards and ten inches long.—How broad is it [what is the breadth of it]? It is five yards broad.—That (*o. of s.*) river is much deeper than this.—That (*o. of s.*) river is five or six feet broader than this.—Her uncle is older by seven years than her aunt.—They intend to make it (*m.*) ten feet higher.—Your little boy is eight years old, is he not? Yes: that is his age.—How much do you owe the shoemaker? Ten and sixpence: that's all I owe him.—The shopkeeper only wants ten; but I want a hundred.—A happy (*W. = good*) new year to you all!—Don't you see us?

C.) Y mae'r llaeth yn ddwy geiniog y peint.—A ydych chwi yn ei glywed ef? Ydym, ac yn ei weled hefyd.—Pwy o honoch sydd yn ein hammheu? Y mae pawb o honom yn eich ammheu.—Pa faint y pwys ydyw'r te? Y mae'r te goreu sydd genym yn bedwar a chwech y pwys.—Beth ydyw oedran eich mab hynaf? Deg.—Y mae ganddo amryw gannoedd o ddefaid —Sut y mae gwraig yr amaethwr yn gwerthu'r llaeth? Wrth y peint.—A oes rhywbeth arnoch chwi,—pa ham yr ydych

mor drist? Nac oes, nid oes dim yn y byd arnaf fi.—Yr ydych chwi ddeng mlwydd yn hŷn [yn hŷn o ddeng mlwydd] nag ef; ond nid ydych yn llawer talach.—Byddant yn fynych yn myned oddi cartref am bum diwrnod neu chwech.—Y mae Myfanwy yn well o'r hanner na neb o honoch. Beth ydyw taldra eich mab hynaf? Y mae efe yn bum troedfedd a chwe modfedd o daldra.—Hwn ydyw'r brethyn lletaf sydd genym yn y siop,—y mae'n lletach o bum modfedd na hwna.

D.) We praise them very much.—What a pint is the milk? Three half-pence (W. = *a penny and a half-penny*).—We have hundreds of them.—They sell cloth by the yard, tea and coffee by the pound, and milk by the pint.—This road is wider than that (*near*) by six or seven feet.—The clergyman's house is many feet higher than || *yours*.—How many sacks of corn are there here? Five.—|| *They* do not want || *us*; but || *we* want || *them*.—Why is she afraid of the doctor? She is not afraid of him.—How high is this hill? None of us know.—What is the size of your hand? It is very small.—What is the width of this black cloth? It is seven feet wide.—What o'clock is it? It is half past ten.—There is something the matter with the carpenter's wife,—she looks so sad.—She is ten years younger than her cousin (*fem.*)—We are going to build these rooms five or six feet higher.—Why do you sell it (*m.*) by the pound? We don't sell it by the pound,—we sell it **by the yard**.—Why does the clergyman so often blame us?—She often goes from home for five or six days.—Don't you owe me money? No, I don't owe you anything.—You are better and kinder by (*THE*) half than any of them.—How many inches are there in a foot?—How tall are you [what is your height]? I am only five feet five (W. = *and five inch*); but my eldest brother is six feet.—This path is not as wide as that (*near*). Yes, it is,—it is four inches wider.—|| *We* like || *them* very much; but || *they* don't like || *us*.—He does not understand her.—How tall is the soldier? He is a very tall man,—he is six feet five.—I do not know many things; but I know how high the steeple is, how deep the river is, how wide the garden is, how long the room is, how tall that gentleman is, and how old || *you* are.—They are very strong for their size, and tall for their age.

CHAPTER XXI.

[Infin. verb,—negation of infin.,—*to* before infin.,—*it*,—I want, I am afraid,—I give *you*,—in *trying*,—*yn* apposition,—am, am dan—.]

Pronominal prepositions.

Am danaf, *for me*. Gr. § 378. Wrthyf, *to me*. Gr. § 380.

Notes and References.

§ 217. The Infinitive is used as subject or object of a verb, corresponding to the Eng. infinitive or participial noun. Gr. §§ 658, 659, and notes.

Y mae *dysgu* plant yn waith da, *teaching children is a good work*.

Yr ydym yn ewyllysio cynnorthwyo'r dynion, *we wish to help the men*.

"Y mae *dysgu*." Gr. § 589. "Ewyllysio cynnorthwyo." Gr. § 590.

The subject-infinitive is for the most part definitive: hence *yw* (not *oes*) should be used in negations.

Nid *yw* dywedyd y gwir ddim yn bechod, *telling the truth is not a sin*.

Nid *ydwy* yn anhawdd gwneuthur hyny, *it is not difficult to do that*.

When the infinitive used as subject or object of a verb, is to be negated, use *peidio â* or *âg* (= *to cease with*).

Y mae *peidio â* dweyd y gwir yn bechod, *not to tell the truth is a sin*.

Y mae'n addaw *peidio â* gwneyd hyny eto, *he promises not to do that again*.

§ 218. **To** before the infinitive.

a.) Not to be translated. Gr. §§ 662, 663.

(a) It is a sin *to tell* an untruth, *y mae'n bechod dweyd anwiredd*.

(b) He does not promise *to pay* the debt, *nid yw yn addaw talu y ddyled*.

(c) It is necessary for him to do that, *y mae'n angenrheidiol iddo ef wneyd hyny*.

b.) To be translated. Gr. § 664, and notes.

(a) They are not willing *to pay* us, *nid ydynt yn foddlon i dalu i ni*.

(b) We are coming *to help* you, *yr ydym yn dyfod i'ch cynnorthwyo*.

(c) Who is *to do* this difficult work? *pwysydd i wneyd y gwaith anhawdd yma?*

§ 219. **It**. When *it* introduces a sentence as a representative of an infinitive coming after the verb, it has nothing corresponding to it in W.

It is easy to find fault with other people, y mae yn hawdd beio ar bobl ereill.

§ 220. “Mae’n anhawdd i mi ddweyd,” *it is difficult for me to say.*

“Mae’n anhawdd dweyd,” *it is difficult to say.*

The former example is explained in *Gr.* § 594, and notes.

The latter example has not been explained. Rule: when an infinitive is the subject, and is separated from the verb by a predicative noun or adjective *unaccompanied by a prep. and its case, or by a phrase*, the infinitive will retain its *radical* sound. *Mae* (verb)—*yn anhawdd*—(predicative adjective)—*dweyd* (subject-infinitive).

§ 221. I want. I am afraid. (Continued from § 212.)

“I want to go,” *y mae arnaf eisieu myned* (= *the want of going*).

“They are afraid to go,” *y mae arnynt ofn myned* (= *the fear of going*).

Here *myned* is in the possessive after *eisieu* and *ofn*: hence *rad.* *Gr.* § 437.

I want *you* to go.

I am afraid of *your going*.

} See below, § 222.

§ 222. “I give **you** a shilling.” Many Eng. grammarians consider “**you**” as the accusative of the person, and “**shilling**” the accusative of the thing. In W. there are no two accusatives: what appears as the accus. of the person in Eng. has the prep. *i*¹ before it in W., and, as a rule, comes after the accus. of the thing.

I give you a shilling, *yr ydwyf yn rhoi sullt i chwi* (= I give a shilling to you).

We tell them the truth, *yr ydyn yn dweyd y gwir wrthynt.* (See foot-note.)

The same construction is observed when the infin. is the object or “accus. of the thing.” But the infin., as in Eng., is put after the “accus. of the person.”

I command you to go away, *yr wyf yn gorchymmyn i chwi fyned ymaith.*

He wishes me to help her, *y mae efe yn ewyllysio i mi ei chynorthwyo.*

Why do they want me to try? *pa ham y mae arnynt eisieu i mi geisio?*

“I am afraid of your going,” &c., follows the same construction.

They are afraid of your seeing them, *y mae arnynt ofn i chwi eu gwelod.*

¹ *Wrth* is found after *dweyd*, and most verbs of *telling*; and *ar* after verbs of *praying*.

§ 223. Eng. In trying. W. In try. (*Wrth geisio.*)

Prepositions are followed by *infinitives*, not as in Eng. by *participles*.

§ 224. Eng. It is my duty.

W. My duty is it. (*Fy nyledswydd yw.*)

It is a duty upon me. (*Mae'n ddyledswydd arnaf,—in simple narration.*)

§ 225. *Yn* apposition before 2nd accus. *Gr.* §§ 646, 647.

§ 226. *Am* before a noun; *am dan*— before a pers. pron. *Gr.* § 749.

§ 227. VOCABULARY.

Sin, pechod, <i>pl.-au (m.)</i>	To say (to), tell, <i>dweyd or dywedyd (wrth).</i>
Truth, gwir; gwirionedd, <i>pl.-au (m.)</i>	To sin, pechu.
Untruth, anwiredd, <i>pl.-au (m.)</i>	To command, gorchymmyrn.
Debt, dyled, <i>pl.-ion (f.)</i>	To consider, ystyried.
Teacher, master, athraw, <i>pl.-on (m.)</i>	To appoint, penodi.
Easy, hawdd.	Without, heb (<i>md.</i>)
Difficult, anhawdd, (<i>coll. anodd.</i>)	In (<i>before infin.</i>), wrth.
Necessary, angenrheidiol.	Not to (<i>before infin.</i>), peidio â or âg. <i>Ex.</i> § 217.
Desirous (to), awyddus (<i>i or am.</i>)	For (= <i>in exchange</i>), am (<i>md.</i>), am dan—.
To promise, addaw (<i>coll. addo.</i>)	For (e.g. <i>for me</i>), i.
To pay (for), talu (<i>am.</i>)	To (= <i>in order to</i>), i.
To help, cynnorthwyo.	For nothing, am ddim.
To try, endeavours, cèisio.	Now and then, yu awr ac yu y man.
To undertake, ymgymmeryd â or âg.	

Irregular adjectives.

Hawdd, *easy*, cyn hawsed, mor hawdd, haws, hawsaf.
 Anhawdd, *difficult*, cyn anhawsed, mor anhawdd, anhaws, anhawsaf.

§ 228. EXERCISES.

A.) Y mae cynnorthwyo pobl dlodion yn ddyledswydd arnom.—Nid ydym yn ewyllysio myned ymaith heb ei weled ef.—Nid yw yn angenrheidiol gweithio ddydd a nos.—A ydyw yn angenrheidiol i ni dalu yr arian hynny? Ydyw, y mae.—Y mae peidio â thalu ein dyledion yn bechod.—Y mae'n anhawdd peidio â phechu.—Nid yw ddim yn bechod dywedyd y gwir, a ydyw? Nac ydyw; ond y mae dywedyd anwiredd yn bechod mawr yn erbyn Duw.—Nid ydynt yn hoffi cymmeryd

dim heb dalu am dano.—Byddaf yn ei gweled hi bob dydd wrth fyned adref.—Nid yw'r meddyg ddim yn foddlon i werthu ei geffyl am ddeg punt.—Nid oes neb o honom yn awyddus i ymgymmeryd â gwaith mor anhawdd.—A oes arnoch chwi eisieu dweyd rhywbeth wrthym? Nac oes.—Y mae arnom eisieu i bawb ddweyd y gwir bob amser, a pheidio â dweyd anwiredd un amser.—A oes arnynt ofn ymgymmeryd â'r gwaith hwnw? Nac oes.—Y mae arni ofn i'r eneth ddiwyno ei dillad wrth fyned i'r ysgol.—Yr ydym yn myned allan heddyw i ymweled â'n cyfeillion goreu.—Y mae efe yn dyfod i'ch cynnorthwyo.—Pa ham y mae efe yn dyfod i'n cynnorthwyo ni?—Pwy sydd i ddweyd hyny wrtho? Chwy-chwi.—Ai nyni sydd i wneyd yr holl waith? Ië.—Nid oes ganddynt hawl i orchymmyn i ni fyned ymaith.—Pwy sydd yn gorchymmyn i mi dalu fy nyled i'r teiliwr? Eich tad sydd.—Nid oes arno eisieu iddynt roi dim iddo am ddim.—Y mae'n well ganddo addaw talu ei ddyledion na'u talu.—Y mae yn haws iddo ef nag i mi dalu i'r teiliwr am y dillad.—A ydych chi yn ystyried yr offeiriad yn ddarllenwr da? Ydym, yn ddarllenwr da iawn.—Pa ham yr ydych yn fy mhenodi i yn athraw?—Y mae efe yn dysgu ffordd Duw mewn gwirionedd.

B.) We want to pay all our debts.—We do not want them to give us anything for nothing.—It is easy to tell the truth.—It is our duty to tell you the truth.—Why is it necessary to help them?—Writing letters is sometimes necessary.—The clergyman does not like to take these things without paying you for them.—It is a sin not to try to pay our debts.—It is not necessary for them to go from home to-day.—Why are you so desirous to help us?—You are too fond of laughing at poor people.—They always go away without saying a word.—We are not afraid of you.—Are they afraid of our blaming them? No.—These idle young men never try to pay their debts.—She promises not to do that (*o. of s.*) again.—Are you coming here to command me to do my duty?—We are willing to help them to pay those (*o. of s.*) large debts.—Who is to undertake this difficult work? None of us are desirous to undertake it.—We consider this young man an excellent teacher.—All of us sin every day against our merciful God.—There is nothing more precious than truth.—He wants you

to appoint his nephew master of the school.—||*They* are afraid to tell you the truth, but || *we* are not.—Playing in church is a sin.—It is his duty to endeavour to do that (*o. of s.*)—He is willing to sell you his grey pony (*m.*) for nine pounds; but he is not willing to give it you for nothing.—They promise never to tell untruths again.—We do not wish to undertake such a very difficult work.—It is easier to promise to pay debts than to pay them.—You are doing your duty in helping her.—Are you doing what is right in giving them money?

C.) Byddwn yn myned oddi cartref yn awr ac yn y man i ymweled â'n cyfeillion.—Ein dyledswydd ni, nid eich dyledswydd chwi, ydyw gorchymmyn i'r plant fod yn ufudd i'w hathraw.—Y mae arnynt eisieu eich penodi chwi yn un o'r athrawon: a ydych chwi yn foddlon? Ydwyf.—Nid oes dim gwirionedd yn hyny.—Yr ydym ein dau yn awyddus iawn am [i] fyned oddi cartref.—Y mae cyn hawsed i chwi ag i minnau dalu i'r crydd am yr esgidiau.—Pwy sydd i gerdded? Chwychwi eich dau.—Pa ham y mae arni ofn dweyd y gwir? Nid ydynt yn gwybod beth yw gwirionedd.—Y mae'r dyn am fyned i ffwrdd heb dalu ei ddyledion.—Ein dyledswydd yw gwneyd ein goreu i bawb.—Y maent yn rhy hoff o siarad.—Y mae'r bechgyn a'r genethod yn awyddus iawn i'w [am ei] gweled hi.—Pa ham y mae arnoch eisieu iddynt ddweyd anwiredd?—Nid oes ar neb o honom ei hofn hi; ond y mae ar bawb o honom ofn ei chwiorydd.—Y mae'n ddyledswydd arnoch chwi a hwythau ddweyd y gwir wrth bawb.

D.) It is easier to sin than not to sin.—There is no truth in those words.—We are afraid of the children running into the river.—She is not afraid of your seeing her.—It is as difficult for me as for him to undertake the work.—The lady wants these naughty children to try not to tell untruths.—It is || **your duty, not || ours**, to appoint a new teacher.—We like to visit them now and then.—It is **not || my duty** to talk to him,—it is **the clergyman's duty**.—I consider him an excellent tradesman.—We see his wife now and then; but we never see him.—They don't consider how difficult it is for us to pay them for all these things.—They are both (*f.*) very desirous to see their parents.—It is not very easy to know which is the best.—Does he want to tell us anything? No.—

We come here to command you to do your work.—I want her to give me five or six shillings.—We are afraid to tell her the sad news.—What is truth?—The lady's husband wants to know how deep and how broad this river is.—Who is to tell them the sad news?—Who is too fond of talking? **You** are.—Do they ever go from home? Yes, now and then.—I want to know why you are so unwilling to tell me the truth.—It is || **your duty, not your mother's**, to pay for all these things.—My brother and sister are going to visit an old friend of theirs.—You are sinning against your best friend in doing this.—It is || *his* and || *her* duty to be obedient and kind to us.

CHAPTER XXII.

[Inflected verbs,—future for pres.,—pres. of habit,—3rd person,—expletive *a*,—*mi* and *fe*,—"gwelafddyn,"—position of subject,—personal pron. as subject,—formation of finite verbs,—answers to questions,—*gallu, medru, gwybod, adnabod, gwybod am, meddaf* and *cbe*,—negative adverbs.]

§ 229. *Inflected verb. Present tense.*

I see, &c.

- | | | |
|-----------------|--------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1. Gwelaf (fi) | 2. Gweli (di). | 3. Gwela or gwél (efe, f. hi). |
| 1. Gwelwn (ni). | 2. Gwelwch (chwi). | 3. Gwelant (hwy). |

I know, &c. (Irregular.)

- | | | |
|------------------|---------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. Gŵn (i). | 2. Gwyddost (ti). | 3. Gŵyr (efe, f. hi). |
| 1. Gwyddom (ni). | 2. Gwyddoch (chwi). | 3. Gwyddant (hwy). |

I know, &c. (Irregular.)

- | | | |
|-------------------|----------------------|------------------------|
| 1. Adwaen (i). | 2. Adwaenost (ti). | 3. Edwyn (efe, f. hi). |
| 1. Adwaenom (ni). | 2. Adwaenoch (chwi). | 3. Adwaenant (hwy). |

☞ Learn *Prel. Remarks*, § 20.

Notes and References.

§ 230. **Future for present.** Present Indic. is sometimes expressed by the inflected future. *Gr.* § 253. But it is difficult to lay down definite rules to guide the student as to when he may and may not use the future for the present.

It may be remarked that, in main clauses, this construction occurs oftenest in the 3rd person, sing. and pl.; but that in subjoined clauses it is adopted in the 1st and 2nd persons as often as in the 3rd. As a rule, the future for present is oftener used in *subjoined* than in *main clauses*.

The periphrastic present (e.g. *yr wyf yn dysgu*) is much more common, and may be always used when the tense is strictly present.

§ 231. Some few futures are, in main clauses, oftener employed as present than as future: such as *gallaf*, I may or can; *medraf*, I can; *gwelaf*, I see; *clywaf*, I hear; *tybiaf*, I think; *meddaf*, I possess or have; *talaf*, I am worth.

§ 232. The future is occasionally used as present of habit = (e.g.) *byddaf yn myned*. *Ex.* § 200.

Dywed Iorwerth y gwir bob amser, *Iorwerth always tells the truth.*

§ 233. **Third person.** *Galla or gall, he can.* *Gr.* p. 71, *foot-note.*

§ 234. *Mi a fedraf, I can.* *Gr.* § 596. *A* governs *middle*.

§ 235. *Mi wn i hyny, I know that.* } *Gr.* §§
Fe wyr Arthur y cwbl, Arthur knows all. } 519, 520.

§ 236. *Ni haeddweh ddim, you deserve nothing.* } *Gr.*
Gall y bachgen gerdded, the boy can walk. } § 590.

§ 237. **Position of subject.** The subject, both when *emphatic* and *unemphatic*, comes *after*¹ the verb. *Gr.* § 580: *also note (a) in* § 584. [When the subject is *antithetical* (= *it is...that* or *who*), it precedes its verb. See further on.]

Gall Iorwerth ddarllen.

Gallaf (fi²) ddarllen.

Ni all Iorwerth ddarllen.

Ni allaf (fi) ddarllen.

A all Iorwerth ddarllen?

A allaf fi³ ddarllen?

Os gall Iorwerth ddarllen.

Os gallaf (fi) ddarllen.

☞ When the subject is a *personal pronoun* and *unemphatic*, it is very often put before the verb, in *affirmative* sentences. (*Mi a allaf ddysgu.*)

¹ If the subject is a *rel.* or an *interr.* pronoun, it will, of course, precede its verb.

² The subject-pronoun, when *unemphatic*, and coming after the verb, is seldom expressed unless some particle (e.g. *mi, fe, y, nid, &c.*) precedes the verb. (*Mi allaf fi edrych=gallaf edrych.*)

When the verb is preceded by a particle, the *unemphatic pron.* may or may not be added: if it is added, it must be read as an *enclitic*. (*Mi allaf-fi.*) It may be here remarked that the *pron.* is much oftener used in speaking than in writing.

³ In questions the pronoun is much oftener used than omitted.

Give the form of the pronoun used when it precedes the verb. *Prel. Remarks*, § 16.

Ydwyf and **oeddwn**. The pres. *ydwyf*, &c., and the imperf. *oeddwn*, &c., whether employed as main or auxiliary verbs, prefer the pronoun *after* them. *Yr ydym (ni) yn meddwl felly, we think so.* [Not, *ni ydym yn*, &c.]

When the subject must precede (e.g. in a rel. clause), no particle will precede the tenses *ydwyf* and *oeddwn*. *Gr.* §§ 701, 721. *Ein tad, yr llyn wyt yn y nefoedd, our Father, which art in heaven.*

§ 238. **Formation of finite verbs.** Most finite verbs are made by throwing off the infin. termination, and then appending the finite suffixes. *Read Gr.* §§ 225–244.

Infinitive: *gwelod*, to see. Root: *gwél*. Finite verb, *gwelaf*, I see.

Give the finite roots of *haeddu*; *clywed*; *diwyno*; *pori*; *taflu*; *dychvelyd*; *rhedeg*; *cerdded*; *colli*; *beio*; *dywedyd*; ⁴ *marchogaeth* (*Gr.* § 235):—*gweithio*; *cuddio*; *ceisio*; *ystyried* (*Gr.* § 237):—*meddwl* (*Gr.* §§ 234, 338); *erfyn* (*Gr.* § 238).

§ 239. Answers to questions. *Ex.* § 76, *d.*

Can you throw the stone? A allwch chwi daflu'r gareg?

Yes:—yes, I can.

Gallaf:—gallaf, mi a allaf. [allaf ddim.

No:—no, I cannot.

Na allaf: ⁵—na allaf, ni allaf (ddim); or na

§ 240. **Gallu** and **medru**.

Gallaf, I may⁶ or I can: *medraf*, I can. Both verbs are conjugated like *dysgu*. (*Gr.* § 282.)

He may go, if he chooses, *gall fyned, os dewisa*.

I can throw the stones, *medraf* or *gallaf daflu'r ceryg*.

Medru (and in some localities *gallu*) is often used for *gwybod*, when *gwybod* implies *to be skilled in*.

A fedrwech [a wyddoch] chwi eich gwers? *do you know your lesson?*

§ 241. **Gwybod**; **adnabod** or **adwaen**; **gwybod am**.

Gwybod, to know, = *not to be ignorant, to perceive with certainty* (mental operation.)

Adnabod or *adwaen* (and *coll. nabod*), to know, = *to be acquainted with, 'to recognise an object as the same we formerly considered it to be,' = L. agnoscere.*

Gŵyr Duw beth sydd mewn dyn, God knows what is in man.

Ni a adwaenom y dynion, we know the men.

⁴ *Dweyd* is used only in infinitive.

⁵ Or, *na gallaf, &c.*

⁶ How "*may*" is to be translated after *that* (e.g. that I may go), and in a wish (e.g. may God bless you!) will be explained hereafter.

With *gwybod* cf. Fr. *savoir* and Ger. *wissen*; with *adnabod* cf. Fr. *connaître* and Ger. *kennen*.

Gwybod am, to know of or about.

Ni wyddant ddim am danom, they know nothing about us.

Gwybod am is often used for *adnabod*, in speaking of places.

Yr wyf yn gwybod am y dref yn dda iawn, I know the town very well.

§ 242. **Meddaf** and **ebe**. Gr. §§ 324, 325.

These verbs are used in quotations, and are generally placed in the middle or at the end of a clause: *ebe* in quoting the exact words, and *meddaf* in quoting the sentiment or the exact words.

“*Y maent ill dau*,” *ebe* [meddai] *efe*, “*yn fy erbyn*,” “*they are both*,”
said he, “*against me*.”

Y mae'r llyfrau hyn, *meddant hwy*, *yn rhy ddrud*, *these books*, *they say*, *are too dear*.

§ 243. *Sut y gall hi?* *how can she?* } Gr. §§ 709, 712, 713.
Fel y gwelant, *as they see*. }

§ 244. **Adverbs of negation**. Read Gr. §§ 678–685
Summary of Government, Gr. §§ 913, 914.

§ 245. VOCABULARY.

Chapter , pënnod, <i>pl.-au</i> (<i>f.</i>)	To be worth , bod yn wèrth, talu. ⁷
Hymn , emyn, <i>pl.-au</i> (<i>m.</i> or <i>f.</i>)	To have =get, obtain, câel.
Author , awdwr (<i>m.</i>)	To possess or have , meddu.
History , story, hanes, <i>pl.-ion</i> (<i>m.</i> or <i>f.</i>)	To think (of or about), meddwl (am).
Noise , sŵn (<i>m.</i>)	To think (<i>much</i>) of, meddwl (<i>yn fawr</i>) o.
Clock , òrlais, <i>pl.</i> orlëisiau; clòc, <i>pl.-iau</i> (<i>m.</i>)	I say ,—said I. See Ex. § 242.
Reward , gwòbr, gwòbrwy: <i>pl.</i> gwobrwyon (<i>f.</i>)	Blind , dall, <i>pl.</i> dëillion.
Language , iaith, <i>pl.</i> iëithoedd (<i>f.</i>)	Deaf , byddar.
London , Llündain. Gr. § 147.	Of (=about, concerning), am.
To be able : may, can, gallu, mèdru. See Ex. § 240.	As (=in the manner that), fel (ag), megys (ag).
To know , gwybod; adnabod. See Ex. § 241.	Thus , fel hÿn.
To throw , tâflu.	So (=in such a manner), fëlly.
To choose , dewis.	Byheart (orrote), ardafod leferydd.
To deserve , haeddu.	Not , ni, nid, nis; na, nad, nas; na, nac.
To ùeg (of), èrfyn (ar).	...not? oni? onid? onis?
	For (<i>conj.</i>), canys.

⁷ Used only in finite tenses.

§ 246. EXERCISES.

A.) Gallaf [medraf] siarad am oriau.—A fedri di a'th frawd weithio? Medrwn; ac yr ydym yn gweithio ein goreu.—Gallwch fyned ymaith yn awr, os dewiswch.—Ni ŵyr (*Gr.* § 680, *b*) efe yr emyn, ac nid edwyn yr awdwr.—Mi a wn hyny cyn gystal a chwithau.—A adwaenoch chwi awdwr yr emyn hwn [hon]? Adwaen yn dda iawn.—Hwy a wyddant yr holl emynau hyn ar dafod leferydd.—Mi a adwaen ei thaid; ond nid adwaen ei nain na'i mam.—Mi wn i beth ydyw oed fy nai; ond ni ŵyr ei rieni.—Fe all Arthur daflu'r gareg fawr yma; ond ni allaf fi.—A welwch chwi rywbeth? Na welwn, ni welwn ddim yn y byd.—A wyddoch chwi rywbeth am y gwagedd hyn? Gwyddom, ni a wyddom lawer am danynt.—Yr ydym yn gwybod am Lundain yn llawer gwell na hŵy.—Ni thal hwn ddim yn y byd.—Yn wir, ni feddaf yr un geiniog.—“Nid yw eich gwaith,” ebe [meddai] efe, “yn werth dim.”—“Ac nid yw eich gwaith chwithau,” ebe finnau, [meddwn innau] “yn werth llawer.”—Mae'r hanes yn wir, fel (ag) y gŵyr pawb o honynt.—Y maent mor dlodion fel na feddant ddigon o arian i dalu am ddillad eu plant.—Os haedd-wch ddim, chwi a haeddwch gael y wobr hon.—Ni ddywed y dynion yma y gwir un amser.—Yr ydych chwi oll, medd yr ysgol feistr, yn haeddu gwobrwyon.—Pa ham y sieryd [siarada] efe felly am danom?—Pa un o honoch a fedr ddweyd ei wers oreu?—Oni welwch chwi mor barod ydym i'ch cyn-northwyo?—Nid felly y mae'r hanes: fel hyn y mae.—Pa ham na ddysgant eu gwersi?—Medr [gall] offeiriad ein plwyf ni siarad tair neu bedair o ieithoedd yn dda; ond ni fedraf [allaf] fi siarad un yn gywir.—Mi [fe] ŵyr hi a'r forwyn arall i b'le yr ydym yn myn'd.—Pwy o honoch sy'n gwybod oreu am Lundain?—Nis gall [ni all], medd efe, feddwl yn dda o honoch.—Pam y meddyliwch felly?—Yr ydym ni yn meddwl yn uchel iawn o'r gwyr ieuaine; ond nid yw ein cymmydog-ion yn meddwl yn uchel o honynt.—Erfyniaf arnoch fod yn fwy caredig wrth y plant.

B.) If you know anything, you know what your child's name is.—Don't they know how difficult it is to live without sinning every day?—You may do that (*o. of s.*), if you choose. We cannot think well of them.—He reads sometimes well, and

sometimes badly.—He does not possess anything.—So he says.—Why don't they always tell the truth?—We know the authors of those hymns well.—These stories may be true.—May we go now to the village? Yes, you may both go if you choose.—I know nothing about the young man; but I know his father and mother well.—Neither you nor your sisters can say these five chapters by heart.—He knows the place better than I (do).—We owe them nothing, as they well know.—This steeple, they say, is a hundred feet high.—These clocks are worth nothing, as you say.—They deserve nothing for their work.—Who says so?—"I am so poor," said he, "that I cannot pay them."—Why do the children throw stones?—Thus he writes.—If they choose to go, they may go.—Can't they come with us? No.—You know London as well as we (do).—We cannot tell you how many languages there are.—She knows all these hymns by heart; but she does not know the author.—"Thus," said she, "I choose to do."—Don't they know why we are so angry with them? No, they don't.—This is all I possess.—Can they speak many languages? Yes, they can.—How can we think highly of these men who are always idle?—Why do they think so?—He cannot tell us why his uncle does not think much of our friends.

C.) Nis gŵyr efe pwy ydym ni; ond gwyddom ni pwy ydyw efe.—Gallwn fyned heddyw i ymweled â hŵy; canys y mae hi yn ddiwrnod braf.—Ni cheisiant un amser wneuthur eu dyledswydd.—A ydych chwi am gael [yn ewyllysio cael] rhai o'r eirin? Nac ydym.—Ni haeddweh gael yr un ddimai; canys yr ydych yn weision diog ac anufudd.—A wyddoch chwi beth ydyw enw'r plŵyf hwn? Na wn; ond fe ŵyr fy mrawd-yng-nghyfraith.—Ni chlywaf fi ddim swm, ac ni chlyw fy nghefnder ddim chwaith.—Ni wel dynion deillion ddim, ac ni chlyw dynion byddar ddim.—Fe dal yr orlais [y cloc] yma bum punt neu chwech; ond ni thal hwnaew yr un bunt.—A ŵyr [fedr] Myfanwy yr holl emynau hyn ar dafod leferydd? Gŵyr [medr]; ac y mae hi yn gwybod [yn medru] amryw bennodau ar dafod leferydd.—Gall yr hanes fod yn wir.—Nid ydyw'r clociau [orleisiau] hyn yn werth llawer.—Ni feddwl [ni feddylia] neb o honom felly.—Oni all [onis gall] yr hanes fod yn wir? Na all [nas gall].—Ni wn i ddim beth ydyw

maint y llyfr: a wyddoch chwi? Na wn; ond mi wŷr fy mab-ying-nghyfraith.—Pa ham na feddyliant yn well o honom? Ni wyddom ni ddim.—Pa ham yr erfyn [erfynia] efe arnom feddwl am dano? Y mae efe yn wr boneddig hael dros ben, megys [fel] y gwyddoch i gyd.—Ni a wyddom hyny cyn gystal a chwithau.—Yr ydym oll yn gwybod am y gwledydd hyny yn dda iawn.—Ni ddywed hi air wrth neb un amser.—A glywch (*Gr.* § 244, *c*) chwi y swm yn y gegin? Na chlywn ddim; canys ni fedrwn glywed yn dda.

D.) Can blind people see? No; neither can deaf people hear.—This clock, they say, is worth nine or ten pounds.—He says nothing about his uncle and aunt.—These clocks, as you all know, are much too dear.—They may stay for two or three hours, if they choose; for there is plenty of time.—He always tells the truth to everybody.—Do they wish to have any of these? Yes.—It is very seldom they think about any of those (*o. of s.*) poor people.—Can you say many chapters by heart? No, we cannot; but we can say several hymns by heart.—They know my two uncles; but they do not know my brothers-in-law.—We beg of you to help these blind men.—They can neither see nor hear you; for they are both blind and deaf.—Don't you know the medical man? No (*pl.*)—They deserve to have rewards, don't they? Yes, indeed.—“You are not blind and deaf,” said she: “you can see and hear as well as any of us.”—Does not she know the authors of these hymns? No.—Don't they hear the noise? No, they don't.—That (*o. of s.*) clock, he says, is worth nothing.—The history of these countries, they say, is not true.—Cannot you get anything? No, nothing.—It may be worth something; but it cannot (*W. = may not*) be worth much.—Which of you can help me?—Can she learn this language? No, she cannot learn it.—Who is the author of this beautiful hymn? I don't know.—They are very honest people, as you all know.—All of us do not know that.—Why cannot these young ladies think well of her? She does not know.—I know my master; but I do not know my lesson.—Do you know London? Yes.—|| *We* don't hear any noise: do || *you*? No, we don't.—They don't possess anything, as you see.—We know who you are.—Why do they beg of us to give them rewards? None of them deserve rewards, as they well know.

CHAPTER XXIII.

[Inflected verbs,—introductory poss. pron. (*mi a'ch clywaf*),—*dim, mo, mo honof*,—*a...ddim? a mo?*=*onid or ai nid?*—*rhaid*, must, &c.,—answers to questions,—ordinals,—the hundred and ninth psalm.]

§ 247. *Inflected verb. Present tense.*

He sees me, &c.

Efe a'm gwel (i). Efe a'th wel (di). Efe a'i gwel (ef, fem. hi).
Efe a'n gwel (ni). Efe a'ch gwel (chwi). Efe a'u gwel (hwy or hwynt).

Observe the form of the object-pronoun. *Prel. Remarks*, § 21.

Observe that the introductory possessive 'th governs the *mid.*: the others the *rad.*

Æ *Ei mas.* placed before *infinitive* verbs governs the *mid.*; and *ei fem.* the *asp.*

He knows me, &c.

Efe a'm hedwyn (i). Efe a'th edwyn (di). Efe a'i hedwyn (ef, fem. hi).
Efe a'n hedwyn (ni). Efe a'ch edwyn (chwi). Efe a'u hedwyn (hwy or hwynt).

Finite verbs with vowel initials are aspirated after the introductory possessives, except the *2nd pers., sing. and pl.*

Infinitive verbs with vowel initials are aspirated after the same possessives, except *ei mas.* (*Gr.* § 542.)

He sees me, &c. (Subject after the verb.)

Gwel (efe) fi. Gwel (efe) di. Gwel (efe) ef, fem. hi.
Gwel (efe) ni. Gwel (efe) chwi. Gwel (efe) hwy or hwynt.

Observe that this form has "fi" in the 1st person. *Prel. Rem.*, § 22 (*g.*)

Notes and References.

§ 248. "Mi a'ch clywaf chwi," *I hear you.* Introductory poss. pronoun. *Gr.* §§ 589, 600.

§ 249. **Dim, mo, and mo honof.**

Dim and *mo* are expletive particles used in **negative** sentences. *Gr.* § 698, and notes.

Dim has been explained in *Ex.* § 79.

Nid ym ni *ddim* yn ei adnabod ef, *we do not know him.*

Nis gallaf fi *ddim* tafu'r gareg, *I cannot throw the stone.*

Nis gŵyr efeddim lle ymae Llundain, *he does not know where London is.*

When the verb is an inflected transitive having a noun or pronoun as object, *dim* is put after the object of the verb,—not, as in the preceding

examples, after the subject. [But when it occupies this position, it is often more than a mere expletive being = *at all*.] Nid adwaen i ef ddim, *I do not know him (at all)*.

Mo occurs in connection with a transitive verb, inflected or periphrastic, followed by a *definitive* object. It is used when a noun is the object of the verb: and also when a *personal pronoun* is the object of an *infinitive verb* (i.e. not of a *participle*).

Nid adwaen i mo'r dyn, = nid adwaen i y dyn.

Nid wyf yn adnabod mo'r dyn, = nid wyf yn adnabod y dyn.

Nis medraf ddeall mo'r hen wr, = nis medraf ddeall yr hen wr.

Nis medraf mo'ch deall (chwi), = nis medraf eich deall (chwi).

It will be seen from the above examples that *mo* stands immediately before the objective noun and its concomitants; and before the introductory poss. pronoun when the object is a pers. pronoun.

Mo honof is a form used instead of the accusative pers. pronoun. *Gr.* § 750 (c). It is declined like "*o honof*": *mo honof, mo honot, &c.* *Ex.* § 123.

Give the contracted form. *Gr.* § 689 (c).

When *mo honof* is used, the introductory poss. pron. is not required.

Nid adwaen i mo hono (ef), = nid adwaen i ef.

Nid wyf yn adnabod mo hono (ef), = nid wyf yn ei adnabod (ef).

Nis medraf ddeall mo honoch (chwi), = nis medraf eich deall (chwi);
nis medraf mo'ch deall (chwi).

§ 250. **A . . . ddim ?** (*Ex.* § 79) } negative interr. = *onid*
A . . . mo ? a . . . mo honof ? } or *ai nid ?*

A ydych chwi ddim yn fy adnabod ?

A ydych chwi yn adnabod mo honof ?

Onid [ai nid] ydych chwi yn fy adnabod ?

} *don't you know me ?*

§ 251. **Dim** and **mo** are frequently employed in the negative forms of "y mae arnaf eisieu," and "y mae arnaf ofn." *Ex.* § 212.

Instead of "nid oes arnaf eisieu'r cleddyf,"—"nid oes arnaf ofn y tarw," we may say

Nid oes arnaf ddim eisieu'r cleddyf : nid oes arnaf mo eisieu'r cleddyf.

Nid oes arnaf ddim ofn y tarw : nid oes arnaf mo ofn y tarw.

Instead of "nid oes arnaf ei eisieu,"—"nid oes arnaf ei ofn," we may say

Nid oes arnaf ddim ei eisieu : nid oes arnaf mo'i eisieu : nid oes arnaf eisieu mo hono.

Nid oes arnaf ddim ei ofn : nid oes arnaf mo'i ofn : nid oes arnaf ofn mo hono.

§ 252. **Rhaid**, must. *Gr.* § 285.

- (a) Y mae'n rhaid i mi, } (= *there is need for me*), *I must, I am*
Rhaid i mi, } *obliged.*
- (b) Y mae'n rhaid i mi beidio (â), } *I must not.* (*Ex.* § 217.)
Rhaid i mi beidio (â), }
- (c) Nid yw yn rhaid i mi, } *I am not obliged; I need not.*
Ni raid [nid rhaid] i mi, }
- (d) A ydyw yn rhaid i mi? } *must I? am I obliged?*
A raid i mi? }
- (e) Os yw yn rhaid i mi, } *if I must, if I am obliged.*
Os rhaid i mi, }

Answers to questions.

- | | |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------------------------|
| Must I pay? | A raid i mi dalu? |
| Yes:—yes, you must. | Rhaid:—rhaid, y mae'n rhaid i chwi. |
| No:—no, you must not. | Na raid:—na raid, (y mae'n) rhaid i chwi beidio. |
| No:—no, you need not. | Na raid:—na raid, ni raid [nid rhaid] i chwi. |

When the subject precedes, being then antithetical, *rhaid* is a verb, and corresponds exactly to must.

Pwy a raid frysio adref? *who must make haste home?*
Chwychw i a raid frysio adref, *you must make haste home.*

§ 253. **Ordinals.** How formed, *Gr.* § 178. List, *Gr.* § 180.

Y trydydd gorchymyn (*m.*), the 3rd commandment. } *Gr.* §§ 500,
Y drydedd bennod (*f.*), the 3rd chapter. } 501.

Æ Y lle cyntaf, the first place. Yr ail fis (*m.*), the second month.
Gr. § 501, (a) and (b).

§ 254. *Eng.* The hundred and 9th psalm.

W. The 9th psalm after the hundred.¹ (Y nawfed salm ar ol y cant.)

The 205th page, *y pummed tudalen ar ol y ddau gant.*

The 310th hymn, *y degfed cmyrn ar ol y tri chant.*

The 101st psalm, *yr unfed salm ar ol y cant.* [Æ *Unfed*, not *cyntaf*.]

§ 255. VOCABULARY.

Command , commandment, gor-	Page , tudalen, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)
chymyn, <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>m.</i>)	Verse (of a chapter), adnod, <i>pl.</i> -
Psalm , salm, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	au (<i>f.</i>)

¹ Less common "after the hundredth." (Ar ol y ganfed.)

Verse or stanza, pènnill, <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>m.</i> or <i>f.</i>)	Tenth, dègfed.
Part, rhàn, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	Hundredth, cànfed.
Home (<i>n.</i>), càrtref, <i>pl.</i> -i or -ydd	Silent, dîstaw.
First, cýntaf : unfed. ² [(<i>m.</i>)	To begin, dèchreu.
Second, ail (<i>md.</i>), èilfed.	To mend, repair, trwsio.
Third, trydydd (<i>f.</i> trydedd.)	To keep, cadw.
Fourth, pedwerydd (<i>f.</i> pedwaredd.)	To make haste, brýsio.
Fifth, pummed.	To interfere (with), ymyraeth (<i>á</i>).
Sixth, chweched.	To obey, ufuddhau (<i>i</i>)
Seventh, seithfed.	To disobey, anufuddhau (<i>i</i> .)
Eighth, wythfed.	Must, &c. See above, § 252.
Ninth, nawfed.	Too, also, hefyd.
To make a noise, cadw sŵn (= to keep a noise).	After, (<i>prep.</i>), àr ôl (<i>rd.</i>)

§ 256. EXERCISES.

A.) A adwaenoch chwi hi? Adwaenom, ni a'i hadwaenom hi a'i rhieni hefyd.—Oni welwch chwi hwynt? Na welaf, ni welaf hwynt [mo honynt].—Mi a'th adwaen di; ond nid adwaen dy frodyr [mo'th frodyr] na'th chwiorydd.—A wêl hi fi? Na wel: ond hi a'm gwel i a'm brawd.—A wel efe ef? Gwel; ond ni wel mo honof fi.—Ni chlyw y dyn tlawd mo honoch chwi na hwythau; ond efe a'm clyw i.—Ni chlywn ni mo'r swn: a glywch chwi ef? Clywn.—Nid oes ar y wraig dlawd ddim eisieu dwfr; ond y mae arni eisieu llaeth.—A oes arnoch chwi mo [ddim] ofn y meddyg? Nac oes, nid oes arnaf mo'i [ddim ei] ofn ef, na'ch ofn chwithau chwaith.—Nid oes arnynt hwy mo'n [ddim ein] heisieu ni, ac nid oes arnom ninnau mo'u [ddim eu] heisieu hwythau.—Pwy a fedr drwsio yr hen esgidiau hyn? Ni fedrwn ni mo'u [ddim eu] trwsio.—Rhaid i chwi a'r plant ereill ddysgu y pedwerydd gorchymmyn.—Hwn yw'r gorchymmyn cyntaf, a hon yw'r adnod gyntaf yn y bennod.—Bwriadant gychwyn i'r wlad bell ar yr eilfed dydd o'r pummed mis.—Yma y dechreu y ddegfed bennod o ail Lyfr y Breninoedd.—Pa un yw'r tudalen? Y seithfed ar ol y cant.—“Y mae'n rhaid iddynt,” ebe'r offeiriad, “ddysgu yr unfed salm ar ol y cant.”—Rhaid i ni beidio â chadw swn.—Ni raid [nid rhaid] i mi fyned oddi cartref, os ydwyf yn dewis aros gartref.—Os rhaid i mi drwsio ei hosanau, rhaid i'r crydd drwsio ei esgidiau.—A raid i ni frysio?

² *Unfed* is used in conjunction with another numeral. *Unfed* ar hugain, 21st; yr *unfed* tudalen ar ol y cant, the 101st page.

Rhaid, y mae yn rhaid i chwi.—Yr ydym ni yn gwneyd ein dyledswydd, ac y mae'n rhaid iddynt hwythau beidio âg ym-yræth â ni.—Ai myfi a raid dalu am y dillad hyn? Ië.—Pa ham y rhaid i mi dalu am danynt?—Mae'r plant yn medru y rhan gyntaf o'r bedwaredd bennod; ond nid ydynt yn medru yr ail ran.—Yr ydym yn deall y tair adnod gyntaf yn y bennod.—Y mae'n rhaid i ni ufuddhau iddynt.—Pwy sydd i roi yr emyn allan? Yr offeiriad.

B.) The 3rd page, and the 2nd hymn.—On the 5th day in the 1st month.—You may take the fourth part of the corn.—Here beginneth the sixth chapter of the first Book of (THE) Kings.—|| *They* also must make haste.—You must not go from home so often: you must stay at home.—I have no home.—Must we tell you? No, you need not.—The clergyman is reading the first four verses of the eighth psalm.—How many verses are there in that psalm? Nine.—Which is the 3rd commandment?—You know him well, don't you? Yes, I know him, and I know you too.—Don't they see me? No, they see neither you nor your servant.—I do not know him; but I know his three sisters.—Can the shoemaker mend them? No, he cannot mend them.—We cannot praise you,—you are such poor writers.—He does not know the 100th psalm.—She is reading the 201st hymn.—Which page is it? The 307th.—You are **the third daughter**, are you not? No, I am **the fourth**.—We intend to set out on the tenth day of the ninth month.—|| *We* do not like the eighth hymn: do || *you*? Yes, we do; but we like the seventh better.—Which page is it in your book? The 103rd.—Why must || *they* and their sisters make haste to learn their lessons?—We must never tell an untruth,—we must always the truth.—The servant must work and be silent.—They must not make a noise.—I am not obliged to obey (to) him.—Why are you so fond of disobeying (to) me?—He cannot give out the hymn.—You need not do as they tell you.—They are doing their best, and their fellow-servants must not interfere with them.—Are you not afraid of us? No, we are not afraid of you.—He must learn the ten commandments.—He knows them as well as you (do).—|| *She* does not want the candles; but || *we* want them.—You may go away,—we don't want you.

C.) Hwy a'n gwelant ni; ond ni welant mo'r meddygon.—I bwy y mae'n rhaid i ni ufuddhau? I'ch rhieni.—Mi a fedraf y pedwerydd gorchymmyn ar dafod leferydd; ond ni fedraf mo'r bedwaredd salm.—Y mae'r trydydd pennill cyn gystal a'r ail.—Ni a'u hadwaenom hwy; ond nid adwaenom chwi [mo honoch chwi].—Ni chlyw efe mo honynt.—Mi a'i clywaf hi cyn gystal a chwithau.—Y mae yn rhaid iddynt fod yn ddistaw, a pheidio â chadw swm.—Os rhaid i ni fod yn ddistaw, rhaid i chwithau hefyd fod yn ddistaw.—Nid oes ond tri phenill yn yr emyn yma.—Y canfed tudalen, a'r nawfed emyn ar ol y cant.—Lle y mae cartref y ddynes dlawd yma? Nid oes ganddi yr un cartref.—Y mae'n rhaid iddynt beidio byth âg anufuddhau i ni eto.—A raid i ni gadw swm? Na raid, y mae'n rhaid i chwi beidio.—Nid wyf ddim yn ei ystyried [yn ystyried mo hono] yn farchogwr da.—A ydych chwi yn hoffi mo honi [ddim yn ei hoffi]? Nac ydym.—Nid rhaid iddynt frysio adref.

D.) You must keep these pretty things for your youngest sister.—There's (= *yonder*) Iorwerth running after the school children.—My master wants you to repair these.—We cannot repair them.—(To) whom must I obey? (To) your master and mistress.—She knows the 3rd stanza; but she does not know the 4th and the 5th.—They know || *us*; but they do not know our grandsons.—They hear || *you*; but they do not hear || *him*.—Does he see him? No.—She does not know them.—Why must the gardener obey (to) her commands? He need not obey (to) them.—“They must not,” said she, “interfere with me.”—The boy cannot read the 202nd hymn.—How many verses are there in that (= *there*) hymn? Six.—Are you not afraid of these bulls? No, we are not afraid of them.—Don't they want the sovereign? No, they don't want it.—We prefer the 7th stanza to the 6th.—She is not obliged to sell her pony.—He must never do so again.—Must we go with the stranger? No, you must not.—Must they give you the ten pounds? No, they need not.—We are obliged to disobey their commands.—If || *we* must help || *them*, || *they* must help || *us*.—|| *You* have comfortable homes; but this man has not a home.—Who must begin? **You and your two daughters** must begin.—Don't they understand us? No,

they don't understand you.—Don't you consider him a good doctor? No, I don't.—Which of the servants must do this work? The strongest of them.—Who must give out the hymn? **He** must.—The children must keep their books cleaner.—We never interfere with the clergyman's work.—You must all promise not to make a noise.—He need not come, if he is not ready.—The men are not obliged to work so hard.—Who must keep their books clean? **The school children** must.

CHAPTER XXIV.

[The object preceding,—*a* and *yr*,—"beth yr ydych chwi yn ei weled?"—"the man has nothing to spend,"—"par o fotasau," "y par botasau,"—*chweugain*,—"for aught I know."]

Notes and References.

§ 257. When the object of an inflected verb, or of a periphrastic verb *except those tenses mentioned below*, or of an infinitive depending on the verb, takes precedence in the clause, the expletive **a** is placed before the main verb.

The object, thus placed, is *antithetical*, unless it be a rel. or interr. pronoun. [Give the *antithetical* form of the personal pronoun. *Prel. Remarks*, § 17.]

Pwy *a* welwch chwi yn y ffordd?¹ *whom do you see in the road?*

Pa rai o'r botasau hyn *a* fydd efe yn eu gwisgo? *which of these boots does he (habitually) wear?*

Pwy o honom *a* fedrant hwy eu canmol? *which of us can they praise?*
Chwychwi yn unig a' ganmolant, it is you only they praise.


§ 258. When the object of a periphrastic verb beginning with *wyf*, &c., or *oeddown*, &c. (i.e. *the pres., perf., definite, imperf., and plup.*), or the object of an infinitive depending on the said periphrastic verb, precedes, the expletive **y** or **yr** is placed before the main verb.

Beth *yr* ydych chwi yn ei weled? *what do you see?*

Beth *yr* ydych chwi yn ceisio ei weled? *what are you trying to see?*

[Beth *yr* ydych chwi wedi ei weled?—Beth *yr* ydych chwi wedi ceisio ei weled?—Beth *yr* oeddych chwi yn ei weled?—Beth *yr* oeddych chwi wedi ei weled?]

¹ This construction is often ambiguous when the subject is a noun. "Pwy *a* wel y dyn?" may signify either "whom does the man see?" or "who sees the man?" The context must determine the meaning.

 The 3rd pers. of pres. and of perf. definite has always *mae*, pl. *maent*, when the object precedes.

Beth y *mae* efe yn ei weled? Beth y *maent* hwy yn ei weled?

§ 259. Beth yr ydych chwi yn *ei* weled? } Gr. §§ 601,
Pwy o honom a fedrant hwy *eu* canmol? } 602.

§ 260. "The man has nothing *to spend*." "We do not know what *to say*." In sentences of this character the infinitive, if *transitive*, is preceded by a poss. pronoun, as in the foregoing construction.

Nid oes gan y dyn ddim i'w wario, *the man has nothing to spend*.
Ni wyddom pa beth i'w ddweyd, *we do not know what to say*.

§ 261. "Par o fotasau," *a pair of boots*. Partitive genitive.
Gr. § 444.

When an article or its equivalent precedes the former noun, the prep. *o* is dropped, and the latter noun is treated like an adjective. See Gr. § 439.

Y par botasau, *the pair of boots*. Fy mhar menyg, *my pair of gloves*.
Par menyg pwy? *whose pair of gloves?*
Par menyg fy ngwraig, *my wife's pair of gloves*. } Gr. § 405.
[Y dorth fara hon, *this loaf of bread*.]

§ 262. VOCABULARY.

Punishment, cosp, cospedigaeth, pl.-au (<i>f</i> .)	To eat, bwyta. To drink, yfed.
Dinner, ciniaw (<i>coll.</i> cinio), pl.-au (<i>m</i> .)	To dine, ciniawa. To spend, gwario.
Boot, botâsen, pl. botâsau (<i>f</i> .)	To leave, gadael.
Pair, pâr, pl.-au (<i>m</i> .)	To punish, cospi.
Ten shillings, deg swllt, chweu-	Only (<i>adv.</i>), yn unig.
To ask, gofyn. [gain ² (<i>m</i> .)	At dinner, ar giniaw.
For aught (or anything) I know, am (ddim) a w'n i.	

§ 263. EXERCISES.

A.) Pa un o'r merched ieuainc a welwch chwi? Yr ieuengaf a'r harddaf o honynt a welaf.—Pa gosp a haedda'r plant drwg yma?—Chwychwi yn unig a ganmolant.—Beth a dâl y par botasau hyn? Efe a dal chweugain.—Yr ydych i gyd yn bobl onest am (ddim) a w'n i.—Pwy a welant yn cerdded ar

² = chwe ugain, *six score, i.e. of pence*.

hyd y ffordd? Mab a merch y meddyg.—Beth a all dyn dall ei weled?—Ai y gareg yma a fedr efe ei thafu i'r afon? Ië.—Pa rai o'r parau hosanau hyn a ewyllysiwch eu cael? Y rhai cochion yna.—Nid nyhi a fedr efe eu cospi.—Nid hyhi, ond ei chwaer, a adwaenom.—Mi w'n i a chwithau beth a dal y botasau hyn.—Beth a fyddwch yn ei yfed? Dwfr.—Pa sawl milltir a fedr wch chwi eu cerdded mewn diwrnod?—Beth ydyw enwau y dynion anonest hyny (y rhai) a fwriadwch eu cospi?—Plant da yn unig a ganmola dynion da.

B.) [*Use the inflected verb: § 257.*] Whom do they see in that garden? They see **the clergyman's three daughters**.—How many languages do you know?—How much is that pair of boots worth? It is not worth ten shillings,—it is worth eight or nine shillings.—It is only good children they love and praise.—Which (*sing.*) of you can they help?—What punishment do they deserve? They deserve no punishment.—Which (*pl.*) of us do you wish to punish?—They are both at home for aught I know.—The lady knows as well as you how much your pair of black gloves is worth.—Is it I they wish to see? No, it is your parents they wish to see.—Whom do they know in this country? They do not know anybody.—What do they (habitually) drink with their dinner? Sometimes water, and sometimes wine.—What do you think of our new church? It is a very pretty church.—They are all good scholars for aught we know.—It is you, not your eldest sister, we praise.

C.) Pwy yr ydych chwi yn ei ammheu? Chwychwi yr ydym yn eu hammheu.—Pa gospedigaeth y maent hwy yn ei haeddu? Nid ydynt yn haeddu unrhyw gospedigaeth.—Arian pwy y mae'r dyn ieuanc diog yma yn eu gwario? Nid eich arian chwi y mae efe yn eu gwario.—Dyma yr hyn yr wyf yn ei ofyn iddynt.—Ai beudy y mae'r amaethwr yn myned i'w adeiladu yn y fan yma? Nage, ystabl.—Nid llaeth, ond gwin, y mae efe yn ei yfed.—Y pennillion hyn yr ydym yn eu hoffi oreu.—Beth y mae'r plant yn ei fwyta? Afalau a rhwynyn y maent yn eu bwyta.—Pa faint y mae eich ewythr yn myned i'w adael i chwi? Ni wyddom ni ddim.—Pa faint yr ydych yn ei ofyn am y par botasau hyn? Deg swllt [chweugain].—Nid y ganfed salm, ond y seithfed salm ar ol y cant, y mae yr offeiriad yn ei darllen.

D.) [*Use the periphrastic verb: § 258.*] Which of these stanzas does the lady like best? These five.—It is the truth I tell you.—What do your sons and daughters in law intend to do in London? I do not know.—Whom do you love? I don't love **you** (*sing.*)—I love **your cousin** (*f.*)—Is this the young man he is trying to teach? Yes.—We do not know what fields our uncle intends to sell.—What are we eating? You are eating **bread and cheese**.—Is it water they are drinking? No, they are drinking **wine**.—This is what they say about him.—We want to know whom (*pl.*) you are praising now.—Whose money are you spending? My father's money.—Which of them do you know best? We know **your (female) cousins** best.—What is she going to ask (*Ex. § 222*) me? I don't know what she is going to ask you.—Is this all (that) he is going to leave to your wife? Yes.

E.) Nid oes ganddo ddim i'w adael i neb.—Gyda phwy yr ydych chwi yn myned i giniawa heddyw? Gyda hen gyfaill i'm tad.—Pa le y mae eich tad a'ch mam-yng-nghyfraith? Y maent ar giniaw.—Beth sydd gan y saer i giniaw? Nid oes ganddo ddim ond bara a chaws.—Y maent i gyd yn dda am (ddim) a ŵyr efe.—Ai eich par hosanau chwi ydyw y rhai hyn? Ië.—Y mae genyf fi amryw barau o esgidiau da.—Par botasau pwy sydd gan y crydd? Fy mhar botasau i.—Nid oes genym yr un geiniog i'w gwario.—Ni ŵyr y meddyg ddim pa beth i'w ddweyd wrth y wraig glaf.—Rhaid i chwi beidio âg yfed fy ngwin i.—Ai eich botasen chwi y mae'r crydd yn ei thrwsio?—A oes genych chwi rywbeth i'w ofyn i mi? Nac oes, ddim.—Beth a fyddwch chwi yn ei yfed gyda'ch ciniaw? Llaeth neu ddwr.—Pa rai o honom yr ydych yn eu hadnabod oreu? Chwychwi a'ch dwy chwaer hynaf yr ydym yn eu hadnabod oreu.—Os oes arnoch eisieu gwybod hyny, rhaid i chwi ofyn i'ch merch-yng-nghyfraith.—Eich par menyg chwi ydyw y rhai hyn, onide? Ië.

F.) You have no right to ask me what I am doing.—He is not willing to give me that pair of gloves.—What has the servant to do in the stable? He has nothing to do.—He wants his dinner.—They are not afraid of your punishing them.—They want us to dine with them.—We cannot come with you now,—we are at dinner.—You are too fond of good dinners.

—How many pairs of stockings has your son? He has several pairs.—What punishment do I deserve? You deserve no punishment for aught we know.—Who is to dine with him to-day? Two or three of his best friends. Have you anything to say against us? No, nothing.—Why do they ask us to dine with them so often?—I have not a pound to leave to anybody.—She does not know what the sick boy can eat.—They have nothing to drink.—You must not ask the old lady how old she is.—I want him to mend this boot for me.—My master and mistress are at dinner; and the children are out in the garden playing.—It is only my grandfather that he knows.—What is the value of these boots,—are they worth ten shillings? We do not know what they are worth.—Why do you ask us what we drink with our dinner?—If they want to know what the lady and gentleman drink with their dinner, they must ask the servant.—Have you *nothing* to tell me? No, I have nothing to tell || *you*; but I have many things to tell your two aunts.—What! are you still at dinner? Yes, we are.

CHAPTER XXV.

[“I am hungry,” “I am thirsty,” “I long,”—“who wants?” “who is afraid?” “who is hungry?” “who is thirsty?” “who longs?”—“what do I want?” “what am I afraid of?”—“I want to have my boot mended,”—“this loaf of bread,”—*ceiniogwerth*.]

Notes and References.

§ 264. “I am hungry.” “I am thirsty.” “I long.”

I am hungry.

Y mae arnaf newyn (or eisieu bwyd), = *there is on me hunger* (or *want*)
Yr wyf yn newynog, = *I am hungry*. [of food].

I am thirsty.

Y mae arnaf syched (or eisieu diod), = *there is on me thirst* (or *want of*)
Yr wyf yn sychedig, = *I am thirsty*. [drink].

I long for or to.¹

Y mae arnaf hiraeth am, = *there is on me a longing for*.

Yr wyf yn hiraethu am, = *I am longing for*.

¹ To may also be expressed by *o eisieu* (=from want). I long to see my dear parents, *y mae arnaf hiraeth o eisieu gwelod fy anwyl rieni*.

Give the negative of *mae*. *Exercises*, § 212.

§ 265. **Want.** Read *Exercises*, § 212.

“*Who* wants?” *Want*, headed by an interrogative, a relative, or an antithetical subject, will be expressed in Welsh in the following manner. [Cf. “*who* has?” *Ex.* § 150.]

“Who wants a spoon?”

Pwy sydd arno² eisieu llŵy? } (= *who is with want of a spoon*
 Pwy sydd eisieu llŵy? (*coll.*) } *on him?*
 Pwy sydd âg eisieu llŵy (arno)?³ }

“Who wants to sleep?”

Pwy sydd arno eisieu cysgu? pwy sydd eisieu cysgu? pwy sydd âg eisieu cysgu (arno)?

“Who wants me?”

Pwy sydd arno fy eisieu (i)? pwy sydd fy eisieu (i)? pwy sydd â fy eisieu i (arno)?

“Who wants me to eat?”

Pwy sydd arno eisieu i mi fwyta? pwy sydd eisieu i mi fwyta?

The equivalents of *who is afraid?*—*who is hungry?*—*who is thirsty?*—*who longs (for or to)?* have the same construction as *who wants?*

§ 266. “*What* do I want?” When the *object* of “*want*,” or of the infin. depending on “*want*,” takes precedence, the clause will be thus rendered into Welsh.

“What do I want?”

Beth sydd arnaf ei eisieu?⁴ beth sydd arnaf eisieu? (*coll.*)
 Eisieu beth sydd arnaf? (= *want of what is on me?*)

² The number, person, and gender of the pronom. prep. depend on the subject of the clause.

Ai dyma'r wraig (yr hon) sydd arni eisieu'r dorth? *is this the woman who wants the loaf?*

Ai dyma'r gwragedd (y rhai) sydd arnynt eisieu'r torthau? *are these the women who want the loaves?*

Nyni sydd arnom eisieu'r torthau, **we** want the loaves.

³ This construction is more correct than the two preceding, but less common except in its elliptical form, *pwy sydd âg eisieu llwy?*

⁴ Probably for “*beth sydd arnaf â'i eisieu,*” = *what is on me with its want?*

“What do I want to hear?”

Beth sydd arnaf eisieu ei glywed?⁵ eisieu clywed beth sydd arnaf!

“What do I want you to hear?”

Beth sydd arnaf eisieu i chwi ei glywed?⁶

The equivalents of *what am I afraid of?* [*of what am I afraid?*]*—what am I afraid of hearing?—what am I afraid of their hearing?* have the same construction as *what do I want?* &c.

§ 267. “I bwy y mae arnoch eisieu danfon hwn?” If the part of the clause preceding the verb is the object of a prep., *mae* should be used. *Ex.* § 95, c.

I bwy y mae arnoch eisieu danfon hwn? *to whom do you want to send this?*

A phwy y mae arnynt eisieu ymweled? *whom do they want to visit?*

§ 268. Eng. I want to have my boot mended.

W. I want to have mend (*or* the mending) my boot.
(*Y mae arnaf eisieu cael trwsio fy motasen.*)

§ 269. “A loaf of bread,” torth o fara. *Gr.* § 444.

“This loaf of bread,” y dorth fara yma. *Ex.* § 261.

§ 270. VOCABULARY.

Hunger, newyn (<i>m.</i>), èisieu bwyd.	Loaf, torth, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)
Thirst, syched (<i>m.</i>), eisieu diod.	Cup, cwpan, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i> N.W.; <i>m.</i>
Food, bwyd, <i>pl.</i> -ydd (<i>m.</i>)	Spoon, llwy, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>). [S.W.]
Drink, diod, <i>pl.</i> -ydd (<i>f.</i>)	Lawyer, cyfrèithiwr (<i>m.</i>) <i>Gr.</i> § 130,
Longing, hiraeth (<i>m.</i>)	Workman, gwèithiwr (<i>m.</i>) [(<i>a.</i>)
Worth (e.g. <i>two-pennyworth</i>), gwèrth (<i>m.</i>)	Shepherd, bugail, <i>pl.</i> bugeiliaid
Pennyworth, ceiniogwerth ⁷ (<i>f.</i>)	Else (= <i>other</i>), arall. [(<i>m.</i>)
Halfpennyworth, dimeiwerth (<i>f.</i>)	Hungry, newynog.
Two-pennyworth, gwerth dwy	Thirsty, sychedig.
Comb, crib, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>) [geiniog.	To be hungry.
Nut, cnèuen, <i>pl.</i> cnàu (<i>f.</i>)	To be thirsty.
	To long (for or to.)

⁵ Probably for “beth sydd arnaf *âg* eisieu ei glywed,” = *what is on me with want of its hearing?*

⁶ Probably for “beth sydd arnaf *âg* eisieu i chwi,” &c.

⁷ In “ceiniogwerth” and “dimeiwerth,” *gwerth* follows the genitive and with it forms a compound word, as in Eng. In other cases it precedes the genitive, and is written separately. Six-pennyworth, *gwerth chwe cheiniog*; a shilling’s worth, *gwerth swllt*.

To break ; cut, tòri.

To satisfy hunger, tori newyn.⁸

To quench thirst, tori syched.

To comb, cribo.

To sleep, cysgu.

To send, ànfon, dànfon.

To open, agor.

To shut, cau.

To shoe, pedoli.

§ 271. EXERCISES.

A.) Y mae ar y gweithwyr eisieu bwyd [newyn].—Yr ydym oll yn newynog ac yn sychedig.—Nid oes arnom eisieu bwyd ; ond y mae arnom eisieu diod.—Y mae arnom hiraeth [yr ydym yn hiraethu] am ein rhieni.—Nid oes ar neb o honynt hiraeth am [o eisieu] eich gweled.—Pwy sydd (arno) eisieu'r gwpan arian yma? Myfi sydd (arnaf) ei heisieu.—Honacw ydyw'r wraig foneddig (ag) sydd (arni) eisieu siarad â'r cyfreithiwr.—Beth sydd ar y dyn dieithr sydd wrth y drws ei eisieu? Eisieu gweled y cyfreithiwr neu ei wraig sydd arno.—Pwy sydd â syched (arno)? Y bugail.—Pa rai o'r bugeiliaid sydd (arnynt) ein heisieu ni? Nid oes ar neb o honynt eich eisieu.—Dyma'r gweithwyr sydd arnynt eisieu i chwi roi gwaith iddynt.—Pwy o honoch sydd arno eisieu i fy nhad wario ei arian? Nid oes ar neb o honom eisieu i'ch tad na chwithau wario dim.—Ai tydi sydd arnat ofn y bugail?—Nid ofn y bugail sydd arnaf, ond ofn ei gi.—Ai chwydychwi sydd âg eisieu bwyd (arnoch)? Nage, nid nynt,—y gweithwyr sydd arnynt eisieu bwyd.—Pa rai o honoch sydd arnynt hiraeth am eu cartref? Y mae ar rai o honom hiraeth mawr am eu cartref.—Dacw'r saer sydd arno syched bob amser.—Y mae efe a'i gyd-weithwyr (*Ex.* § 167) yn rhy hoff o ddiod.—Dwfr ydyw'r ddiod oreu iddynt.—Beth arall sydd ar y cyfreithiwr ei eisieu? Nid oes arno eisieu dim arall.—Nid y rhai hyn [*coll.* y rhai'n] ydyw'r gwartheg sydd arnom eu hofn.—Beth arall sydd arni hi ofn ei ddweyd?—Ai dyma'r llythyr sydd arni hi ofn i mi ei agor a'i ddarllen? Ië.—Dyma'r ddau ddrws sydd arnom eisieu i chwi eu cau.—Y mae ar y gwr boneddig eisieu cael pedoli ei geffyl.—Pwy sydd (arno) eisieu cael tori ei wallt? Y mae ar dri neu bedwar o honom eisieu cael tori ein gwallt.—I ba un o'r plant y mae arni hi eisieu danfon [anfon] ceiniogwerth o gnau, a gwerth tair ceiniog o rwnyn ac afalau?—Pwy sydd arno eisieu cribo ei wallt? Myfi sydd.

⁸ Cf. Eng. "to break one's fast."

B.) What else do the two lawyers want? This is all (that) they want.—Of what is she afraid? She is afraid of the shepherd's large dog.—Which of us three (*f.*) do you want? We want **the youngest of you**.—They are not hungry, but they are thirsty.—He longs for (**HIS**) home, and for his wife and children.—Who wants them? **The two shepherds** want them.—These are the lawyers whom we want to see.—Which door does he want the servant to shut? That (*near*) door.—What do you want the lawyer to send you? I want him to send me his silver cup (*Gr.* § 408).—We do not know how many of these workmen are hungry.—Is it I they are afraid of? No: they are afraid of **me**.—It is not money that the shepherds want: they want **drink**.—Where are the young men who want to have their hair cut? There (= *yonder*) they are speaking to the shopkeeper's sons.—How much does the shepherd want? He wants six-pennyworth.—Is this the little girl who wants to have her hair combed? Yes; but you have no comb to comb it.—Who wants nuts? We don't want any.—What does the little boy want me to send him? A pennyworth of nuts, and two-pennyworth of plums.—Are these the two letters that you are afraid of my opening? No.—Which of them are afraid of sleeping in these beds? They are all afraid.—To whom do you want to send these loaves of bread? To the shepherd's wife.—To which field do you want the two servants to go?—What else does she want? She wants a cup (*Ex.* § 166) of tea or a cup of coffee.—We long to visit you; but we cannot leave (**OUR**) home now.—For whom do you want to buy six-pennyworth of nuts? For the shepherd's boy.—Who has my father's silver cup? **I** have it.—Which door are they afraid of the servant shutting? The garden door.—Is it the lawyer's wife that she is afraid of seeing? No, it is the lawyer, not his wife, that she is afraid of seeing.

C.) Ai myfi sydd arnoch ei ofn? Nage, nid chwychwi, ond y cyfreithwyr sydd arnom eu hofn.—Os oes arno eisieu bwyd, dyma fwyd iddo ef.—Pwy sydd â hiraeth am danynt? Y mae ar amryw o honom hiraeth am danynt.—Dacw'r hen wraig sydd arni eisieu torth o fara.—Beth yr ydych yn myned i'w gymmeryd i dori eich newyn? Bara a chaws,—nid oes dim yn well.—Y mae arnom oll eisieu dwfr neu laeth i dori ein

syched.—Beth sydd arnynt eisieu ei ddweyd wrthyf?—A ydyeh chwi yn sychedig? Nac ydwyf; ond yr ydwyf yn newynog.—Pa rai o honynt sydd (arnynt) eisieu siarad â mi? —Pa un o honom ein dwy sydd ar eich cymmydog ei heisieu? Yr hynaf o honoch.—Pwy sydd ar y bugail ofn ei weled? Nid nyni sydd arno ofn eu gweled.—Ai chwychwi sydd (arnoch) eisieu cael pedoli eich ceffylau? Ië.—Y maent oll yn hiraethu am ddyfod adref.—Nid oes arnom (na) newyn na syched; ond y mae arnom hiraeth am ein rhieni.—Pwy sydd (arno) eisieu'r grib yma? Myfi sydd (arnaf) ei heisieu.—Pa ham y mae arnynt ofn cysgu yn yr ystafelloedd hyn? Ni wyddom ni ddim.—Pr hen wraig sy'n byw yn y ty acw y mae arnom eisieu danfon [anfon] y dorth fara yma.

D.) We want some drink,—milk or water,—to quench our thirst.—They must not break these cups.—What do you want to satisfy your hunger? We want something that we can eat.—If you are hungry, here is food for you.—This is not the door we are afraid of your shutting.—We do not know who wants you.—**The lawyer** wants me.—Who is thirsty? **The lawyer** is thirsty.—How many of them long to see us? They all long to see you.—These workmen want something to satisfy their hunger: can you give them a loaf of bread?—Tea is better than wine to quench thirst.—Are these workmen fond of drink? Several of them are too fond of drink.—Which of the children wants a cup and a spoon? That little boy.—Which of them wants to speak to me? **The eldest sister** wants to speak to you.—How much money do the workmen want? They want ten shillings.—What is he afraid of telling us?—Is this the silver cup that the lawyer's eldest daughter wants me to give her? Yes.—Whom (*pl.*) do you want, and whom (*pl.*) do these workmen want?—Is it this gentleman who wants to have his horse shod?—Are you hungry? No, we are not hungry; but we want to have some drink to quench our thirst.—Nobody longs for them.—What do they want their parents to send them? A shilling's worth of apples and pears.—To whom do you want the servant to send this loaf of bread? To a poor old woman in the village.—She must not take || *my* loaf of bread.—We do not know of anything better than tea to quench thirst.

CHAPTER XXVI.

[*Ataf, oddi arnaf, oddi wrthyf, rhagof*,—"with whom are you angry?" "on whom I depend,"—*i*, at (*to*),—*o*, *oddi wrth, oddi ar, gân, rhâg* (*from*),—"y goeden rwnyn."]

§ 272. Pronominal prepositions.

Ataf (*fi*), *to me*. *Gr.* § 378. *Oddi wrthyf* (*fi*) *from me*. *Gr.* § 380.
Oddi arnaf (*fi*), *from me*. *Gr.* § 378. *Rhagof* (*fi*), *from me*. *Gr.* § 379.

Notes and References.

§ 273. Interrogative and relative pronouns under government of prepositions. *Gr.* §§ 711, 865.

Wrth bwy yr ydych chwi yn ddig? = *with whom are you angry?*

*Pwy yr ydych chwi yn ddig wrtho?*¹ (not common) = *whom are you angry with him?*

*Yr hwn yr wyf yn ymddibynu arno,*² = *whom I depend on him.*

Ar yr hwn yr wyf yn ymddibynu (less common), = *on whom I depend.*

§ 274. *To, i; ât* (md.)

I, to, noting motion towards a place or object, into which an *entrance* is made. [Opposed to *o*.]

Pa bryd yr ydych yn myned i Lundain? *when are you going to London?*

Into is expressed by *i* or *i mewn i*. [Opposed to *o* or *allan o*.] *Y maent yn dyfod i'r [i mewn i'r] ty,* *they are coming into the house.*

At, to, = towards, noting proximity, but not *entrance*: hence it is used before *persons*; and also before *places* and *things*, when entrance into them is not implied. [Opposed to *oddi wrth*,—see below.]

Pwy sydd i fyned at y cyfreithiwr? *who is to go to the lawyer?*

When *to* implies *for the benefit* or *advantage of*, &c. (e.g. "after verbs expressive of gift, delivery," &c.), it is expressed by *i*, even before persons. *Y mae efe yn anfon y gwpan arian yma i Iorwerth,* *he sends this silver cup to Iorwerth.*

§ 275. **From**, *o; allan o; oddi*³ *wrth; oddi ar; gân* (md.); *rhâg* (rd.)

¹ ⚡ Not "wrtho ef."

² ⚡ Not "arno ef."

³ The prep. *oddi* is not used by itself: it is for the most part followed by an *adverb* or *another preposition*. *Oddi yma* (=from here), hence: *oddi aew*, from yonder: *oddi yno* (=from there, *o. of s.*) thence: *oddi rhwng*, from between.

a) Distinction between **o**, **oddi wrth**, and **oddi ar**.

O, *from*, opposed to "to,"—see above, § 274.

Pa bryd ymae hi yn dyfod o Lundain? *when is she coming from London?*

When **from** is exactly equivalent to *out of*, it may be expressed by *o* or *allan o*. [Opposed to *i* or *i mewn i*.] Y maent yn dyfod o'r [allan o'r] ty, *they are coming from [out of] the house*.

Oddi wrth, *from*, = from by, from besides or by the side of.

Oddi wrth y wal, *from* (*i.e. from close to or touching*) *the wall*.

Pa ham yr ydych yn ei ddanfôn ef oddi wrthyh? *why do you send him from you?*

Oddi ar, *from*, = from on, off (before inanimate objects); from one's person, possession, &c., noting privation (before animate objects.)

Y mae hi yn cymmeryd y cyllyll oddi ar y bwrdd, a'r afalau oddi ar yr eneth fach, *she is taking the knives from the table, and the apples from the little girl*.

From used metaphorically is generally expressed by *oddi wrth*: sometimes by *oddi ar*. It is clear from what you say that, &c., *mae'n eglur oddi wrth yr hyn a ddywedwch mai*, &c.

b) Distinction between **gan** and **oddi wrth**.

Gan, *from*, = from the agent himself acting without the intervention of other means. It occurs most frequently with the verb *cael*.

Byddaf yn cael swllt yn anl gan fy ewythr, *I often get a shilling from my uncle*.

Oddi wrth, *from*, = from by or besides, acting by means of an intervening instrument. [Opposed to *at*.]

Byddaf yn fynych yn derbyn llythyrau oddi wrth fy nghyfaill sy'n byw yng Nghaerfyrddin, *I often receive letters from my friend who lives at Carmarthen*.

c) Distinction between **rhag** and **oddi wrth**.

Rhag, *from*, when not in actual contact with or possession of (often) something dangerous or unpleasant, or what one wishes to avoid.

Y mae'r plant yn dianc rhag y cŵn, *the children are running away from the dogs*.

From, with a participle, and noting prevention (e.g. to keep one *from falling*), is expressed by *rhag* with infinitive. Yr ydym yn ceisio cadw'r bachgen rhag myned atynt, *we are endeavouring to keep the boy from going to them*.

Oddi wrth, *from*, when in actual contact or mixed up with or close to.

Y mae'r dynion yn dianc oddi wrth eu gwaith, *the men are running away from their work.*

Obs. The difference between *rhag* and *oddi wrth* is not always strictly observed.

§ 276. The same verb may be followed by the different forms according to the idea implied in "from."

"Dianc o'r carchar," to run away (or escape) *from* or *out of* prison.

"Dianc oddi ar ddyn," to run away *from* a man (*from his grasp*).

"Dianc oddi wrth ddyn," to run away *from* a man (*from close to him*).

"Dianc rhag dyn," to run away *from* a man (*not being necessarily in sight of him, and unwilling or fearing to come under his power*).

"Cael llyfr gan gyfaill," to have or get a book *from* a friend (*given by him personally*).

"Cael llyfr oddi wrth gyfaill," to have or receive a book *from* a friend (*sent by him through a medium*).

§ 277. Y goeden rwnyn, *the pear tree.* Gr. § 408.

§ 278. VOCABULARY.

Carmarthen, Caerfyrddin. Gr.	To hide, cùddio.
§ 147.	To hide one's self, ymgùddio. ⁴
Wall, gwâl, <i>pl.</i> -iau (<i>f.</i>)	To escape, run away, dianc.
Orchard, pèrllan, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	To steal, lladràta, dŵyn.
Prison, carchar, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)	To expect, disgwyl.
Danger, perygl, <i>pl.</i> -on (<i>m.</i>)	To remember, cofio.
Hay, gwàir, <i>pl.</i> gwèiriau (<i>m.</i>)	To save, achub.
Shelf, silff, <i>pl.</i> -oedd (<i>f.</i>)	To drown; to be or get drowned, boddi.
Reason, rhêswm, <i>pl.</i> rhesymau (<i>m.</i>)	Near (TO), agos (at or i).
Cause, achos, <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>m.</i>)	Unwilling, anfôddlon, anewyllÿsgar.
To receive, dèrbyn.	To and into. See above.
To fall, sÿrthio, cŵympo.	From and out of. See above.
To depend (on), ymddibynu (<i>ar</i>).	
From door to door, o ddrws i ddrws.	
To send [give] regards to, cofio at (=to remember to.)	
My friend's = my friend's house, ty fy nghyfaill.	

§ 279. EXERCISES.

A.) Nid ydyw'r caeau (y rhai) y mae y gweithwyr yn myned iddynt, ddim ym mhell oddi wrth dy fy ewythr.—At bwy y mae hi yn bwriadu ysgrifenu? At gyfnither iddi sydd yu byw yng Nghaerfyrddin.—Pa le y mae'r cyfreithwyr (y

⁴ What is the force of the prefix *ym*? Gr. § 224.

rhai) yr ydych yn myned i ddanfôn y llythyrau hyn atynt, yn byw? Yn Llundain.—Y mae'r bobl dda yma yn gofyn o ba wlad yr ydych yn dyfod, ac i ba wlad yr ydych yn myned.—Y mae'r berllan (yr hon) y mae'r garddwyr yn dyfod o honi, yn berllan fawr iawn.—Yr ydym yn mesur oddi wrth y goeden afalau at y wal.—Pwy sydd yn lladrata [dŵyn] enau ac afalau oddi arnaf? Nid oes neb o honom ni yn lladrata na chnau nac afalau oddi arnoch.—Pa rai o honoch sy'n cymmeryd llyfrau oddi ar y silffoedd hyn? Y rhai hyn sydd.—Bydd Myfanwy yn cael par o fenyg bob blwyddyn gan ei modryb, a bydd yn derbyn dau neu dri o lythyrau bob hanner blwyddyn oddi wrth ei chyfnither sy'n byw yn agos i Gaerfyrddin.—Gan bwy y maent yn cael arian i brynu dillad newyddion? Gan eu dwy fodryb.—Rhag pwy y mae'r gweision yn dianc? Rhag eu meist'r a'u meistres.—Pa ham yr ydych yn dianc oddi wrth eich gwaith? Nid ydym yn ei hoffi,—dyna'r achos pa ham yr ydym yn dianc oddi wrtho.—Rhaid iddynt beidio â dŵyn [lladrata] afalau oddi ar y coed.—Y mae'n well gan rai plant fyned at yr ysgol nag i'r ysgol.—Oddi wrth bwy yr ydych yn dyfod? Yr ydym yn dyfod oddi wrth y meddyg, ac yr ydym yn myned at yr offeiriad.—Nid oes dim rheswm yn ei eiriau.—Y mae'r bugail yn bur anfoddlon [anewyllysgar] i fyned i'r mynydd at ei ddefaid.—Y mae arnaf ofn i chwi syrthio [gŵympo] oddi ar eich ceffyl.

B.) To whom are you writing this long letter? To a friend of mine who lives near (to) Carmarthen.—This is the gentleman from whom we get pears, plums, and nuts.—To which of us are you going to give the reward? To the best scholar.—From whom are you coming? From a friend of my father's.—From whose house is she coming? From her uncle's.—There is no reason in what you say.—The country, to which we are going, is not very beautiful.—From whom do parents take sharp knives? From little children.—These silly boys run out of the orchard into the deep river.—Why does the shoemaker send (to) me such ugly boots?—Is it not necessary to take the sharp razor from the boy? Yes; and it is also necessary to take the bottles and cups from the table.—The carpenter does not like his work,—that is the reason (W. = *the cause*) why he is running away from it.—Is it to Carmarthen you

daughters-in-law are going? Yes.—Why does she take the books from the shelf? She wants to read them,—that is the reason why she takes them.—From whom do the servants get money to pay for their new shoes and hats? From their master.—It is very seldom they get anything from us.—We expect several letters from some friends of ours at Carmarthen, and we are writing two or three to other friends who live in another town.—To which of the orchards are we to go? To that (= *yonder*).—There is no reason in what the lawyer says.—Where is the smith's son-in-law going? To a small village near Carmarthen.—Why do the boys and girls hide their faces from us? They are afraid of you,—that is the reason why they hide their faces from you.—From whom are they trying to escape? They are trying to escape from no one.—The gardeners are going to the orchard, not coming from it.—It is seldom we receive any letters from her.—Which of you is afraid of my falling from my horse?—Is it from these shelves you take the books? No.—You must not take the nuts from her.—Why does he hide himself from me?—What have you to spend? I have only ten shillings to spend.—Who steals the hay from the cow-house? I do not know.

C.) Nid oes neb o honynt yn ceisio achub y dyn rhag boddi.—Pa ham yr ydych yn dianc oddi wrth eich cyfeillion?—Y mae'r ei yn boddi.—Y mae efe yn ceisio cuddio pob peth oddi wrthyf.—Pwy sydd (arno) eisieu eich cadw oddi wrthynt?—Nid yw'r meddyg ddim ym mhell oddi wrthyf: y mae efe yn agos atoch.—Nid ydwyf yn cofio dim am dano.—Yr ydym yn awr yn agos at ein [i'n] cartref.—Nid yw'r bobl ddiog yma yn gwneyd dim ond myned o dy i dy, ac o ddrws i ddrws.—Y maent oll yn cofio atoch yn garedig iawn.—Y mae'r dynion mewn perygl o foddi, ac nid oes neb yn ceisio eu hachub rhag boddi.—Y mae'r gwas yn lladrata yr yd oddi ar y ceffylau, a'r gwair o'r ystabl.—Rhag pwy y mae gwraig y bugail yn ym-guddio? Rhag y masnachwr,—y mae arni hi arian iddo.—Y mae'r dyn (yr hwn) yr wyf yn danfon y llythyr yma ato, yn grefftwr rhagorol.—Nis gallaf achub y gaseg lās rhag boddi.—Pa rai o honynt sy'n ceisio dianc (allan) o'r carchar? Nid oes yr un o honynt yn ceisio dianc (allan) o'r carchar.—A ad-waenoch chwi y foneddiges ieuanc hardd acw (yr hon) y mae

eich brawd hynaf yn siarad â hi? Nac adwaen, nid adwaen mo honi.—Oddi wrth bwy yr ydych yn disgwyl derbyn arian? Oddi wrth awdwr y llyfr hwn.—Y mae'r boneddwr (yr hwn) yr ydych yn siarad am dano, yn gefnder i'm cymmydog.—Nis gallwn ymddibynu arnynt.—Chwi a allwch ymddibynu arno, —ni bydd un amser yn dweyd anwiredd.—Y mae yn gymmaint pechod dŵyn gwair a dŵyn aur.—Y mae'r holl blant yn dianc o'r ysgol.—Pa ham y mae arnynt eisieu i ni foddi ein cwn?—Pa cyn belled [pa mor bell] ydym ni oddi wrth y dref? Y mae'r eneth yn cuddio ei gwyneb rhagom.—Ai am danom ni y maent yn siarad? Nage, am eich taid a'ch nain.—Anaml iawn y byddwn ni yn derbyn llythyrau oddi wrthynt.—Nid arnoch chwi, ond ar eich dŵy fodryb, yr ydym yn ymddibynu.—A welwch chwi yr afal yn syrthio oddi ar y goeden? Gwelaf.

D.) Why does he steal the corn from the horse?—I am unwilling to take this book from you.—Why does he hide himself from you? He does not hide himself from us.—The gentlemen, to whom we write these letters, are very liberal and always kind to poor people.—I want to know your reason why you think so.—We expect several letters to-day from our nephews and nieces.—About whom are they speaking? About us.—The servants do not try to save the mare from being drowned [from drowning].—We are all trying to escape from this prison.—Some of the boys are stealing plums from the orchard, and nuts from the little girls.—We are measuring from the wall of the orchard to that (= *yonder*) pear tree.—I cannot save you from going to prison.—You must not depend on the men from whom you expect to receive letters.—Why don't they try to save the dog from being drowned?—We don't run away from the schoolmaster.—The men are escaping from prison.—The man is being drowned.—Why do you ask the shepherd to drown his three dogs?—Who wants to hide the hammer and nails from the carpenter?—They are not far from us.—You must not go near (to) that dangerous rock.—I do not remember what her name is.—My parents send their kind regards to you.—Iorwerth is near the church, and Arthur is going into church, and Myvanwy is in church.—The old lady, to whom your aunt is speaking, cannot

remember anything.—You need not fear,—the doctor is near you.—Why is the smith's wife so fond of going from house to house?—The man is in danger of falling from his horse.—How far is the apple tree from the wall? It is five or six feet from the wall.—They keep me here from day to day.—On whom does she depend? She depends on || you.—I must run to him,—he is in great danger of being drowned.—Her grandmother does nothing but go from door to door.—Where are they all going to-day? They are going to their uncle's.—There are only three yards from the wall to the plum tree.—My aunt sends her kind regards to your mother and sisters.

CHAPTER XXVII.

[Adjective pronouns, *much, many, little, few, &c.*,—*ag* and *nag* before *sydd, yw*, and *mac*,—*a* and *y* after *ag* and *nag*,—*mwy, chwaneg, rhagor*, —“nid oes *fawr* o goed yn y berllan.”]

Notes and References.

§ 280. **Adjective pronouns** expressive of number and quantity (corresponding to *many, much, too many, too much, little, few, &c.*) require the prep. *o* between them and the noun or pronoun. *Gr.* § 444 : also §§ 557, 558.

Much hay, <i>llawer o wair.</i>	Too much corn, <i>gormod o ôd.</i>
Many castles, <i>llawer¹ o gestyll.</i>	Too many stockings, <i>gormod o hosanau.</i>
As much wheat, <i>cymmaint o wenith.</i>	A little honey, <i>ychydig² [tipyn] o fêl.</i>
As many loaves, <i>cymmaint [cynnifer] o dorthau.</i>	A few lambs, <i>ychydig² o wŷyn.</i>
More oats, <i>mwy[rhagor, chwaneg] o geirch.</i>	Less oats, <i>llai o geirch.</i>
Most men, <i>y rhan fwyaf o ddynion.</i>	Fewer castles, <i>llai o gestyll.</i>
	Too little cheese, <i>rhwy fach o gaws.</i>

§ 281. *Ychydig*, following the verb, = *a few ; a little.*

Ychydig, preceding the verb, } = *few, but few ;*
Nid...ond ychydig, following the verb, } *little, but little.*

¹ *Llawer* followed immediately by the sing. is = *many a*. *Llawer dyn*, many a man. [*Llawer gwaith* (=many a time) is usually translated “many times.”]

² *O* is often omitted after *ychydig*. *Ychydig fêl. Ychydig wŷyn.*

Y mae ganddi hi ychydig o wenith, *she has a little wheat.*
 Ychydig o honom sy'n myned,
 Nid oes ond ychydig o honom yn myned, } *few of us are going.*

This is often the case with other words; i.e. the placing a word antithetically carries with it the force of *but* or *only*.

Dwy fuwch sydd yn y cae, there are only two cows in the field.
Swllt a allaf ei ennill mewn diwrnod, it is only a shilling I can earn in a day.

§ 282. **Ag** and **nag**. When *ag* (as³), or *nag* (than) represents a nominative case (subject-nom. or predicate-nom.), the verb is *sydd*, if the term following is indefinite; but *yw*, if definitive. When *ag* or *nag* represents any other case (with periphrastic verbs), or when it comes after an adverb or an adverbial phrase, the verb is *mae*, pl. *maent*.

Y mae genym ni fwy o fŵyd nag *sydd* ganddynt hwy, *we have more food than they have.*

Yr ydwyf fi mor onest ag *ydyw* yntau, *I am as honest as he is.*

Y mae ei brawd yn fwy gofalus nag *ydyw* hi, *her brother is more careful than she is.*

Yr ydym ni yn darllen cymmaint o newyddiaduron ag *ymaent* hwythau yn eu darllen, *we read as many newspapers as they read.*

Yr ydych chi yn dysgu mwy nag *y mae* hi yn ei ddysgu, *you learn more than she learns.*

Yr ydwyf fi yn gweithio yn fwy diwyd nag *y mae* hi, *I work more industriously than she does.*

§ 283. The expletives **a** and **y** (or **yr**) after **ag** and **nag**.

a.) When *ag* or *nag* represents a *nominative case* (subject or predicate) before the present *wyf*, *ydwyf*, &c., or the imperf. *oeddw'n*, *oeddit*, &c., no expletive particle precedes the verb.

Nid ydych chi cyn daled ag *ydwyf* fi, *you are not as tall as I am.*

Yr ydym ni yn onestach pobl nag *ydynt* hwy, *we are more honest people than they are.*

Y mae ganddo ef lai o inc nag *sydd* genych chi, *he has less ink than you have.*

b.) When *ag* or *nag* stands before a periphrastic verb beginning with **wyf**, &c., or **oeddw'n**, &c. (i.e. *the present, perf. definite, imperf. and plup.*), and represents *any other case than the nominative*, the verb is preceded by *y* or *yr*.

³ "In some phrases, *as* must be considered a nominative word [also an accusative word], or other words must be supplied. 'Appoint to office such men *as* deserve public confidence.' This phrase may be elliptical for 'such men as those who deserve public confidence.'" *Imperial Dictionary, s.v. "As."* The same remark is applicable to "than."

Yr ydym ni yn darllen cymmaint *ag yr ydych* chwithau (yn ei ddarllen),⁴ *we read as much as you do (as you read).*

Y mae fy modryb yn yfed llai o win *nag y mae* fy ewythr (yn ei yfed), *my aunt drinks less wine than my uncle drinks.*

c.) When *ag* or *nag* comes after an *adverb*, an *adverbial phrase*, or a *preposition and its case*, the verb, of whatever form or tense, is preceded by *y* or *yr*.

Yr ydych chwi yn siarad *yn gywirach nag yr ydym* ni, *you speak more correctly than we do.*

Yr ydych chwi yn gallu ysgrifenu *cyn gystal ag y* gall neb o honom, *you can write as well as any of us can.*

d.) In other cases *ag* and *nag* are followed by *a*. Section 257 in ch. xxiv. applies here.

Yr ydych chwi yn gweled mwy o bobl *nag a* welaf fi, *you see more people than I see.*

Y mae hi yn clywed cymmaint o swm *ag a* glyw ei gwr, *she hears as much noise as her husband hears.*

§ 284. VOCABULARY.

Much : many, llawer (<i>rd.</i>)	A few more, ychydig yn chwaneg or rhagor.
As (so) much, cymmaint.	A little too much, tipyn or ychydig yn òrmod. [òrmod.
As (so) many, cynnifer, cymmaint.	A few too many, ychydig yn
Too much ; too many, gòrmod.	Most, y rhan fwyaf.
More, mŵy, ⁵ chwaneg, rhagor.	
Any more, (dim) chwaneg, (dim) rhagor.	
Not ... any more, no more, nid ... dim mŵy ; nid ... dim chwaneg or rhagor.	A little, tipyn, ychydig (<i>md.</i>)
Much or many more, mŵy [chwaneg, rhagor] o lawer ; llawer mŵy, &c.	A few, ychydig (<i>md.</i>)
A little more, tipyn (yn) chwaneg or rhagor ; ychydig yn chwaneg or rhagor.	Little, but little, ychydig, nid ... ond ychydig, nid ... fawr. ⁶
	Few, but few, ychydig, nid ... ond ychydig, nid ... fawr. ⁶
	As (so) little or few, cyn lleied.
	Too little or few, rhy fach.

⁴ Yr ydym ni yn darllen *cymmaint a chwithau*,—*cymmaint ag yr ydych chwithau*,—*cymmaint ag yr ydych chwithau yn ei ddarllen*. The three forms are equally good ; but the third is the least common.

⁵ *Mwy* expects *na* (than) after it : therefore it cannot be used in translating, e.g. "is there *more* (= *any* more) wine in the bottle?" (A *oes chwaneg* or *rhagor* o win yn y botel?)—When *more* = "greater in degree," *mwy* expresses it better than *chwaneg* and *rhagor*. "You have no *more* right to speak than he has," nid oes genych chwi ddim *mwy* o hawl i siarad *nag* sydd ganddo ef.

⁶ *Fawr* in this construction is always in the *middle* sound It is pro-

Less or fewer, llai.	Trouble (= <i>toil</i>), trafferth, <i>pl.</i> -ion
Any less, dim llai.	(<i>m.</i>) [-au (<i>m.</i>)
Not...any less, no less, nid...dim llai.	Trouble (= <i>vexation</i>), blinder, <i>pl.</i>
Much less or fewer, llai o lawer, llawer llai.	Castle, castell, <i>pl.</i> cèstyll (<i>m.</i>)
A little less, tipyn (yn) llai, ychydig yn llai.	Wheat, gwenith (<i>m.</i>)
A few less, ychydig yn llai.	Oats, cèirch, <i>coll.</i> cÿrch, cèrch (<i>m.</i>)
Land, tir, <i>pl.</i> -oedd (<i>m.</i>)	Flesh; (flesh) meat, cig (<i>m.</i>)
Number, nifer, <i>pl.</i> -i; rhifedi (<i>m.</i>)	Butcher, cigydd, <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>m.</i>)
(<i>Single</i>) number, rhifyn, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)	Considerable, crÿn ⁷ (<i>before noun</i> : <i>md.</i>)
	A good deal or many (of), cryn lawer (o).
	As, ag. } See above.
	Than, nag. }

If you please, os gwelwch (chwi) yn dda, (= *if you see well.*)

Irregular adjective.

Drwg, *bad*, &c., cyn waethed, mor ddrwg, gwaeth, gwaethaf.

Comparison of adverbs. (*Ex.* § 187.)

Much or greatly, <i>yn fawr.</i>	As much, <i>cyn gymmaint.</i>	More, <i>yn fwy.</i>	Most, <i>(yn) fwyaf.</i>
Little, <i>ychydig.</i>	As little, <i>cyn lleied.</i>	Less, <i>yn llai.</i>	Least, <i>yn lleiaf, leiaf.</i>

§ 285. EXERCISES.

A.) Y mae gan y meddygon hyn ormod o amser, ac y mae genym ninnau ry fach.—Y mae gormod o amser cyn waethed a rhy fach.—Y mae gan fy ewythr gymmaint o dir ag sydd gan fy nhad, os nad oes ganddo fwy.—A ydych chiwi am gymmeryd chwaneg [rhagor] o win? Ydwyf, os gwelwch yn dda.—Nid ydym yn cadw cymmaint [cynnifer] o weision ag yr ydych chiwi.—Y mae eich ceffyl chiwi yn cael llawer mwy o geirch nag y mae fy ngheffyl i yn ei gael.—A oes llawer o'r milwyr yn y castell? Oes, y mae yno gryn lawer.—A oes gan y cigydd hwn fwy o hawl i werthu cig nag sydd gan y cigydd acw? Nac oes; ond y mae ganddo gymmaint.—Tydi ydyw'r

bably a contraction of "nemmawr," *not many or much, but few or little, scarcely any.* Nid oes *fawr* (or *nemmawr*) o goed rhwynyn yn y berllan yma, *there are but few pear trees in this orchard.*

⁷ *Cryn* before a numeral is=*about as many as* or "*full.*" Y mae *cryn* ugain o ddefaid yn yr ardd, *there are full twenty sheep in the garden.*

bachgen gwaethaf yn yr ysgol.—Nid ydym ni ddim yn waeth nag ydynt hwythau.—Y mae gan yr hen wragedd yma fwy [chwaneg, ragor] o dorthau nag sydd gan y rhai acw.—A oes gan y bachgen chwaneg [ragor] o'r enau da hyny? Nac oes.—Y mae y rhan fwyaf o blant yn hoffi chwareu.—Y mae y rhan fwyaf o honynt yn rhy hoff o fyned oddi cartref.—Y mae ar was y gwr boneddig yma eisieu ychydig [tipyn] o geirch i'r ceffylau, os gwelwch yn dda.—Nid oes fawr o gysur yn yr hyn a ddywedwch.—Y mae arnom eisieu tipyn (yn) chwaneg [ychydig yn chwaneg], os gwelwch yn dda.—Nid ydwyf yn foddlon i gymmeryd cyn lleied o dir; ond y mae fy nghymmydog yn foddlon i gymmeryd llai.—Y mae rhy fach o gadeiriau yn yr ystafell yma, ac y mae gormod yn yr ystafell arall.—Bydd Iorwerth yn clywed yn llawer amlach oddi wrth y gwr boneddig nag y bydd neb o honom.—Y mae'r plant yn gallu gweled a chlywed yn llawer gwell nag y mae eu rhieni.—Y mae cryn lawer o hen gestyll yn y wlad yma.—Y mae hi yn rhoddi cryn lawer o drafferth i'w chwiorydd.—Pa ham yr ydych yn rhoddi cymmaint o flinder iddynt?—Y mae genyf fi gryn nifer [rifedi] o lyfrau; ond y mae gan fy nhad lawer mwy.—Y mae cyn lleied o dân yn yr ystafell yma ag sydd yn yr ystafell arall, os nad oes llai.—Yr ydych chwi yn clywed mwy o swm nag a glywn ni.

B.) Has your neighbour (*f.*) as many geese as you have? Yes, she has more.—You have too much land, and your neighbours have too little.—My sister-in-law wants a few yards more of that white linen, if you please.—I want you to buy less meat and more bread.—Are the servants taking more oats? Yes.—There are a good many children in this school.—Our neighbour, they say, often takes a little too much wine.—Do you want a little? Yes, if you please.—These are the naughty boys who give so much trouble (= *vexation*) to their parents.—**He** is by far the worst boy in school.—He does not want so many.—These cows give less milk than those (*near*).—Those (= *yonder*) horses have [get] more oats than these.—Is there much good land in your country? No.—Most of them are going from home.—We are not willing to take less: we want more.—He must not give the horse so much oats.—|| *We* have too many geese, and || *you* have too few.—They want a

few.—She has as many shillings as I have, if she has not more.—You get more money from him than we do.—We read as much as they do.—You buy more meat from these butchers than we do.—Have you any more of those (*o. of s.*) yellow sovereigns? No.—Has your neighbour much land. Yes, he has a good deal.—You must not give this horse too much oats.—“Too much,” said he, “is as bad as too little, if not worse.”—Their children give them a good deal of trouble (= *vexation*).—They have as few horses and as little oats as we have.—Why do you take so much?—She gives me much more trouble (= *toil*) than you do.—Have you more right than we have to go to the orchard? No; but we have as much.—He does not want any more, and he is unwilling to take any less.—Why do you buy so much poor meat?—Most of them are very desirous to go with you to see the old castle.—They must take a little wine and water.—There are as few pears on these trees as there are on those (= *yonder*).—You have less butter than your neighbour (*f.*) has; but you have more cheese.—There are fewer chapters in this book than there are in that (*near*).—We drink as little wine as you do, if not less.—These three boys have too many books, and those (= *yonder*) three girls have too few.—Most of them write much better than we do.—There are as many apples in the garden as there are in the orchard, if not more.—These young men can run and walk much better than we can.—|| *You* have a considerable number of sheep and horses; but my neighbour has many more.

C.) Ychydig o honynt sydd [nid oes ond ychydig *or* nid oes fawr o honynt] yn ddynion caredig.—A oes gan eich cymydoges lawer o ymenyn? Nac oes, yn wir, nid oes ganddi fawr iawn [ond ychydig iawn].—Pa faint o arian sydd gan yr eneth yn ei llogell?—Tair ceiniog sydd ganddi [nid oes ganddi ond tair ceiniog].—Y mae'r plentyn yn ieuanc iawn: pum mlwydd oed ydyw.—Ychydig o wenith sydd yn y sach yma; ond y mae ynndi fwy nag sydd yn y sach arall.—Y mae'r mab yn well crefftwr nag ydyw'r tad.—Y mae arnom eisieu ychydig yn chwaneg o hoelion, os gwelwch yn dda.—Yr ydych chi yn disgwyl mwy nag a fedrwn ni ei roddi.—Hwn ydyw y rhifyn cyntaf o'r llyfr.—Yr ydym ni yn rhoddi llawer llai o drafferth i'r morwynion ac o flinder i'n rhieni nag y mae ein

brodyr hynaf yn ei roddi.—Yr ydym yn eu canmol hwy (cyn) gymmaint ag yr ydym yn eich canmol chwi.—Meibion y cigydd yr ydym yn eu beio fwyaf.—Nid yw'r plant yn dysgu fawr iawn yn yr ysgol.—Yr ydym ni yn fwy dysgedig nag ydynt hwy.—Yr ydych chwi cyn gyfoethoced ag wyf finnau.—Y mae yn rhaid iddi gael ychydig yn chwaneg [rhagor] o wenith.—Nid ydyw efe yn foddlon i weithio dim rhagor [chwaneg].—Nid oes genyf ddim llai na phum punt yn fy llogell.—Nid oes dim llai na phedwar ceffyl yn yr ystabl.—Yr ydym ni yn prynu mwy o ddefaid nag y mae ein cymmydogion.—Y mae yn rhaid i'ch cyfaill gymmeryd ychydig yn llai o win.—A oes ganddi hi ychydig yn rhagor o'r eirin duon hyny? Nac oes, nid oes ganddi ddim rhagor o honynt.—Yr ydych chwi yn cymmeryd ychydig yn ormod.—Y mae ganddo lawer mwy nag sydd genyf fi, a llawer llai nag sydd gan fy nghefnder.

D.) There are but few of us willing to give so much.—Few of us are always careful.—I want you to read the third number.—You do not work as much in the orchard as the gardener does. Yes, indeed, I work much more than he does.—|| *We* receive letters from them as often as || *you* do.—The little girl is very young: she is only three years old.—We want him to take a little less wine, and a little more water.—Is your youngest daughter much taller than I am? No: she is not as tall as you are.—The gardeners have much less than the farmers have; and a little less than we have.—I want a few more.—Do they want a little more? No, they do not want any more.—We have no more.—There are no less than ten sheep in the garden.—The farmer has but very little wheat, and less oats.—We buy much more meat from these butchers than you do; but we do not buy as much as our neighbours do.—You can give as much trouble as most of us can.—There is a good deal of wheat in the other sack.—The boys have a considerable number of books,—do they read them as often as their sisters do?—You blame us more than you blame the butcher's children.—We want them to take a little less.—He blames **the eldest daughter** most.—I like the second number of the book less than the first.—I prefer having a few less, if you please.—The clergyman blames || *me* a little; but he blames the other children much more.—You are as naughty as || *we* are.—There

is a good deal of the hay still out.—What number of children have you in school?—He has no less than a hundred pounds in his pocket.—He has only three pence in his pocket.—Are you not taking a little too much?—I have a few too many.—Are not most children fond of playing?—This gentleman has fewer books than you have.—Have you more butter? No, I have not any more.—She has too much bread and too little cheese.—My father wants a little more land.—Do they want more plums? Yes, they want a few more, if you please.—Is not Myvanwy as pretty a girl as || *you* are? Yes, she is much prettier than I am.—His eldest child is only six years old.—I want more than you can give.—Why do you take so much trouble with them?—Ten years is a considerable time.—There are but few castles in this part of the country.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

[Numeral adverbs,—*tair gwaith* or *teirgwaith*,—"twice as,"—direct questions,—dependent questions,—"or not,"—"I don't care,"—"I may as well."]

Notes and References.

§ 286. **Numeral adverbs.** How formed, *Gr.* § 179. List, *Gr.* § 180.

"*Tair gwaith*" or "*teirgwaith*," *three times*. The separate form (*dwy waith*, *tair gwaith*, &c.) should be always employed when the numeral is to be emphasized; and this form is as common as the other when there is no emphasis.

§ 287. Eng. Four or five times.

W. Four times or five. (*Pedair gwaith neu bump.*)

Four or five times (*less com.*) (*Pedair neu bump gwaith.*)

Pedair neu bump o weithiau, *four or five times.* *Ex.* § 45.

§ 288. **Twice**¹ (*three times*, &c.) as: *dwy waith* (*tair gwaith*, &c.) *cyn* or *mor*; or *cyn* or *mor...ddwy waith*, &c.

"He is four times as rich as I am."

¹ *Twice* may also be expressed by "*arall*." "*Cyn gryfed arall*" (= *as strong another*), *twice as strong*. Cf. "*as strong again*."

Y mae efe cyn gyfoethoced [mor gyfoethog] bedair² gwaith ag wyf fi.
Y mae efe bedair² gwaith cyn gyfoethoced [mor gyfoethog] ag wyf fi.

Twice³ (*three times, &c.*) as much or many; as large, &c.:
dwy waith gymmaint,⁴—*cymmaint ddwy waith*.

You have three times as many as we have, *y mae genych chwi gymmaint dair gwaith* [dair gwaith gymmaint] *ag sydd genym ni*.

§ 289. Questions.

Direct Questions.

(a) ...? (L. *ne?*): *a?*

Is the man guilty? *a ydyw'r dyn yn euog?*

(b) ...or? (L. *utrum...an?*): *a ... neu?*

Are you willing or unwilling? *a ydych chwi yn foddlon neu yn anfoddlon?*

(c) **Is it ... that?** (*antithetical*): *ai?* [Difference between *a* and *ai?* *Gr.* §§ 819, 822, 823.]

Is it he that is [is he] the best man? *ai efe ydyw'r dyn goreu?*

(d) **Is it ... or?** (*antithetical*): *pa un ai ... neu [ai]?*

Is it Arthur or his brother that is going? *pa un ai Arthur neu ei frawd sydd yn myned?*

Dependent Questions.

(e) **Whether**: *a*; antithetical, *ai*.

I do not know whether the man is guilty, *nis gwn a ydyw'r dyn yn euog*.

My father does not know whether he is the man, *nis gwyr fy nhad ai efe ydyw'r dyn*.

(f) **Whether ... or**: (*pa un*) *a ... neu [ai]*.

We do not care whether you are willing or unwilling, *ni wacth genym ni pa un a ydych yn foddlon neu yn anfoddlon*.

(g) **Whether ... or** (*antithetical*): *pa un ai ... neu [ai]*.

² Observe that the numeral is put in the *mid.* sound. *Ex.* § 213.

³ *Twice as much, &c.*, may also be expressed by "cymmaint arall." *Y mae genych gymmaint arall, you have twice as much, or as much again.* With *cymmaint* a cardinal numeral is sometimes used instead of the numeral adv. *Y tri chymmaint, three times as many: y puni cymmaint, five times as many.*

⁴ Or "cyn gymmaint," but more rarely. *Cymmaint* is in the *mid.* after the numeral adv., being governed by *cyn* understood.

They do not say whether it is Arthur or his brother that is coming,
nid ydynt yn dweyd pa un ai Arthur neu ei frawd sy'n dyfod.

(h) **Or not (or no):** *neu beidio, ai peidio*: or *ai [neu] na, nad, nas,*⁵ with the verb of the clause:—in antithetical questions, *ai nade* or *peidio, neu nade* or *beidio*.

She does not care whether we are comfortable or not, *ni waeth ganddi hi (pa un) a ydym yn gysurus ai peidio [ai nad ydym, = "or we are not."]*

Myvanwy does not know whether her brother is the best scholar or not, *nis gwyr Myfanwy ai ei brawd ydyw'r ysgolaig goreu ai peidio [ai nade].*

(i) **Whether (L. *sive*, Gr. $\epsilon\tilde{\iota}\tau\epsilon$):** *pa un (bynag) a* or *ai*.

I am going whether (*sive, εἴτε*): he is willing or (*sive, εἴτε*) unwilling,
yr ydwyf fi yn myned pa un (bynag) a ydyw efe yn foddlon neu yn anfoddlon.

Obs. Ynte, ai ynte, and neu ynte may be used instead of *ai* and *neu* in translating "or." *Pa un ai Arthur ynte [ai ynte, neu ynte] ei frawd sy'n dyfod?*

§ 290. VOCABULARY.

Time (<i>with numeral terms,</i>)	To care (for), <i>gofalu (am).</i>
<i>gwaith, pl. gwèithiau (f.); tro,</i>	Once, <i>un waith</i> or <i>ùnwaith.</i>
<i>pl.-iau (m.)</i>	Twice, <i>dŵy waith.</i>
Care, gofal, pl.-on (m.)	Three times, <i>tair gwaith.</i>
Visit, ymweliad, pl.-au (m.)	Four times, <i>pedair gwaith.</i>
Copper, brass, prês (m.)	Five times, <i>pum gwaith.</i>
The other, pl. the others (n.), y llall, pl. y lleill.	How many times? <i>pa sawl gwaith?</i>
To take care (of), gofalu (am), cymmeryd gofal (o).	Every or each time, <i>pob tro.</i>
	Guilty, euog.
	Whether ... or. See above.

On a visit with; *ar ymweliad gyda.*

To pay one a visit, *talw ymweliad âg un.*

I don't care, *ni waeth genyf fi*; ⁶ *nid wyf fi yn gofalu.*⁷

What do I care? *beth waeth genyf fi?* *beth yr wyf fi yn ei ofalu?*

I may as well ... as not, *ni waeth i mi ... na pheidio (â).*

Give the inflected comparison of *cyfoethog* and *dysgedig.* *Gr. § 174, a.*

§ 291. EXERCISES.

A.) *Pa sawl gwaith yn y mis y byddant yn dyfod adref? Dwywaith neu dair.—Byddwn yn myned oddi cartref bedair*

⁵ Or *ni, nid, nis.*

⁶ = *it is not worse with me.*

⁷ "Nid wyf yn hidio" (*purely coll.*): "nid wyf yu malio" (*local*): "ni'm dawr i" (*obsolete*).

gwaith yn y flwyddyn.—Y mae eich mab hynaf cyn gryfed ddwywaith a'r gwr ieuanc yma.—Yr ydych chiwi cyn gyfoethoced bum gwaith a'ch brawd.—Pa ham y mae hi yn gofyn a ydym ni yn cymmeryd gofal o'r plant?—Ni thâl yr esgidiau hyn ddim llawer,—ni waeth i chiwi eu rhoi i'r dyn tlawd.—Nid ydynt yn gofalu dim beth a ddywedwch yn eu herbyn.—Byddwn yn cael arian neu bres gan ein nain bob tro y byddwn yn ei gweled.—Pa un ai at y meddyg neu at yr offeiriad y mae efe yn myned i ddanfôn llythyr?—Y mae fy merch hynaf ar ymweliad gyda'i thaid a'i nain yng Nghaerfyrddin.—Bydd y boneddigesau hyn yn talu ymweliad â'n rhieni dair gwaith neu bedair yn y flwyddyn.—Pa un ai hwn neu'r llall sydd arno ei eisieu? Y llall sydd arno ei eisieu.—Pa un ai eich tad neu [ai] eich taid ydyw'r cyfoethocaf? Fy nhaid: y mae efe cyn gyfoethoced ddwywaith a'm tad.—Y mae'r ceryg hyn cyn drymed bedair gwaith a'r ceryg acw.—Y mae'r amaethwr yma yn gofyn a oes genych chiwi gymmaint ddwywaith o yd ag sydd ganddo ef.—Oes, y mae genyf fwy na chynmaint ddwywaith: y mae genyf gymmaint dair gwaith neu bedair ag sydd ganddo ef.—Fe dal y ceffyl yma gymmaint arall ag a dal ceffyl eich cefnder.—Y mae ganddi y pum cymmaint [gymmaint bum gwaith] ag sydd gan eich cymmydoges.—Y mae'n rhaid i mi frysio adref, pa un (bynag) a ydych chiwi yn brysio ai peidio.—A ydyw hi yn foddlon neu yn anfoddlon i ofalu am danoch?—Ni waeth genych chiwi pa un a ydym yn iach ai peidio [neu beidio,—ai nad ydym].—Ni waeth genym ni pa un ai i'r ardd neu i'r berllan y mae'r garddwyr yn myned.

B.) You take twice as much care of the children as their parents do.—How many times a (W. = *in the, or the*) week does your husband go from home? He goes from home two or three times a week.—We give the poor woman silver or copper every time she comes to the door.—You may as well give it (*m.*) him as not.—The children are on a visit with an old friend of ours.—|| *My* horses are worth three times as much as these horses are.—He has five times as much hay as || *you* have; but || *you* have more corn than || *he* has.—Iorwerth is twice as careful as his sister.—He receives two or three letters every week from his friend who lives in London.—How many

times in the year do your sons and daughters go from home? They go from home four or five times in the year.—My master wants to know whether you are willing to sell more hay.—Your master has twice or three times as much land as I have.—We must have the others, whether your nephews are willing to give them or not.—He does not care whether we are rich or poor.—Are you going to market, or coming from market?—What do they care whether the men are guilty or not?—Is **this** the best wheat you have? Yes.—This castle is twice as large as the one in our country.—Is it || **my work** or || **yours** to mend their gloves? It is **my work**.—You may as well give him a little,—he is very poor.—Do you care for him? No, I care nothing for him.—Is it to you or to me that he intends to write?—Is it this or the other that you want? We want **the other**, if you please.—The lawyer's youngest daughter is always on a visit with some one or other.—Where are the others? Here they are.—He does know whether the gardener is **in the orchard or in the garden**.—She does not care whether her husband is going **to London or to some other place**.—Is this (*m.*) **silver or brass**? It is **brass**.—The others want twice as many as I do.

C.) Ni wyr neb pa un ai myfi neu fy mrawd sydd yn myned.—A wyddoch chwi a ydyw eich meist'r i mewn neu beidio? Na wn.—A ydych chwi yn myned adref neu yn dyfod oddi cartref?—Ni waeth gan neb o honom pa un ai cylllell y bachgen yma neu gyllell ei frawd ydyw hon.—Ni waeth genyf fi [nid wyf fi yn gofalu] pa un a ydyw efe gartref neu beidio.—Pa un ai y meddyg neu'r cyfreithiwr yr ydych yn ei ddisgwyl? Yr ydym yn disgwyl y ddau.—Beth waeth ganddynt hwy pa un a ydym yn gofalu am eu plant ai peidio?—Y mae yn angenrheidiol i chwi gymmeryd gofal mawr o hono.—Y mae'r boneddigesau yn ewyllysio gwybod a ydych chwi am dalu ymweliad â hwy ai nad ydych [ai peidio].—Dyma dri o'r llyfrau,—gan bwy y mae'r lleill? Gan fab yr offeiriad y maent.—Ni waethiddynt wneyd felly na pheidio.—Nis gwyddant hwy ai Iorwerth ydyw yr ysgolaig goreu ai nade.—Yr ydym ni yn gwneyd ein dyledswydd, pa un bynag a ydynt hwy yn gwneyd eu dyledswydd ai nad ydynt.—Rhaid i chwi fyned pa un bynag a ydych yn barod neu beidio.—Beth waeth genyf

fi [beth yr wyf fi yn ei ofalu] pa un a ydych chwi yn euog ai peidio?—Pa ham y mae efe yn gofyn ai myfi ydyw'r mab hynaf?—Nis gwn i ddim a ydyw hi yn gysurus yn ei lle newydd.—Y mae'r gwr boneddig yn gofyn pa un ai eich tad neu eich ewythr sydd i dalu yr arian.—Beth waeth gan blant drwg pa un a ydyw eu rhieni yn gysurus ai peidio?—Y mae arnom ni i gyd eisieu gwybod a ydych chwi yn ddedwydd.—Ni waeth gan y dyn hwnw pa cyn dloted [mor dlawd] ydym.—Pa un ai arian neu bres sydd arnynt ei eisieu? Pres sydd arnynt ei eisieu.—Nid yw efe yn gofalu dim am y pethau hyny.—Bydd ein cyfnitheroedd yn talu ymweliad â ni dair gwaith yn y flwyddyn.—Beth waeth ganddo ef pa un a ydyw ei chwiorydd yn ddedwydd neu yn annedwydd?—Pa un ai chwy-chwi neu eich chwaer ydyw'r hynaf? Myfi.

D.) Is it your nephew or your niece that is going from home?—Are they going home or coming from home?—I don't know neither do I care whether I am twice as heavy as my youngest sister.—The lady is asking whether your eldest sister is willing or not.—Do you know whether the boys are **reading or writing**?—What do we care whether he or his brother is the better workman?—|| *I* must work, whether || *you* are working or not.—My friend does not care whether the gardens are **large or small**.—Are they going **to church or to school**?—Are these **apple trees or pear trees**?—What do the girls care whether **your father or your brother** is the master?—Why do you all want to know whether it is your uncles or your aunts that are coming here?—Is **he** the guilty man? Yes.—If he does not take care of his children, he cannot be a good man.—We may as well sit in the house as go out into the garden.—He asks for something or other every time I see him.—They wish to know whether she wants **copper or silver**.—We do not care what those people say about us.—Do you want the **workman or his son**? We want **his son**.—We must pay them a visit, whether you are coming or not.—You are too fond of paying visits.—What do they care whether we are comfortable or not?—They may as well pay us a visit as not.—What do you care what my age is?—We don't care whether you are **young or old**.—You cannot tell whether they are guilty.—The lady is asking whether these are the best shoes

the little girl has.—She does not care how poor her parents are.—The young men want to know whether their sisters are comfortable.—|| *We* are doing our duty, whether || *you* are doing yours or not.—She must stay at home, whether she is willing or unwilling.

CHAPTER XXIX.

[*Trosaf*,—*yn fy nghylch*,—"mae yn dda gan Arthur," &c.,—transitive clause, simple and antithetical,—it,—I wonder, *tybed, os gwn i,—ai tybed?*—poor!]

Pronominal preposition.

Trosaf or *drosaf*, for me. *Gr.* § 379, and note (b).

Compound preposition.

Yn fy nghylch, about me. *Gr.* § 743.

Notes and References.

§ 292. "Mae yn ddrwg gan¹ Arthur glywed," = *it is bad with Arthur to hear; Arthur is sorry to hear.*

"Mae yn dda iawn genyf ddeall," = *it is very good with me to understand; I am very glad to understand.*

"Mae yn gas genych fi," = *I am hateful with you; you hate me.*

(a) This construction is somewhat common in expressing such ideas as *to be* (or *feel*) *glad, to be* (or *feel*) *sorry, to hate, to be surprised, to doubt, to be certain, &c.*

Observe the order: *verb,—predicate,—prep. and its case,—subject*, i.e. noun, pronoun, or infinitive verb. [*Mae—yn ddrwg—gan Arthur—glywed.*]

(b) The same idea is often, and in some cases oftener, expressed as in Eng.

Yr ydych yn fy nghasâu, = *mae yn gas genych fi, you hate me.*

Yr wyf yn sicr, = *mae'n sicr genyf, I am sure.*

(c) "Mae yn dda iawn genyf ddeall." Not, "i ddeall." *Ex.* § 218.

(d) The negative of *mae* in this construction is *yw*.

Nid yw yn rhyfedd genym glywed hyny, *we are not surprised to hear that.*

A ydyw yn ddrwg genych drosto? *are you sorry for him?*

¹ *Gyda* is often used in S.W. "Mae yn ddrwg gydag Arthur."

§ 293. **Transitive clause.** *Gr.* §§ 758, 759. [A transitive clause headed by *y* or *yr* will be illustrated hereafter.]

§ 294. **Simple narration.** *Gr.* §§ 760, 761.

a.) **Affirmative.**

Mae'n dda genyf *fod* merch fy nghymmydoges yn iach, *I am glad that my neighbour's daughter is well.*

Mae'n ddrwg ganddo fy mod i yn myned ymaith, *he is sorry that I am going away.*

Mae hi yn meddwl *fod* digon o fara yn y cwppwrdd, *she thinks that there is plenty of bread in the cupboard.*

"*Fod* merch." The verb in this construction assumes the *mid.* sound. *Gr.* §§ 592, 593.—"*Fod* merch." *Gr.* § 589 applies here.—"*Fy* mod *i.*" *Gr.* § 606.—"*Fy* mod *i.*" Observe the form of the pers. pron. *Prel. Remarks*, § 22 (*d*).—"*Fy* mod *i.*" or "*fy* mod." *Gr.* § 761 (*a*).

☞ Learn the conjugation="that I am learning," &c. *Gr.* § 761.

b.) **Negative.** *Gr.* § 762.

Yr wyf yn sicr *nad* *ydwy* y dyn ddim yn euog, *I am sure that the man is not guilty.*

Yr ydym yn ofni *nad* *ydylnt* ddim yn gweithio, *we fear that they are not working.*

Y mae hi yn ofni *nad* *oes* digon o fara yn y cwppwrdd, *she fears that there is not enough bread in the cupboard.*

§ 295. **Antithetical.** *Gr.* §§ 772, 773. *Mai* (S.W. coll. *taw*), that: *nad* or *mai nid* (S.W. coll. *taw nid*), that...not.

Ymddengys *mai* *myfi* *sydd* i dalu am y llyfrau, *it seems that I am to pay for the books.*

Mae efe yn sicr *nad* [*mai nid*] *ei* blant ef *sydd* ar ben y graig, *he is certain that his children are not [that it is not his children who are] on the top of the rock.*

§ 296. **It.** "It is a pity that he is there." No equivalent: *Ex.* § 219.

It after "that," in a simple trans. clause, and representing an infinitive, is rendered by *hi*, with, in affirmatives, the introductory pron. *ei fem.* before the verb. *Hi*, however, is oftener omitted than expressed, the introd. pron. being deemed sufficient.²

He says that it is a pity to blame the poor child, *efe a ddywed ci bod (hi) yn resyn beio y plentyn, druan.*

² *Hi* and the introd. pron. are sometimes omitted. "*Efe a ddywed fod yn resyn beio y plentyn, druan.*" This is condemned by some as bad grammar.

She says that it is not possible to please the lady, *hi a ddywed nad yw (hi) yn ddichonadwy boddhau y foneddiges.*

In an antithetical trans. clause, *it* has nothing corresponding to it.

He thinks that it is || **your work** to do that, *y mae efe yn meddwl mai eich gwaith chwi ydyw gwneuthur hyny.*

§ 297. **I wonder** (= I doubt): *tybed*; ³ *os gŵn i* ⁴ (= if I know).

I wonder whether she is in? *tybed [os gwn i] a ydyw hi i mewn?*

Are they at home, I wonder? *a ydynt hwy gartref, tybed [os gwn i]?*

Ai tybed? followed by a simple trans. clause, is = *is it probable or likely?* (and sometimes = *is it possible?*)

Ai tybed eich bod chwi mor ffol? *is it likely* (or *possible*) *that you are so silly?*

§ 298. **Poor**, expressing tenderness or pity: *druan*⁵ *o* (S.W. *druan ô*), preceding in the clause; *druan* (pl. *druain*), following the noun or pronoun qualified by it. *Druan bach*, pl. *druain bach* (= poor dear) will take either position.

Poor man (or fellow)! I am sorry for him, *druan o'r*⁶ *dyn* [*druan o hono, druan âg ef, druan bach*]! *y mae'n ddrwg genyf drosto.*

Poor girls (or things)! they are very unhappy, *druan o'r genethod* [*druan o honynt, druan â hwy, druain bach*]! *y maent yn annedwydd iawn.*

Poor man (or fellow, woman, thing, &c.)! I am sorry for you, *druan o honoch* [*druan â chwi, druan bach*]! *y mae'n ddrwg genyf drosoch.*

How is the poor boy? *Sut y mae'r bachgen, druan?*

Where is the poor girl? *lle y mae'r cneth, druan?*

How are they, poor things? *sut y maent hwy, druain* [*druain bach*]?

§ 299. VOCABULARY.

Deed, act, gwèithred, <i>pl.</i> -oedd (<i>f.</i>)	Doubtful, ammheus.
Pity, grèsyn (<i>m.</i>)	Disagreeable (to), hateful, cäs
Cupboard, cŵppwrdd, <i>pl.</i> cyp-pÿrddau (<i>m.</i>)	(wrth).
Sure, certain, sicr, siwr.	Wonderful, rhyfedd.
	Thankful, grateful, diðlchgar.

³ *Tybed* is elliptical: the full form would, probably, be *ai tybied yr ydys?* (is it thought?); or *ai tybaid* (= *tebygol*) *yw?* (is it likely?)

⁴ Or, *nis gŵn i* (= I don't know). The phrase, which is purely colloquial, is always pronounced as if written 'sgŵn-i.

⁵ *Druan* (rad. *truan*) is in the *mid.* sound after *O!* understood.

⁶ In coll. language the verb *oeddw'n*, &c., is continually used instead of *o*. *Druan oedd y dyn*; *druan oeddych chwi*; *druan oeddynt hwy*, &c.

Unthankful, ungrateful, anniðlechgar.	To cross, crðesi.
Unconcerned (about), didaro (yng nghylch, <i>rd.</i>)	To please, boddhau.
Likely (to), probable, tebyg, tebygol (o or i).	To appear, seem, ymddangos.
Possible, dichonadwy, pòssibl.	It appears or seems, ymddengys.
Well (= fortunate), da.	I wonder. See above, § 297.
Sorry, drwg : edifar. See below.	Sufficiently, enough, yn ddigon
Poor. See above, § 298.	Quite, yn hòllol (<i>md.</i>) [(<i>rd.</i>)
To get better, improve, gwella.	Very, tra (<i>asp.</i>)
To fear, ðfni.	That, mài, tàw (<i>rd.</i>) See above, § 295.
To hate, casâu. See below.	That . . . not, nàd (<i>rd.</i>), mài (or tàw) nid (<i>rd.</i>)
	For (<i>prep.</i>) tròs or dròs.; àm.

I am glad, mae yn dda genyf.

I am fond of, mae yn dda genyf, yr wyf yn hoff o.

I am sorry (for), mae yn ddrwg genyf (dros).

I am sorry (for) = I repent (of), mae yn edifar genyf (am).

I hate, mae yn gas genyf, yr wyf yn casâu.

I am sure or certain, mae yn sier [siwr] genyf, yr wyf yn sier [siwr].

I am delighted, mae yn llawen genyf.

I am astonished or surprised, I wonder (at), mae yn rhyfedd genyf (wrth), yr wyf yn rhyfeddu (wrth).

I doubt, mae yn ammheus genyf, yr wyf yn ammheu.

Is it likely or probable? a ydyw yn debyg? ai tybed? See above.

Is it possible? a ydyw yn ddichonadwy [bossibl]? ai tybed? See above.

§ 300. EXERCISES.

A.) Mae yn dda genyf fod morwyn y foneddiges yn ei boddhau.—A ydyw yn dda ganddynt ein bod ni yn gwella? Ydyw, y mae yn dda iawn ganddynt. Onid ydyw yn resyn nad oes neb yn gofalu am y plant, druain? Ydyw, yn wir, yn resyn mawr.—Mae yn gas genym feddwl fod y dynion cas ac anniðlechgar hyny i ddyfod yma.—Pwy sy'n dweyd ein bod yn ymddangos yn ddidaro yng nghylch ein plant? Eich cymmydogion.—Dywed y bugail wrthym ei bod (hi) yn ddigon hawdd croesi yr afon.—Onid yw yn ddrwg genych ein bod yn eich gadael? Ydyw, y mae yn ddrwg iawn genym.—Y mae'r eneth yn dweyd fod pawb yn ei chasâu hi; ond y gwir yw nad oes neb yn ei chasâu.—Mae yn sier genyf nad efe ydyw awdwr y llyfr. Mae yn rhyfedd genym wrtho.—Mae yn llawen genym allu dweyd ei fod ef yn gwella bob dydd.—Nid yw yn rhyfedd gan neb o honom ei bod hi mor gas wrth ei mam.—A ydyw yn rhyfedd genych chwi ein bod yn dysgu ein gwersi mor dda? Ydyw, y mae yn rhyfedd iawn genym.—Yr

ydym yn clywed fod yn ddrwg genych dros y dyn sal.—Yr ydwyf yn siwr eu bod gartref.—A ydych chwi yn sier fod y gwr a'r wraig yn ddiolchgar? Ydwyf, yn hollol sier.—Mae yn gas gan bawb bobl anniolchgar.—Yr wyf yn ofni nad yw ddim yn ddichonadwy [bossibl] eu boddhau.—Ymddengys nad yw yr eneth, druan, ddim yn debyg o wella.—Y mae yn ddrwg iawn genym drosoch, druain.—Mae yn sier genyf [yr wyf yn sier] ei bod hi yn rhyfeddu wrthyhych.—Y mae yn ddrwg iawn ganddynt glywed eich bod chwi a'ch brawd mor gas wrth y plant ereill.—Y mae yn dda iawn ganddo [y mae efe yn hoff iawn o] fechgyn a genethod da; ond y mae yn gas ganddo blant drwg ac anufudd.—A ydyw yn dda genych chwi hi? Ydyw, yn dda iawn.—Y mae yn dda ganddi ddeall fod eich mam a chwithau yn gwella.

B.) We are sorry that your aunt is so disagreeable to you.—They are surprised that these women are so unconcerned about their poor children.—We are astonished at || *you* and at your act.—The lawyer says that he hates to see them.—Are they sure that he is a grateful man? Yes, quite sure.—She is delighted to be able to say that the sick child is getting better.—It appears that they are not yet quite certain that || **your son** is to have the prize (*l.u.*⁷ “reward”).—The medical men say that he is not likely to recover (*l.u.* “to get better”).—I am very sorry for her, poor thing.—He is certain that there are not more than ten pears on the tree.—All hate ungrateful people.—We are fond of grateful and obedient children.—Are your aunts sorry that those (*o. of s.*) ladies are coming here again? No, they are delighted to hear that they are coming.—They are very fond of him.—We are not quite sure that the poor girls are getting better: the doctor says that they are.—It is a great pity that she is not a doctor's wife.—He is very glad that they please you.—What is the reason (*W. = cause*) that you are so unconcerned about us?—I fear that it is not possible to cross this river,—it is so deep.—Is it true that you hate to think of books? Yes, it is quite true.—Do they say that they have as many horses and fields as we have? No: they know well that they have not as many.—These people say that they

⁷ That is, *look under* “reward” in the Vocabulary: the same word in *W.* will express “reward” and “prize.”

are sorry for us ; but we are afraid that they are not sorry for us.—He is very fond of obedient children.—I tell you that nobody hates you.—The clergyman says that he is very sorry for the poor girl.—Are you not glad that there is so much hay in the field? Yes, very glad.—They say that they are very sorry to hear that he is so disagreeable to his only child.

C.) Y mae'n dra ammheus a ydyw hi yn ddigon cref ai peidio.—Y mae'n ammheus genyf ai efe neu ei frawd ydyw'r cryfaf.—Dywedant nad yw yn edifar ganddynt am y weithred.—Dywed y gwas nad oes ond ychydig o geirch da yn y farchnad.—Ymddengys nad oes neb o honynt yn ddigon dysgedig.—Mae yn debyg mai mab hynaf yr amaethwr acw ydyw'r ysgolaig goreu.—Ymddengys mai dyn anniolchgar iawn ydyw ei was.—Yr ydwyf yn hollol sier mai yn y berllan y mae'r ddau arddwr.—Mae'r gwas yn dweyd ei bod hi yn dra thebyg i fwrw eira.—Beth ydyw'r achos fod mab a merch y saer yn ymddangos mor drist?—Ai tybed ei fod ef mor gas wrthynt?—Mae yn rhyfedd gan y gwr boneddig nad yw yn edifar genych am eich gweithredoedd drwg.—Y mae yn dda iddi mai nid [nad] ei modryb sy'n sal.—Dywed yr eneth nad yw ddim yn bossibl [ddichonadwy] boddhau y ddwy foneddiges.—Yr ydym yn sier ei bod yn ddigon hawdd ei boddhau.—Pwy sy'n dweyd mai dyledswydd fy chwaer yn unig ydyw cynnorthwyo y gwragedd tlodion hyn?—Ymddengys nad [mai nid] eich cefnder, ond eich cyfnither, sydd yn myned oddi cartref.—A ydyw yn dda ganddynt nad yn fy ngwely yr ydwyf? Ydyw, yn dda iawn.—Y mae yn dra thebyg nad ydyw hi yn deall fy ngeiriau.—Mae'n ddrwg gan y foneddiges dros y dyn, druan.—Pa le y mae hi, druan?—Druan o honi [druan â hi], y mae'n sier fod arni eisieu bwyd.—Druan o hono [druan âg ef], y mae efe yn dlawd iawn.—Druan o'r bachgen, a ydyw ei fam gartref, tybed [os gwn i].—Os gwn i, a ydyw tad yr eneth, druan, yn y ty.—Tybed ai efe ydyw awdwr y llyfr hwnw?—Pwy ydyw awdwyr y llyfrau hyn, tybed?—Druan o honoch! y mae'n ddrwg genym drostoch.—Y mae yn dda i ni nad ydyw y lle ddim ym mhell.—Y mae yn dda iddynt nad [mai nid] yr ysgol feistr sydd yn eu gweled.

D.) We are surprised that the men are not sorry for (= *repent of*) their wicked deeds.—It is very probable that she is


not sufficiently careful.—Why do they say that I do not hate an ungrateful man?—It is quite certain that none of your servants are sufficiently strong.—We are sure that **you** are the author of those (*o. of s.*) books.—Is it probable that **they** are the authors?—He says that the best scholars are in **||his school**.—We are glad to understand that **you** are not the author of this book.—Poor fellow! I am sure he is not comfortable.—Poor thing! I wonder whether she has a home?—Are you sorry for the poor woman? Yes, I am very sorry for her, poor thing.—I wonder at him.—I wonder whether the poor fellow has any friends.—There (= *yonder*) she is, poor thing!—she has not a penny to bless herself.—I fear that there is but little bread in the cupboard.—Poor man! you look very ill,—what is the matter with you?—It seems to me that it is a great pity to take it (*m.*) from her.—This boy says that it is not possible to cross the river.—He thinks that it is very likely to rain.—It is well for you that **I** am not your master.—I am going to tell you a very wonderful story.—They appear quite unconcerned about every thing.—We doubt whether these young men are strong enough.—We fear that they are not likely to have any more.—I am so glad that **he** is to come.—Poor girl! I fear that her parents are disagreeable to her.—I wonder whether there is any bread in the cupboard.—Is it possible that they are guilty?—They are sorry to tell you that there is not enough for you all.—It is very doubtful whether they have enough money.—It seems that he is not sorry for (= *repent of*) his wicked deed.—It is well for them that we are not near (to) them.—Why do they say that it is **||our duty** to do that (*o. of s.*)?—Where is the clergyman going, I wonder? I think that he is going to visit a sick man.

CHAPTER XXX.

[Cause clause,—explanatory cause clause,—concessive clause,—*er* with equal degree,—*help* (I cannot *help* looking; we cannot *help* it).]

Notes and References.

§ 301. **Cause clause.** Present tense. *Gr.* § 774, &c.

 A transitive clause may be converted into a cause clause merely by prefixing a causal conjunction (= *because*, &c.)

Simple. *Gr.* § 777.

O herwydd [am] eu bod mor ddidaro yn ei chylch, *because they are so unconcerned about her.*

Am nad ydynt yn ceisio ein boddhau, *because they do not try to please us.*

Gan ein bod yn mwynhau iechyd mor dda, *since we enjoy such good health.*

Yn gymmaint a bod ar yr eneth ofn myned, *inasmuch as the girl is afraid of going:*

Antithetic. *Gr.* § 783.


Am mai chwychwi yw'r mwyaf gofalus, *because you are the most careful.*
Gan nad [mai nid] myfi yw eich gelyn, *as I am not your enemy.*

§ 302. Explanatory cause clause. *Gr.* §§ 784–788.

Canys y mae genym barch mawr iddynt, *for we have great respect for them.*

Canys nid oes ganddynt barch i neb, *for they have no respect for anybody.*

§ 303. Concessive clause. Present tense. *Gr.* § 789, &c.

 A transitive clause may be converted into a concessive clause merely by prefixing a concessive conjunction (= *although*).

Simple. *Gr.* § 792.

Mae arno eisieu chwaneg, er bod ganddo ddigon, *he wants more, although he has enough.*

Er nad oes genyf ddim parch iddynt hwy, er hyny y mae genyf barch mawr i'w rhieni, *although I have respect for them, still I have great respect for their parents.*

Antithetic. *Gr.* § 797.

Er mai y garddwr yw'r gweithiwr goreu, *although the gardener is the best workman.*

Er nad [mai nid] hyhi ydyw'r ferch hynaf, *although she is not the eldest daughter.*

§ 304. *Er* followed by the equal degree.

“Although they are so rich.”

Er cyfoethoced¹ ydynt.

Er eu bod cyn gyfoethoced.

Er mor gyfoethog ydynt.

Er eu bod mor gyfoethog.

These four forms are equally common.

¹ Observe the absence of *cyn* after *er*,—not “*er cyn gyfoethoced.*”

§ 305. Help.

Help (= to assist), cynnorthwyo.

However, we are all willing to help them, *pa fodd bynag, yr ydym ni oll yn ewyllysgar i'w cynnorthwyo.*

Help (= to forbear), peidio â.

He cannot help looking at you, *nis gall beidio âg edrych arnoch.*

Help (= to remedy, prevent), wrth.

We cannot help it, *nis gallwn wrtho.*

I cannot help the man being so ignorant, *nis gallaf wrth y dyn ei fod mor anwybodus.*

§ 306. VOCABULARY.

Enemy, gelyn, <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>m.</i>)	To help. See above.
Society, cymdeithas, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	Because, o hêrwydd (<i>rd.</i>), àm (<i>md.</i>) <i>Gr.</i> § 774.
Health, iechyd (<i>m.</i>)	Since, seeing that, as, gàn (<i>md.</i>)
Respect, regard, pârch (<i>m.</i>)	Inasmuch as, yn gymmaint a or ag.
Ignorant, anwybodus.	For (<i>conj.</i>), canys, o achos. <i>Gr.</i> § 785.
Proud, bâlch.	Although, though, èr (<i>rd.</i>)
To believe, credu.	Still or yet, èr hÿny, èto.
To offer, cÿnnyg.	However, pa fôdd bÿnag.
To enjoy, mwynhau.	Not only ... but also, nid yn unig ... ond hefyd.
To pardon, forgive, maddeu (<i>i.</i>)	
To offend, (<i>v.t.</i>), dîgio.	
To be offended (with), dîgio (wrth).	

It is better for me, }
I had better, } mae yn well i mi,² gwell i mi.

§ 307. EXERCISES.

A.) Gan ei bod hi mor hynod o dlawd, y mae yn rhaid i ni ei chynnorthwyo.—Yr ydym yn eich canmol yn fawr am eich bod yn dweyd y gwir wrthym.—Gan mai chwychwi sydd yn dweyd hyny, y mae yn rhaid i ni gredu fod y peth yn wir.—Nid ydym yn credu fod yr hanes yn wir am mai gwraig y gof sy'n ei ddweyd.—Er bod genyf lawer o elynion, er hyny [eto] y mae genyf rai gwir gyfeillion, y rhai sydd yn fy ngharu yn fawr.—Nid ydym yn hoff o'u cymdeithas o herwydd nad oes ganddynt barch i bobl dda.—Er mai dynion tlodion ydym, er hyny gallwn ddweyd y gwir cyn gystal a hwythau.—Er tloted ydyw'r bugail, y mae efe yn cynnyg rhoddi pum swllt.—Beth

² The imperf. subjunctive is often used. "Byddai yn well i mi," = it would be better for me.

ydyw'r achos nad yw'r athraw yn rhoi'r wobr i'r bachgen acw? Am nad [mai nid] efe ydyw'r ysgolaig goreu.—Nid ydym yn cynnyg dim i chwi am nad oes genym ddim i'w gynnyg.—Mae'r dyn yn gas wrthyf o herwydd nad ydwyf yn credu yr hyn a ddywed am y dynion ieuainc.—Mae'n well iddynt gychwyn yn awr; canys [o achos] nid oes ganddynt ddim amser i'w golli.—Yn gymmaint ag (*Gr.* § 726 (a)) nad oes ganddo ddim, nis gallwn ddisgwyl dim ganddo.—Er mor ddiwyd ydym, nid ydym yn gallu ennill ond ychydig.—Y mae yn ddyledswydd arnoch wneyd eich goreu iddi am mai hyhi ydyw eich unig ferch.—Er mai hyhi ydyw ei unig chwaer, er hyny nid yw yn rhoddi dim iddi.—Er cymmaint sydd ganddo, nid oes ganddo ddigon.—Er mai nid myfi ydyw'r goreu o honynt, yr wyf er hyny yn haeddu cael rhywbeth.

B.) I do not like them; for they are unwilling to do what I want them to do.—Although she does not praise me, still I know that she does not hate me.—The men are very unhappy because they have so many enemies.—What is the reason that you do not forgive (to) him? Because he does not ask me to forgive him.—As they are so poor, we are willing to help them.—You must not be offended with him because he offers you so little.—Although these ladies are so liberal, still they have but few friends.—The shoemaker, poor as he is (*or* although he is so poor) offers three shillings.—Inasmuch as you have nothing to do here, you had better go home.—Seeing that we are not poor, they are not willing to do anything for us.—He blames my neighbour's sons because they do not tell the truth.—Seeing that || *you* believe the story, || *we* must believe it.—Although the young woman is so ungrateful, still I wish to do what I can for her.—What is the reason that he is afraid of me? Because he believes that you do not tell him the truth.—The children are not afraid of him, although **he** is the master.—Although **she** is the only good child he has, still he does not love her.—Seeing that **he** is your best friend, why do you not help him?—We are unwilling to pay him the money because **he** is not our master.—Although **we** are not the best scholars, still we deserve to have something.—He is willing to buy the two horses; for they are worth the money.—Although his uncle does so much for him, he never does anything for

his uncle.—None of us love her because she is always unkind to us.—Although you have so many houses and lands, still you think that you have not enough.—They do not believe the story because **we** say it.—He is so proud that I do not like to offer (to) him anything.—Although he does not believe your gardener, he believes **|| you**.—Inasmuch as the girls prefer staying at home, they may stay,—we have no objection.

C.) Gan ein bod yn eich digio mor fynych, y mae yn well i ni eich gadael.—Nis gallwn beidio â chredu yr hanes.—Er bod ganddi barch mawr i'ch rhieni, nid oes ganddi ddim parch i chwi.—Nis gallwn wrthynt.—Yn gymmaint a bod yn well genych eu cymdeithas hwy na'n cymdeithas ni, gwell i chwi [mae yn well i chwi] aros gyda hwynt.—Er eu bod yn ymddangos yn falch, nid ydym yn meddwl eu bod yn falch.—Nis gallaf wrth fy ŵyr ei fod yn fachgen mor anniolchgar.—Pa fodd bynag, nid oes neb o honom ni yn ewyllysio bod yng nghymdeithas dynion mor anwybodus.—Y mae yn ddrwg genyf ddweyd, er bod gan fy modryb ddigon o bob peth, nad ydyw er hyn yn mwynhau iechyd da.—Gan mai chwychwi ydyw'r ysgolaig goreu, chwychwi sydd i gael y wobr.—Nis gallaf beidio â maddeu iddynt, er gwaethed ydynt.—Gan fod ei hiechyd hi mor ddrwg, y mae yn well iddi beidio â myneg allan i'r gwlaw.—Y mae efe yn digio nid yn unig wrth ei elynion, ond hefyd wrth ei gyfeillion.—Pa ham yr ydych mor awyddus i'w boddhau hi? Am fod genyf barch mawr iddi.—Pa fodd bynag, nis gallwn ni wrthi ei bod hi yn rhoi cymmaint o flinder i'w rhieni.

D.) Inasmuch as they prefer the society of ignorant men to ours, they had better remain with them.—We cannot help saying what we believe.—However, I am glad to tell you that, although I am so poor, I enjoy good health.—I cannot help (= *prevent*) that.—We cannot help his being (W. = *him that he is*) so ignorant.—We have great regard for this gentleman, not only because he is so kind to the poor (*Gr.* §§ 413, 467, *b*), but also because he is so ready to pardon (to) his enemies.—They cannot help being offended with the lawyer's wife because she is such a proud woman.—As he is so very ignorant, his parents had better send him to school for two or three years.—As **he** is your only friend, how is it that (*l.u.* "why") you

don't try to help him?—The school children offend us because they always make so much noise.—Although he enjoys good health, still he is not happy.—Seeing that **you** are not this gentleman's servant, why does he expect (to) you to obey (to) him?—How is it (*or* what is the reason) that you have no respect for these people? Because they are both ignorant and proud.—Although he seems a proud man, his friends say that he is not proud.—They are not fond of our society because we do not praise them.—Although these boys offend us often, still we cannot help pardoning them.

CHAPTER XXXI.

[IMPERFECT TENSE,—progressive,—of habit,—answers to questions,—*pan* and *tra*,—point of time,—“*boreu heddyw*,”—“*boreu ddoe*,”—imperfect of must, have, want, &c.,—*boreu* and *cynnar*,—*hdyr* and *diweddar*,—“good morning to you,” &c.]

§ 308. IMPERFECT TENSE.

Progressive. Gr. § 255.

Yr oeddwn (i), *I was.* Gr. p. 64.

Yr oeddwn (i) yn dysgu, *I was learning.* Gr. p. 70.

The same idea is expressed by the *inflected form* of a certain class of verbs : such as *gweled*, *cysgu*, *eistedd*, *sefyll*, *gwybod*, *adnabod*.

Habit or custom. Gr. § 256.

Byddwn (i), *I used to be.* Gr. p. 64.

Dysgwn (i), *I used to [would] learn.*

Byddwn (i) yn dysgu, *I used to [would] learn.* } Gr. p. 70.

Habit or custom is also frequently expressed by the verb *arfer* (to use, to be in the habit of).


Arferwn fod,—byddwn yn arfer bod, *I used to be.*

Arferwn ddysgu,—byddwn yn arfer dysgu, *I used to learn.*

Irregular verbs.

Awn, *I used to go.* Gr. p. 80. Gwyddwn, *I knew.* Gr. p. 85.

Deuwn, *I used to come.* Gr. p. 82. Adwaenwn, *I knew.* Gr. p. 87.

§ 309.  The Eng. indefinite perfect, when it expresses a *continued state of things*, is rendered into W. by the imperfect.

Notes and References.

§ 310. *Yr oeddwn i gydag ef ddoe, I was with him yesterday.* Ex. §§ 71, 72.

§ 311. *Myfi oedd yno. Chwychwi oedd y goreu.* Gr. §§ 641, 642.

§ 312. Answers to questions.

Were you singing?

Yes :—yes, I was :—yes, I was singing.

No :—no, I was not :—no, I was not singing.

A oeddych chi yn canu?

Oeddwn :—oeddwn, yr oeddwn :—oeddwn, yr oeddwn yn canu.

Nac oeddwn :—nac oeddwn, nid oeddwn (i ddim) ; or nac oeddwn ddim :—nac oeddwn, nid oeddwn (i ddim) yn canu ; or nac oeddwn, ddim yn canu.

Did you often see him ?¹

A fydech chi yn ei weled ef yn fynych?

Yes :—yes, I did.

Byddwn :—byddwn, mi a fyddwn.

No :—no, I did not.

Na fyddwn :—na fyddwn, ni fyddwn (i ddim) ; or na fyddwn ddim.

§ 313. **Pan** and **tra.** Gr. § 800.

Pan (yr) oeddych chi yn canu, *when you were singing.*

Tra yr oeddych chi yn chwarae, *whilst they were playing.*

☞ “Pan y deuai,” or “pan ddeuai.” Gr. § 807.

§ 314. **Point of time.** Gr. §§ 454, 740.

Yr oedd y crydd a'r cigydd yma ddoe, the shoemaker and the butcher were here yesterday.

Doe² yr oeddwn yn siarad âg ef, it was yesterday I was speaking to him.

☞ The words *prydnawn* and *boreu* in the phrases *prydnawn heddyw*, *prydnawn ddoe*, &c., *boreu heddyw*, *boreu ddoe*, &c., retain the *rad.*, even when they follow the verb.

Nid oeddwn gyda hwynt boreu heddyw, *I was not with them this morning.*

Onid oeddych chi yn chwarae prydnawn ddoe? *were you not playing yesterday afternoon?*

This is accounted for by the fact that there is an ellipsis of the article *y*, which, if expressed (and it is sometimes expressed), would govern *pryd-*

¹ = *did you use to see him often*, or *were you in the habit of seeing him often?*

² This rule is not always observed. “*Ddoe yr oeddwn*,” &c. “*Bob mis y bydd efe yn talu.*”

nawn and boreu in the *rad.* sound. “*Y boreu heddyw.*” “*Y prydawn ddoe.*” When the order of the phrase is reversed, the article is oftener expressed than omitted. “*Heddyw'r boreu.*” “*Doe'r prydawn.*”

§ 315. *Doe*, yesterday, *trenydd*, the day after to-morrow, and *tranoeth*, the morrow, are put in the *mid.* after *boreu*, *prydawn*, and *nôs*. (*Boreu ddoe. Prydawn dreynydd. Nos dranoeth.*)

§ 316. Imperf. tense of **must** (or am obliged),—**have**,—**want**, &c.

I was obliged to sing, *yr oedd yn rhaid i mi ganu.* *Ex.* § 252.

He had a cup in his hand, *yr oedd ganddo gwpan yn ei law.* *Ex.* § 113.

What had you to tell me? *beth oedd genych chwi i'w ddweyd wrthyf?*

Who had a staff? *gan bwy yr oedd ffon?—pwy oedd â ffon ganddo?—pwy oedd ganddo ffon?* *Ex.* § 150.

They wanted new clothes, *yr oedd arnynt eisieu dillad newydd.* *Ex.* § 212.

Who wanted the other? *pwy oedd (arno) cisieu'r llall?—pwy oedd âg eisieu'r llall (arno)?* *Ex.* § 265.

How many did you want? *pa faint oedd arnoch eu heisieu? pa faint oedd arnoch eisieu?* *Ex.* § 266.

He owed me nothing, *nid oedd arno ef ddim i mi.*

How many pounds did you owe them? *pa sawl punt oedd arnoch chwi iddynt?* } *Ex.* § 211.

Give the Welsh of “I was afraid of those large dogs” (*Ex.* § 212): “she was hungry,”—“they were not thirsty,”—“did you long for them?” (*Ex.* § 264): “who was afraid of the lion?”—“which of them was hungry?”—“how many of you were thirsty?”—“who longed for home?”—(*Ex.* § 265): “what were the strangers afraid of?” (*Ex.* § 266.)

§ 317. VOCABULARY.

Staff, walking stick, <i>ffôn</i> , <i>pl.</i> <i>ffôn</i>	Time, <i>prŷd</i> , <i>pl.</i> — <i>iau</i> (<i>m.</i>)
To sing, <i>canu.</i> [(<i>f.</i>)	In time, <i>mewn pryd.</i>
To use, to be in the habit of, <i>ârfer.</i>	At the time, <i>ar y prŷd.</i>
To rise, get up, <i>codi.</i>	Then, at that time, <i>y prŷd hwnw</i> (<i>or hyny.</i>)
Weak, <i>gwân</i> , <i>pl.</i> <i>gwëiniaid.</i>	Formerly, <i>gŷnt.</i>
Early, <i>boreu</i> ; <i>cynnar</i> . ³	Ago, back, <i>yn ol.</i>
Early (<i>adv.</i>), <i>yn foreu</i> ; <i>yn gŷn-nar.</i>	When (<i>conj.</i>), <i>pàn</i> (<i>md.</i>)
Late, <i>hŵyr</i> ; <i>diweddar</i> . ⁴	Whilst, <i>tra.</i>
Late (<i>adv.</i>), <i>yn hŵyr</i> ; <i>yn ddiweddar.</i>	Until (<i>prep.</i>), <i>hŷd or tèn</i> (<i>md.</i>)
	By (<i>noting time</i>), <i>èrbyn</i> (<i>rd.</i>)

³ *Boreu*, early in the morning; *cynnar*, early in the day or the season.

⁴ *Hŵyr*, late in the evening or night; *diweddar*, late in the day or the season.

Yesterday, <i>dôe</i> (<i>m.</i>)	The-night-before-last, <i>èchnos</i> (<i>f.</i>)
To-night, <i>heno</i> (<i>f.</i>)	Morning, <i>boreu</i> (<i>m.</i>)
The-day-before-yesterday, <i>èch-doe</i> (<i>m.</i>)	Afternoon, <i>prydawn</i> (<i>m.</i>)
Last night, <i>nèithiwr</i> or <i>nèith-wyr</i> (<i>m.</i>)	Evening, <i>hŵyr</i> ; <i>prydawn</i> ⁵ (<i>m.</i>)
	This morning, <i>boreu heddyw</i> . ⁶
	Yesterday morning, <i>boreu ddoe</i> .
The morning of the-day-before-yesterday, <i>boreu echdoe</i> .	
This afternoon, <i>prydawn heddyw</i> .	
Yesterday afternoon, <i>prydawn ddoe</i> .	
The afternoon of the-day-before-yesterday, <i>prydawn echdoe</i> .	
This evening, <i>prydawn heddyw</i> ; <i>heno</i> . ⁷	
Yesterday evening, <i>prydawn ddoe</i> ; <i>neithiwr</i> .	
The evening before last, <i>prydawn echdoe</i> ; <i>echnos</i> .	
Good morning (to you), <i>boreu da i chwi</i> , <i>boreu da'wch</i> .	
Good night (to you), <i>nos da</i> ⁸ <i>i chwi</i> , <i>nos da'wch</i> , <i>noswaith dda i chwi</i> .	
Good afternoon (to you), <i>prydawn da i chwi</i> .	
Good evening (to you), <i>prydawn</i> (or <i>nos</i>) <i>da i chwi</i> .	
Good day (to you), <i>dydd da i chwi</i> .	

§ 318. EXERCISES.

A.) Yr oeddynt oll yma ddoe.—Pwy oedd gyda chwi boreu heddyw? Eich cefndyr a'ch cyfnitheroedd chwi oedd gyda ni boreu heddyw.—A oedd ar y dyn dieithr, (yr hwn) oedd yn sefyll wrth y drws prydawn heddyw, eisieu gweled rhywun? Oedd, yr oedd arno eisieu eich gweled chwi neu eich brawd.—Yr oedd y bobl hyn yn meddwl am gychwyn i'r dref prydawn ddoe; ond yr oedd yn rhaid iddynt aros tan [hyd] boreu heddyw.—Nis gallem ddyfod yn ol neithiwr.—Nid oedd neb o honynt yma mewn pryd.—A fyddech chwi yn canu llawer, pan (yr) oeddych yn ieuanc? Byddwn, gryn lawer.—Yr oeddym yn ddedwydd iawn, tra yr oeddych chwi yn aros gyda ni.—Ni byddem un amser yn eu gweled y pryd hwnw.—Nid oedd neb o honom yn medru ysgrifenu dri mis yn ol.—A oeddynt hwy gydag ef ar y pryd? Nac oeddynt.—Pa ham yr oedd yn rhaid iddynt gychwyn mor gynnar? Ni wyddom ni ddim.—Druan o honoch! yr ydych chwi yn rhy ddiweddar.—Yr oedd yn rhaid i'r bechgyn gychwyn yn foreu iawn boreu

⁵ *Prydawn*, the early part, *hŵyr*, the late part, of the evening.

⁶ Or, but less common, *heddyw'r boreu*, *doe'r boreu*, *echdoe'r boreu*, *heddyw'r prydawn*, *doe'r prydawn*, *echdoe'r prydawn*.

⁷ Use *prydawn heddyw*, *prydawn ddoe*, &c., for the early part, and *heno*, *neithiwr*, &c., for the late part, of the evening.

⁸ *Nos* in this phrase is followed by the *rad.* sound.

ddoe.—Gwyddech chwi beth oedd yn angenrheidiol ; ond ni wyddem ni ddim.—Yr oedd hi yn hwyr iawn pan oeddynt yma.—Onid oedd hi gartref ddoe ac echdoe? Oedd.—Pan (yr) oedd efe gyda ni, codai [byddai yn codi,—arferai godi] yn foreu bob dydd, ac ai [a byddai yn myned,—ac arferai fyned] allan i'r meusydd.—Pan ddeuent yma, byddent yn wastad yn llawen.—Doe, nid echdoe, yr oeddwn yn y dref.—Tri mis yn ol yr oedd ganddo ddigon o aur ac arian ; ond yn awr nid oes ganddo yr un swllt ar ei helw.—Pa newyddion oedd genych i'w dweyd wrthynt? Nid oedd genym ddim newyddion.—Pwy oedd y dynion ieuainc (y rhai) oedd (arnynt) eisieu gweled yr offeiriad echnos? Dau fab y meddyg oeddynt hwy.—Fy chwaer hynaf, nid fy chwaer ieuengaf, oedd (arni) eisieu eich gweled neithiwr.—Nid oedd ar y ddynes fy ofn i ; ond yr oedd arni ofn fy ngwr.—Beth oedd arnoch ei ofn? Nid oedd arnom ofn dim yn y byd.—Mi a adwaenwn amryw o honynt gynt ; ond nid adwaen neb o honynt yn awr.—Pa sawl un o honom oedd arnoch eu heisieu boreu echdoe? Yr oedd arnaf eich eisieu chwi i gyd.—Yr ydym yn disgwyl cael y pethau hyny heno.—A oeddych chwi yn yr ysgol yn y boreu? Oeddwn ; ac yn y prydawn hefyd.—Yn yr hŵyr y deuai efe yma, pan ddeuai : anaml iawn y deuai yn y boreu na'r prydawn.

B.) Where were you the-day-before-yesterday? They knew well where we were at the time.—The boy wanted to go to the village last night.—They were both in this house two years ago.—A few of them were in church in time ; but most of them were too late.—When I was in London, I went every morning to see some of the wonders of the place, and in the evening I came back to my friend's house.—What did the stranger want in the orchard yesterday?—Why were they from home the-night-before-last?—Was it the lawyer's son who was with you yesterday evening? No.—His neighbour's three daughters were here until yesterday afternoon.—We both intend to be at Carmarthen to-night.—Did they not want the gardener to be with them early yesterday? Yes, they did.—The two strangers were at the door very early this morning.—Myvanwy used to read her book, whilst the other children were playing.—When she was in school, she longed for home ;

but now she longs to go back to school.—When were the clergyman's two little children here? This afternoon.—They used to return by four o'clock in the afternoon.—Did not the women know how late it was?—My cousin was there too early (*in the day*), and I was there too late (*in the day*).—They were all out too late yesterday evening.—We intended to go to church in the morning, and afternoon, and evening; but we could not go.—Two months ago she was in this room.—What did you want then? We wanted the little girl to sing.—He was so weak that he could not walk without a stick.—Which of them did the lady want yesterday morning?—Were the men thirsty this morning? No, they were not.—How often did they at that time come here? Two or three times a week.—He was then a very strong young man; but he is now so weak that he cannot walk from this door to that (= *yonder*) wall without a stick.—Were we not obliged to return by ten o'clock in the evening? Yes, you were.—Four months ago the girl could not read a single word.—He had a stick in his hand.—How many farthings had he then in his pocket? He had but few.

C.) A oedd yn rhaid iddo anfon y llyfrau a'r papurau pryd-nawn ddoe? Oedd, yr oedd.—Nid oedd yr un o honynt gartref echnos.—Byddent yn ymweled [ymwelent,—arferent ymweled] â ni yn aml gynt; ond yn awr ni byddwn yn gweled neb o honynt.—Yr oedd hi echdoe yn bwrw eira yn y boreu, a'r prydawn, a'r hwyr.—Yr ydym ein tri i fyned yno heno.—Arferwn godi yn foreu iawn y pryd hyny.—Rhaid i ni oll gofio myned yno mewn pryd.—Pa rai o honoch oedd gartref prydawn echdoe?—Nid oeddym yn gallu gweled neb ar y pryd.—Tra yr oedd y plant yma, yr oeddynt yn dda ac yn ufudd iawn.—Byddem yn myned oddi cartref yn fynych gynt; ond ni byddwn byth [un amser] yn myned oddi cartref yn awr.—Arferwn ddarllen llawer y pryd hyny; ond ni byddaf yn darllen ond ychydig yn awr.—Tair blynedd yn ol byddent yn myned oddi cartref yn aml.—Onid oedd yn rhaid i chwi fyned yn ol erbyn tri o'r gloch? Oedd.—A fyddai efe yn codi yn foreu pan oedd yma? Na fyddai, un amser.—Pa faint oedd arnoch chwi i'r siopwr? Nid oedd arnom ni ddim iddo.—Ai chwychwi oedd (arnoch) eisieu pwys neu ddau o gaws?

Ië.—Chwychwi oedd y plant gwaethaf yn yr ysgol.—Beth yr oeddych yn ei wneyd yn yr ardd prydawn echdoe? Edrych ar y garddwyr yn gweithio yr oeddym.

D.) It is so late that I must say “good night” to you.—They were both formerly very fond of rising early; but now they do not get up until ten o’clock, or half-past ten.—He says that he is going to bed early to-night.—What had he then in his hand? His father’s stick.—Our parents were from home yesterday and the-day-before.—What was he afraid of the-night-before-last? He was not afraid of anything, for aught I know.—Both wanted me to remain with them until the morning of the-day-before-yesterday.—Did the head-master often give you a lesson when you were in school? No, it was very seldom the head-master gave us a lesson.—The servants could not come back last night.—What was the smith doing then? He was **shoeing this lady’s pony**.—Whilst the boy was in this school, he was always very industrious.—Who had a stick in his hand at the time? **You** had one.—They used formerly to give us everything that we wanted; but now they never give us anything.—Where were you going the afternoon of the-day-before-yesterday? To the market.—We are both coming back this evening.—He owed me four or five pounds at the time.—Those idle young men never used to get up until ten o’clock.—It was yesterday afternoon the doctor was here.—Were not some of you out with them the evening (*or* night) before last? No.—How much money did they owe the butcher? Ten shillings.—None of us were in school this morning in time.—**They** were the best readers and writers in school.—Her grandson always came too late, and her grand-daughter too early.—It is time for us to go,—good afternoon.—Whom did the shopkeeper’s wife want to see the evening before last? She wanted to see **you**.—You must all be back here by nine o’clock this evening.—When you were at school, you never went to school in the morning.—How much butter did she want? A pound or two.—He often sat in this chair for hours.—I am very glad to see you.—Two or three hours ago he was in the orchard, talking to the gardeners.—Who was singing when the lady was coming in? **I** was singing.—What was his master doing at the time? He was **reading a newspaper**.

CHAPTER XXXII.

[Transitive clause,—cause clause,—concessive clause.]

Notes and References.

§ 319. **Transitive clause.** Imperfect tense.

Ni wyddai plant yr ysgol fod eu meist'r yn gwrando, *the school children did not know that their master was listening.* Gr. § 761.

Gwyddent oll nad oeddym yn bresennol, *they all knew that we were not present.* Gr. § 762.

Ymddengys mai yn yr ardd yr oedd efe, *it appears that he was in the garden.* Gr. § 772.

Mae'n eglur nad [mai nid] ei chyfy'rder oedd y gwr ieuanc hwnw, *it is evident that that young man was not her second cousin.*

§ 320. **Cause clause.** Imperfect tense. A transitive clause may be converted into a cause clause merely by prefixing a *causal* conjunction.

Yr oedd arno eisieu fy ngweled am fy mod yn berthynas i hen gyfaill iddo, *he wanted to see me because I was a relation of an old friend of his.*

Yr oeddynt yn ddig wrthym am nad oeddym yn gwrando arnynt, *they were angry with us because we were not listening to them.*

§ 321. **Concessive clause.** Imperfect tense. A transitive clause may be converted into a concessive clause merely by prefixing a *concessive* conjunction.

Yr oeddym yn oer iawn, er ein bod yn agos at y tan, *we were very cold, although we were near the fire.*

Er nad oedd arnaf eisieu dim, yr oedd ar y foneddiges eisieu i mi gymmeryd llawer o bethau, *although I did not want anything, the lady wanted me to take many things.*

§ 322. VOCABULARY.

Second cousin, cyfy'rder, *pl.* cyfyrdyr (*c.*)

Relation, relative, perthynas, *pl.*—au (*m.*)

Key, agòriad, *pl.*—au (*m.*); S.W. àllwedd *pl.*—au (*f.*)

Oath, llw, *pl.*—on (*m.*)

Property, eiddo (*m.*)

Present, (*adj.*), presennol.

Absent, absennol.

To listen (to), gwrandaw or gwrando (*ar*).

To belong; to be related to, pèrthyn.

Satisfied or content (with), boddlon (*ar*).

Therefore, am hyny.

Still (*with comp. adj.*), fyth.

§ 323. EXERCISES.

A.) Yr ydwyf yn ofni eu bod yn eich disgwyl adref neith-iwr.—Pwy sy'n dweyd nad oedd hi ddim yn foreu hyfryd boreu echdoe?—Ni wyddai neb o honom fod eich dau gyfyrder yn bresennol y pryd hyny.—Er bod gan yr amaethwr lawer o wenith a cheirch, yr oedd arno eisieu chwaneg.—Nis gallwn agor y drws am nad oedd yr agoriad [allwedd] genyf.—Yr oeddym oll yn awyddus i'w gynnorthwyo am ei fod yn berthynas agos i'n cyfaill.—Yr ydwyf yn cofio yr hanes yn awr, er nad oeddwn yn ei gofio prydawn ddoe.—Mae'r gwas a'r forwyn yn dweyd ar eu llw nad oeddynt yn bresennol.—Pwy o honynt sy'n dweyd mai myfi oedd yn gwrando wrth y drws?—Yr ydym ni ein tri yn barod i gymmeryd ein llw nad [mai nid] nyny oedd yn gwrando neithiwr wrth y drws.—Er mai Arthur, eich cyfyrder, oedd fy nghyfaill goreu gynt, er hyny anaml iawn y byddaf yn ei weled yn awr.—Myfi a fyddai fynychaf gydag ef, er nad [mai nid] myfi oedd ei berthynas agosaf.—Pa ham yr oeddych mor awyddus i wrando arno? O herwydd mai efe oedd yn siarad gallaf o bawb o honynt.—Pa ham yr oeddynt yn anewyllysgar i roddi y wobwr gyntaf i fab fy nghyfyrder? Am nad [mai nid] efe oedd yr ysgolaig goreu,—dyna oedd yr achos.—Os yw yn dweyd ar ei lw ei fod yn absennol, y mae yn rhaid i ni ei gredu.—Er nad oedd ganddo fawr, yr oedd yn ddigon boddlon ar yr hyn oedd ganddo.—Nid oedd y pethau hyny ddim yn perthyn i ni; ac am hyny nid oedd arnom eu heisieu.—Ni wyddai'r foneddiges ein bod ni yn perthyn mor agos iddi.—Yr ydych chwi yn ysgrifenu yn ddigon drwg; ond y mae'r bachgen arall yn ysgrifenu yn waeth fyth.—Ni waeth iddo beidio â chadw swm.—Hi a ddywed nad oes gan ei thaid ddim eiddo i'w adael i neb.—Y mae fy ewythr yn bur gas wrthyf; ond y mae fy modryb yn gasach fyth.—Nid yw allwedd [agoriad] yr Eglwys ganddo; ac am hyny ni all agor y drws.—Er tloted [mor dlawd] oeddwn, yr oeddwn yn ddigon boddlon ar yr hyn oedd genyf.

B.) Although they were relations of ours, we did not want to see them.—You are all very unkind; and therefore I am glad that I am not related to you.—We wanted to have the sacks because they belonged to us.—My second cousin is ready to take his oath that he was not present then.—They could not

listen to him.—Although he had the key, he could not open the door.—Although we were not poor, we had but few true friends.—She says that she does not like that lawyer because he wanted her to be unkind to her poor relations.—He finds fault with me because I was not present yesterday morning.—We believe the three girls were absent when your second cousin was here.—Who says that I was not satisfied with what I had (*or* possessed)?—However, they are very good people: they are kind not only to their poor relations, but also to many poor people who are not related to them.—Although all belonged to her, she did not want to take anything.—I am very idle; but I think that my brother and second cousin are still more idle.—We really (*l.u.* “indeed”) did not know that any of you were absent the-day-before-yesterday.—Although she enjoyed such good health, still she was not happy.—**He** was the strongest, although **he** was not the tallest.—The young lady says that she believes her two uncles were obliged to go to London that morning.—Your uncle was very sorry to hear that you were so unwilling to listen to me.—He always used to say that **Myvanwy** was the prettiest of all the girls.—They may as well be silent.—This is good; but that is still better.—He must take his oath that he was absent.—They belonged to us; and therefore we wanted to have them.—We all think that **your nephews** were his best friends.—What is the reason that you are going to leave all your property to this gentleman? Because **he** was my best friend when I was poor.—Did not the young man know that his aunt had no property?—Arthur has a good deal; but Iorwerth has still more.—Are you satisfied with what you have? Yes.—Although **he** was my nearest relation, I did not like him.—Although they were so rich (*Ex.* 304), they were not satisfied.—Your parents were willing to listen to us, although || *you* were not.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

[Numerals,—“*dau gant o ddefaid*,”—this day week,—months and days,—*punnoedd* and *punnau*.]

Notes and References.

§ 324. Numerals.

Un diwrnod ar ddeg, *eleven days.*
 Un ar ddeg o ddiwrnodiau, = *eleven of days.* } Gr. § 502 : also § 490.
 Yr unfed awr ar ddeg, *the eleventh hour.* }

When the noun is accompanied by an adj., the form with *o* is to be preferred.

Tair ar ddeg o fuchod duon, *thirteen black cows.*

Dau gant and the numerals above it are almost always followed by *o*.

Yr oedd genyf unwaith ddau gant o ddefaid, *I once had two hundred sheep.*

Y mae ganddo fil o bunnau yn ei logell, *he has a thousand pounds in his pocket.*

§ 325. Eng. This day week. W. A week to to-day.

We were absent this day week, *yr oeddyw yn absennol wythnos i heddyw.*

Who is to be here this day fortnight? *pwyl sydd i fod yma bythefnos i heddyw?*

§ 326. Eng. A hundred and fifty. W. (generally) A hundred and a half.

This large farmer has only two hundred and fifty sheep, *nid oes gan yr amaethur mawr yma ond dau gant a hanner o ddefaid.*

§ 327. VOCABULARY.

January, Ionawr, mis Ionawr. ¹	Monday morning, boreu dydd Llŷn.
February, Chwèfror, mis Chwèfror.	Sunday afternoon, prydawn dydd Sŷl.
March, Mawrth, mis Mawrth.	Monday afternoon, prydawn dydd Llŷn.
Sunday, dydd Sŷl, Sŷl, <i>pl. Sŷliau.</i> ¹	Sunday evening, prydawn dydd Sŷl, nos Sŷl.
Monday, dydd Llŷn.	Monday evening, prydawn dydd Llŷn, nos Llŷn. ⁴
Tuesday, dydd Mawrth.	To-morrow, y fory (<i>m.</i>)
Wednesday, dydd Mèrcher.	To-morrow morning, boreu y fory. ⁵
Thursday, dydd Iau (<i>coll. difiau.</i>)	
Friday, dydd Gwener.	
Saturday, dydd Sadwrn.	
Sunday night, nos Sŷl.	
Monday night, nos Llŷn. ²	
Sunday morning, boreu dydd Sŷl. ³	

¹ Give the gender of the proper names of *months* and *days.* Gr. § 147.

² And so on,—*nos Fawrth, nos Fercher, &c.* Observe the *mid.* sound after *nôs*,—*nôs* being *fem.* Gr. § 408.

³ Or, but less common, *dydd Sul y boreu, dydd Sul y prydawn, dydd Llun y boreu, &c.*

⁴ And so on,—*boreu dydd Mawrth, prydawn dydd Mawrth, &c.*

⁵ Or, but less common, *y fory'r boreu, y fory'r prydawn, y fory'r nos, &c.*

To-morrow afternoon, prydawn y fory.	Twelve, deuddeg.
To-morrow evening, prydawn y fory; nos y fory.	Twelfth, deuddëgfed.
To-morrow night, nos y fory.	Thirteen, tri (<i>f. tair</i>) ar ddeg.
The-day-after-to-morrow, trënydd (<i>m.</i>)	Thirteenth, trydydd (<i>f. trydedd</i>) ar ddeg.
The morning of the-day-after-to-morrow, boreu drënydd. ⁶	Fourteen, pedwar (<i>f. pedair</i>) ar ddeg.
The following day, the morrow, tranoeth, <i>coll. tranwaeth (m.)</i>	Fourteenth, pedwerydd (<i>f. pedwar-edd</i>) ar ddeg.
Pound (<i>in money</i>), pùnt, <i>pl. pùn-noedd, pùnnau</i> ⁷ (<i>f.</i>)	Fifteen, pÿmtheg.
Fortnight, pythëfnos (<i>f.</i>)	Fifteenth, pÿmthëgfed.
Thousand, mil. <i>pl. -oedd (f.⁸)</i>	Sixteen, un ar bÿmtheg.
Eleven, un ar ddeg.	Sixteenth, ùnfed ar bÿmtheg.
Eleventh, ùnfed ar ddeg.	Last, diweddaf (<i>coll. diwaethaf</i>);
	Next, nesaf. [olaf.]
	Instant (= <i>present</i>), o'r mis hwn; o'r mis presennol.

§ 328. EXERCISES.

A.) Pa bryd yr ydych chiwi yn disgwyl y garddwr? Y fory neu dreynydd.—Y mae'r cigydd yn dweyd fod yn rhaid iddo fyned i'r farchnad boreu y fory, a dyfod yn ol erbyn nos Fawrth.—Y mae'r siopwyr yn bwriadu bod yma erbyn prydawn y fory neu boreu⁹ dreynydd (*Ex. § 315*).—Dyma'r swllt olaf sydd genyf ar fy helw.—Yn y flwyddyn un mil, chwe chant a phedair.—Yr oedd genyf bythefnos i heddyw fil o bunnau yn y ty; ond nid oes genyf yn awr yr un bunt.—Nid oedd ond ychydig yn yr ysgol y Sul [ddydd Sul] diweddaf.—Y mae'r offeiriad yn darllen y bymthegfed salm ar ol y cant.—Y maent oll yn bwriadu ein gadael yr wythnos nesaf.—Pwy oedd yn cerdded gyda chiwi i'r dref ddydd Iau diweddaf? Ein cyfyrdyr.—Y mae gan yr amaethwr yng nghylch pum cant o ddefaid ar y mynydd.—Pwy sy'n dweyd fod genyf amryw bunnoedd yn fy llogell?—Yr oeddwn yn bur sal y diwrnod hwnw; ond yr oeddwn dranoeth cyn iached ag ydwyf yn awr.—A ydych chiwi yn disgwyl y bachgen a'r eneth adref y fory?

⁶ And so on,—*prydawn dreynydd, nos dreynydd, &c.*

⁷ Use *punnau* after numerals. *Tri chant o bunnau*, three hundred pounds.

⁸ *Mil* after *un* retains its *rad.* *Un mil, one thousand.*

⁹ *Boreu* and *prydawn* retain the *rad.* after words which govern the *middle.* “Y fory neu boreu dreynydd.” “Tan prydawn y fory.” *Boreu* and *prydawn* are really governed by *y* understood. *See Ex. § 314.*

Nac ydym : prydnawn dreynydd y maent yn dyfod.—A oedd llawer yn yr Eglwys ddydd Sul? Oedd, gryn lawer.—Yr oedd efe yn darllen y drydedd bennod ar ddeg neu y bedwaredd bennod ar ddeg o ail Lyfr y Breninoedd.—Yr oedd y garddwyr yn gweithio yn yr ardd yn hwyr nos Lun ; ond nid oedd neb o honynt yno boreu dranoeth.—Nid oes neb o'r garddwyr yn addaw aros gartref prydnawn y fory.—A oes rhai o honoch yn meddwl bod [meddwl am fod] oddi cartref nos y fory? Nac oes, neb.—Y mae eich meibion yn bwriadu aros gyda'u hewythr nos dreynydd, onid ydynt? Ydynt, y maent.—Y mae ar y garddwr eisieu un swllt ar bymtheg ac un geiniog ar ddeg.—Dywed y gweision nad oes ond un ar ddeg o ddefaid yn y cae.—Nid oes ganddo ragor na chant a hanner o bunnau.

B.) The farmers intend to sell some of their horses the-day-after-to-morrow.—Does she expect her aunt to-morrow?—We intend to be from home to-morrow and the day after.—Few of them promise to come to-morrow morning ; but all of them promise to come in the afternoon or the evening.—It was very late when the gardener was in the garden.—Which of you promises to be at home to-morrow evening (*or* to-morrow night)?—In the year one thousand, seven hundred and sixteen.—I believe he has about fifteen horses, and four hundred sheep, or more.—We want to buy about a hundred and fifty sheep.—He is not willing to give more than two hundred pounds for the house and garden.—He is giving out the one hundred and eleventh hymn.—Is this the last day of the year? Yes.—She has many pounds.—She says that she was from home on Sunday.—I did not know that you were in church on Sunday morning.—Here beginneth the fifteenth chapter of the first Book of Kings.—How many pounds had he? He says that he had two hundred pounds.—I thought yesterday of starting to-morrow morning ; but now I do not think of starting until the morning of the-day-after-to-morrow.—Do the gardeners promise to come back to-morrow evening? Yes.—They say that they are coming with us to-morrow afternoon, and they promise to stay with us until the afternoon (*or* evening) of the-day-after-to-morrow.—I was then from home ; but I was at home the following day.—Who are coming here

the-day-after-to-morrow? The farmers' servants.—They promise to stay with us to-morrow night.—Was not your brother there the following day? Yes.—He intends to go to visit a friend of his next Thursday, and to come back the following day.—We are thinking of going to London to-morrow morning or to-morrow afternoon.—They were singing the one hundred and sixteenth psalm.—There are two thousand soldiers coming.—How many sheep and lambs have they to sell? They think they have about three hundred and fifty.

C.) Gwyddem nad oedd y bobl yno ddydd Sul.—A ydych chi yn sicr nad oedd y garddwr yn yr ardd ddydd Llun? Nac ydwyf, nid ydwyf yn sicr; ond yr ydwyf yn meddwl nad oedd yno ddydd Llun.—Pwy oedd gydag ef ddydd Mawrth, yr unfed ar ddeg o fis Ionawr diweddaf? Nid oedd neb gydag ef y diwrnod hwnw; ond yr oedd dau neu dri o'i frodyr gydag ef ddydd Mercher, y deuddegfed o fis Ionawr.—Y maent yn dweyd fod yn rhaid i'ch chwiorydd aros gyda hwy tan [hyd] boreu dydd Llun.—Nid yw yn rhaid i chi fyned yn ol erbyn dydd Iau, a ydyw? Nac ydyw.—Pa bryd yr oeddynt yn addaw ymweled â chi? Dydd Mawrth, y pymthegfed o Chwefror nesaf.—Yr oeddym yn bwriadu myned oddi cartref boreu dydd Iau, a dyfod yn ol erbyn wyth o'r gloch yn yr hwyr; ond nis gallwn gychwyn tan ddydd Gwener.—Onid oedd efe yn nhy eich ewythr ddydd Sadwrn, y trydydd ar ddeg o fis Mawrth diweddaf? Nac oedd. Byddant yn ymweled â ni ar ddydd Sadwrn.—Yr ydym yn ei disgwyl hi adref bythefnos i ddoe.—Byddwn gynt yn darllen cryn lawer ar ddydd Sul.—Nid oedd llawer o bobl ieuainc yn y dref (ar) y dydd Gwener hwnw.—Yr oedd fy mab hynaf a'm merch ieuengaf yma dair wythnos ar ddeg yn ol.—Onid oes deuddeg mis mewn blwyddyn? Oes.—Lle yr oedd y bobl dda hyny prydawn dydd Sul? Yr oedd llawer o honynt yn absennol.—Y maent yn disgwyl pawb o honoch ar y trydydd ar ddeg o Fawrth nesaf.—Yr ydym yn meddwl fod pedwar ar ddeg o ddynion a thair ar ddeg o wragedd yn bresennol y nos Fawrth hono.—Yr oedd rhai am gychwyn ar yr unfed ar ddeg o'r mis hwn.

D.) These good people did not know that you were absent on Sunday.—Were the children in school on Tuesday, the fourteenth of February?—Do you promise to be with us on

Friday, the eleventh of January next? No.—Which of you were absent last Monday morning?—Some of us are coming next Thursday.—Arthur says that he is going from home on Friday morning.—When are your second cousins coming? Next Wednesday.—This day fortnight our two sons were here with us; but now they are far from home. When she does come, she always comes here on a Saturday.—I have eleven grey ponies.—3312.—Must you sell your horse for sixteen pounds?—They say that they had at the time thirteen pounds, twelve shillings, and eleven pence half-penny.—There were more than fifteen black lambs in that field.—They cannot go until Tuesday afternoon.—I expect her here on the twelfth or thirteenth instant.—Do you say that you need not go until Saturday evening (*or* night)? We must go on Monday morning.—She was here in March last.—He goes to church every Sunday.—They formerly used to visit us every Wednesday afternoon.—You must be back by Tuesday, the sixteenth of next March.—They were present on the twelfth of January last.—Between the eleventh and fifteenth of February.—Several of our neighbours were absent that Thursday evening.—My children are going to London on the thirteenth instant.—They say that there were but few present that Friday morning.—My nephew promises to remain with me for a fortnight.—He was here on the 12th inst.—Who were those young ladies who were walking with your uncle and aunt last Saturday morning?—The farmer has thirteen fat geese ready for the market.—5815.—You were at Carmarthen this day week, were you not? No, we were all at home this day week.—Here are twelve hundred pounds: are you satisfied with that?

CHAPTER XXXIV.

[PERFECT TENSE,—indef., definite, progressive,—“was,”—questions and answers to questions,—*er, crys, am, —er's talm, er's meityn*,—how long?]

§ 329. PERFECT TENSE.

(a) *Indefinite and definite.* Gr. § 258.

Bûm (i), *I was; I have been.* Gr. p. 64.

Dysgais (i), *I learnt; I have learnt.* Gr. p. 71.

*(b) Definite.*Yr wyf (fi) wedi bod, *I have been.* Gr. p. 64.Yr wyf (fi) wedi dysgu, *I have learnt.* Gr. p. 71.*(c) Progressive.* Gr. § 265.Bâm (i) yn dysgu,
Yr wyf (fi) wedi bod yn dysgu, } *I have been learning.**(d) Irregular verbs.*Aethym (i), *I went, &c.* Gr. p. 80.Daethym (i), *I came, &c.* Gr. p. 82.Gwnaethym (i), *I did or made, &c.* Gr. p. 84.Cefais (i), *I had (or got), &c.* Gr. p. 89.*(e) Conjugate*

Mae'r bachgen wedi fy nharo (i). Ex. § 208.

Efe a'm tarawodd (i). Tarawodd (efe) fi. Ex. § 247.

Notes and References.

§ 330. The Eng. "was" expresses both the imperf. (= W. *oeddw'n*, L. *eram*) and the perf. indef. (= W. *bâm*, L. *fui*).

"I was there when your brother was there," yr *oeddw'n* yno pan *oedd* eich brawd yno.

"We were in the fair yesterday," *buom* yn y ffair ddoe.

When, in the Exercises, "was" is followed by *p. ind.* (i.e. *perf. indef.*) it is to be translated by *bâm*.

§ 331. Questions and answers to questions. Gr. §§ 828, 830.

Did you see the Bishop's sermon? A welsch chwi bregeth yr Esgob ?

Yes:—yes, I did; yes, I saw it Do, or gwelais:¹—do, mi a'i gwelais (hi).

No:—no, I did not; no, I did not see it. Na ddo, or na welais:¹—na ddo, ni welais hi, or na ddo, ni welais mo honi.

Have they finished? A ydynt hwy wedi gorphen ?

Yes:—yes, they have:—yes, they Ydynt:—ydynt, y maent:—ydynt, y maent wedi gorphen.

You did not hear the sermon, did you? Ni chlywsoch y [mo'r] bregeth ai do, or a glywsoch chwi ?

We paid you yesterday, did we not? Ni a dalasom i chwi ddoe, onid do, or oni thalasom ni ?

§ 332. The contracted *ysgrifen'som*, *tal'som*, &c., is always used in coll. language. Gr. § 242 (b).

¹ Not very common.

§ 333. Give the indef. perf. of *addaw*, *clywed*, and *gwelod* (*Gr.* § 242); *parotol* (*Gr.* §§ 243, 244, *d*).

§ 334. Y mae efe *newydd* fyned, *he is just gone*. [Not, "*newydd wedi* myned."]]

§ 335. **Er**, **erys** or **er's**, and **am** (*prepositions*).

Erys refers to *past point of time*, and is used before *indefinitive* nouns, = **for**, when *for* implies *point of time*.

Er refers to *past point of time*, and is used before *definitive* nouns, = **since**.

Am is **for** in *future time*; and also **for** in *past time*, when *for* implies *duration of time*. *Tros* or *dros* is sometimes used for *am*.

Ni buont yma *er's* mis, *they have not been here for a month*.

Ni chlywsom oddi wrthi er y degfed o Fawrth, *we have not heard from her since the 10th of March*.

Nid yw hi yn bwriadu dychwelyd am flwyddyn, *she does not intend to return for a year*.

Arosasant gyda ni am bythefnos, *they remained with us for a fortnight*.

Phrases beginning with *erys* always imply *past point of time*. (See Vocabulary.)

§ 336. VOCABULARY.

Bishop, èsgob, *pl.*-ion (*m.*)

Sermon, pregeth, *pl.*-au (*f.*)

Window, ffenestr, *pl.*-i (*f.*)

Fair, ffair, *pl.* ffeliriau (*f.*)

Shame, cywilydd (*m.*)

To meet, cyfarfod (*â*). *Gr.* § 321.

To strike, taro, taraw. *Gr.* § 236 (*b*).

To look (for), chwilio or edrych (*am*).

To finish, gòrphen, dârfod.²

To preach, pregethu.

Lately, yn ddiweddar.

Just (adv.), newydd (*md.*)

The other day, y dydd o'r blaen (*S.W. coll.* pa ddiwrnod).

The whole day (adv.), trwy'r dydd.

At last, o'r diwedd.

Anywhere, yn ùn lle: i ùn lle.³

Nowhere, not ... anywhere, nid ... yn ùn lle: nid ... i ùn lle:³ (*in answers*) yn ùn lle, i ùn lle.³

Somewhere, yn rhywle: i rhywle.³

Since, ever since (conj.), èr pan (*md.*), èr pan y.

Since (prep.), èr (*rd.*) *Ex.* § 335.

For (prep.), *erys* or *er's* (*rd.*); *am*; *tros* or *dros*. *Ex.* § 335.

I am ashamed (*of*), mae arnaf gywilydd (*o*).

How long? } *er's* pa bryd? *er's* pa hyd? (*past point of time*).

} *pa* hyd? *pa* cyhyd? (*am* *ba*) faint o amser? (*duration*).

For-some-time, long-ago, *er's* nêityn (*within a day*).

² *Darfod* is better expressed by "to do" in perfect tense, "have done." Have you done? *a ydych chi wedi darfod?*

³ After verbs of motion.

For-a-long-while or time, { er's talm (*coll.* er's talwm), er's hir amser,
S.W. er's llawer dydd (*past point of
time*).
am hir amser (*duration of time*).
(am) y rhawg, am hir amser (*future time*).

§ 337. EXERCISES.

A.) Pa le y buoch chwi ddoe? Yn y ffair.—A fu hi yn rhywle oddi cartref yn ddiweddar? Na ddo, yn unlle.—Ni chawsoch lythyr oddi wrthi er's talm, ai do? Na ddo [na chefais], ni chefais lythyr oddi wrthi hi na'i chwaer er's chwe mis.—Pa hyd yr arosodd eich cymmydogion gyda chwi? Arosasant gyda ni am hanner diwrnod.—A wnaethant hwy yr hyn a orchymmynais iddynt? Do.—Dacw'r ddau fachgen a dorasant ffenestri yr ysgol.—Y mae'r bachgen wedi myned i rywle i chwilio am yr agoriad a gollodd boreu heddyw.—Pwy a'ch tarawodd chwi? Ni tharawodd neb fi.—Y mae'r forwyn, druan, wedi bod yn gweithio yn galed trwy'r dydd.—Nid ydym wedi bod yn ymweled â neb er pan welsoch ni [er pan y gwelsoch ni].—Mi a gyfarfum â mab hynaf y cyfreithiwr boreu ddoe; a dywedodd wrthyf nad oedd yn bwriadu myned i unlle oddi cartref am bum mis.—Yr ydym ni oll wedi darfod ein ciniaw er's meityn.—Yr ydwyf newydd dderbyn llythyr hir oddi wrtho.—Pwy a bregethodd yn y boreu? Yr Esgob.—Nid oes arnaf gywilydd o'r hyn a wnaethym.—Yr ydym wedi bod yn ysgrifenu neu yn darllen bob dydd er pan fuoch yma.—Mi [fe] barotôdd y forwyn y cinio erbyn hanner awr wedi un.—Pa le y buont echdoe? Ni buont yn unlle oddi yma.—Y mae merch y bugail wedi gadael ei lle er's talm, onid ydyw hi? Ydyw, y mae wedi gadael ei lle er's tri mis.—A welsoch chwi ferched y saer yn ddiweddar? Na ddo, ni welsom hwynt [mo honynt] er's meityn.—Nid ydym yn bwriadu dyfod yn ol (am) y rhawg.—A barotoisom ni ddigon i chwi? Na ddo, chwi a barotoisoch ry fach.—Ni orphen'soch eich holl waith neithiwr, ai do [a orphen'soch chwi]? Na ddo [na orphen'som].—Chwi a gawsoch yr arian o'r diwedd, onid do? Do.—Am ba faint o amser y mae efe yn myned i aros oddi cartref? Am un mis ar ddeg.—Er's pa bryd yr ydych chwi wedi darfod? Er's meityn.

B.) We have not been out of the house the whole day.—You went out to look for the keys, did you not? Yes.—The

two servants were (*p. ind.*) in the fair yesterday.—He is just gone somewhere; but we do not know where.—The Bishop preached an excellent sermon.—How long (*point of time*) have you been here? We have been here since last January. How long (*duration*) are they going to remain from home? They do not intend to return for three or four weeks.—They were ashamed of what they did.—Did you not promise to meet us in the fair the-day-before-yesterday? Yes.—We have been expecting them for (*duration*) five hours.—My master has done [finished] his dinner long-ago.—You saw them the other day, did you not? Yes, we saw them both.—When did they do their work? Yesterday afternoon.—We have been looking the whole day for the keys we lost yesterday in coming home from the village.—These are the unkind boys who struck us.—Who struck you yesterday morning, when you were coming to me? I do not know who struck me.—Have your parents been anywhere since we saw them? No, they have not been anywhere.—They have both (*fem.*) been very industrious ever since you were (*p. ind.*) here.—Have they finished the work which their master gave them to do? Yes, they have finished it at last.—Has she been anywhere from home lately? No, nowhere.—Did the lawyer come with you that afternoon? No, he did not.—You did not go with them then, did you? No, I did not.—Why did not they come when we asked them? We cannot tell you.—I have just sent the letter off (*l.u.* “away”).—Myvanwy has not heard from her uncle since January.—How long did he preach? He preached for three quarters of an hour.—She must not go anywhere for six or seven months.—You have not seen your parents for (*point of time*) five years, have you? No.—They have not been anywhere since we were (*p. ind.*) here, have they? No, they have not been anywhere since that time.—Who told you that my two neighbours were ashamed of what they did that evening?—We have not written to them for-a-long-while (*point of time*).—Their youngest daughter has been staying with her uncle and aunt for-a-long-while (*duration*), has she not? Yes.

C.) Addawsant ddyfod yma yn gynnar; ond ni ddaethant tan bedwar o'r gloch.—Pwy a gyfarfuoch chwi wrth fyned

adref? Ni chyfarfum i neb.—Fe [mi] aeth y gweision i rywle boreu ddoe; ac nid ydynt wedi dyfod yn ol eto.—Y maent ill dau am aros oddi cartref am hir amser, onid ydynt? Y maent yn dweyd eu bod.—Y mae arnaf gywilydd dangos i chwi y llythyr ag yr wyf newydd ei dderbyn oddi wrth y cyfreithiwr.—A fuoch chwi yn rhywle er pan welais i chwi? Na ddo, yn unlle.—Pa bryd y cyfarfuoch chwi y meddyg? Ni chyfarfuom ef er's llawer dydd [er's talm].—Dyma'r gwagedd y rhai a'm cyfarfuont yn y ffair ddydd Sadwrn diweddaf.—Gan bwy y cawsant y llyfrau tlyision hyn? Gan eu taid.—Nid ydym wedi eu gweled hwy na'u chwirydd er pan y daethant adref.—Nid aethoch i'r ffair ddydd Gwener, ai do [a aethoch chwi]? Na ddo.—A ddywed'soch chwi rywbeth arall wrtho? Na ddo, yr un gair.

D.) She wanted to finish her lesson.—Has she finished it? No.—They have not been anywhere from this house since you were (*p. ind.*) here.—We were all at dinner when your father came in.—Which of you broke this window?—He says that he is ashamed to show us the letter which he has just received from his nephew.—You have been playing all day, have you not? Yes.—We were (*p. ind.*) from home yesterday.—The gardener has finished his work at last, has he not? Yes, he has.—They have not been here for-some-time (*within a day*).—Why did you prepare such a good dinner?—Whom did she meet? She met her uncle and her cousins.—We heard yesterday morning that the Bishop is not likely to come.—|| *We* did not see them; but our parents saw them.—He and I went very early in the morning.—Have they done [finished]? Yes, long-ago.—Did they finish their work yesterday morning? No.—I have not met any of them for-a-long-time (*point of time*).—Have they seen you lately? No.—We met them the other day in the fair.—I have seen her somewhere; but I cannot remember where I have seen her.—Did you go anywhere that morning? No, nowhere.—From whom did you get this silver cup? From my uncle.—When did they do their work? Yesterday evening.—When were (*p. ind.*) you there? We were (*p. ind.*) there the-day-before-yesterday.

CHAPTER XXXV.

[PERFECT TENSE, auxiliaries, — *darfu i mi, bu i mi*,—*gorfod, digwydd*,—*pwyl a ddarfu?*—*gwneyd* as auxiliary,—“*bu yn agos i mi,*” —*onide? aie?*]

§ 338. PERFECT TENSE. (The auxiliaries *Dàrfod* and *Bod*.)

I learnt ; I have learnt.

Dàrfu ¹	{	i mi,	i ti,	iddo ef, f. iddi hi ddysgu.
		i ni,	i chwi,	iddynt hwy ddysgu.
Bu ²	{	i mi,	i ti,	iddo ef, f. iddi hi ddysgu.
		i ni,	i chwi,	iddynt hwy ddysgu.

Notes and References.

§ 339. The forms *darfu i mi ddysgu*, and *bu i mi ddysgu*, may be regarded as impersonal construction. The verb is put in the 3rd personal sing., and is followed by the dative (i.e. *i* with its case) and infinitive.

A ddarfu i chwi glywed? = *has it been to you to hear? have you heard?*
Os bu i mi ddweyd, = *if it has been to me to say; if I have said.*

(a) *Darfod* is both a principal verb (as in the preceding chapter) and an auxiliary. *Gr.* § 287, and note (b).

(b) How are the compounds of *Bod* conjugated? *Gr.* § 321.

§ 340. *Gorfod*, to be obliged, is used impersonally, like *darfod*; and also frequently *digwydd*, to happen. *Gorfod* is followed by *i* or *ar*.

Gorfu i'r [ar y] foneddiges fyned i fyny, *the lady was obliged to go up.*
Digwyddodd i mi gyfarfod rhai o honynt bythefnos i heddyw, *I happened to meet some of them this day fortnight.*

§ 341. The impersonal form of *darfod* occurs oftenest in *perf. Indicative*, and in the *Subjunctive*; and it is generally preceded by a particle or a phrase. (*A ddarfu i chwi ddysgu?*)

The *impers.* forms of *bod, gorfod,* and *digwydd*, occur in *perf.* and *fut. Indicative*, and in the *Subjunctive*.

§ 342. *Darfu* is also a personal verb; and is then preceded by its subject, which must be an *interr.* or *rel.* pronoun, or an *antithetical* subject. The verb is always in 3rd pers. sing. (*darfu*), of whatever number and person the subject may be.

¹ Coll. *daru*.

² This form is not common in *perf. tense*.

Pwy a ddarfu fy nharo? *who struck me?* Myfi a ddarfu, *I did.*

Ai dyma'r dynion a ddarfu ddŵyn yr esgidiau? *are these the men who stole the shoes?*

§ 343. *Gwneyd* or *gwneuthur* (to do), is also used as an auxiliary in the perfect tense; but it does not occur as frequently as *darfod*.

A wnaethoch chwi (or a ddarfu i chwi) dori'r ffenestr? *did you break the window?*

Addawsant gymmeryd gofal o'r plant, ond ni wnaethant (or ni ddarfu iddynt), *they promised to take care of the children, but they did not.*

(a) The auxiliaries *darfod* and *gwneyd* serve merely to give a different form to the tense: so that, *a dorasoch chwi y ffenestr? a ddarfu i chwi dori'r ffenestr? a wnaethoch chwi dori'r ffenestr?* have the same meaning.

(b) *Darfod* and *gwneyd* are very frequently translated by the auxiliary *did*.

§ 344. **Yn agos** (*nearly, almost*), requires, in indef. perf., the impersonal form "bu i mi," &c. See § 338.

Bu yn agos i'r bachgen syrthio i'r tan, *the boy nearly fell into the fire.*

§ 345. It was the servant that killed the cat, }
was it not? (onide?) }
 It was not the servant that killed the } *Ex. § 160.*
 cat, *was it? (aie?)* }

§ 346. Give the inflected perfect of verbs ending in *hau* or *âu*. (*Gr.* §§ 237, 244, a).

§ 347. VOCABULARY.

Hamlet , pèntref, <i>pl.</i> -ydd or -i (<i>m.</i>)	To be obliged , gorfod (i or ar).
Bridge , pònt, <i>pl.</i> pÿnt, pòntydd (<i>f.</i>)	To happen , digwydd.
Arm , bràich, <i>pl.</i> brèichiau (<i>f.</i>)	To refuse , gwrthod, nacâu.
To pull , tÿnu.	To kill , llâdd.
To last, continue , para, ³ parhau.	Up , i fyny.
To dine , ciniawa.	Down , i lawr.
To beat , curo.	Nearly, almost , yn agos.
To threaten , bygwth, ⁴ bygÿthio.	After all , wedi'r cwbl.
I was (<i>p. ind.</i>) obliged , gorfu i mi [arnaf], bu yn rhaid i mi.	
I happened , digwyddodd i mi, digwyddais.	

³ *Para* occurs only in the infinitive.

⁴ *Bygwth* occurs only in the infinitive.

§ 348. EXERCISES.

A.) A ddarfu i chwi orphen eich gwaith? Na ddo, eto.—Lle y darfu i'r milwr [lle y gwnaeth y milwr] eich cyfarfod? Ar y ffordd rhwng y pentref a'r bont.—Dyma'r dynion a ddarfu fygwth tynu gwal yr ardd i lawr, onide? Ië—Bu yn rhaid i'r cyfreithiwr dalu yr holl arian i'r masnachwr wedi'r cwbl.—Gorfu i ni [arnom] eu curo,—yr oeddynt yn fechgyn mor ddrwg.—Pa ham y darfu i chwi [pa ham y gwnaethoch] fygwth danfon y dynion, druain, i'r carchar? Am eu bod yn gwrthod [naeâu] talu eu dyledion.—A ddigwyddodd i chwi weled neb arall gyda hwynt? Na ddo, neb.—Digwyddodd i ni [digwyddasom] gyfarfod dau o'ch brodyr neithiwr ar y ffordd rhwng y bont a'r pentref.—Bu yn agos i'r tri phlentyn syrthio [gwympo] o ben y goeden uchel acw.—Bygythiasant guro y bachgen a'r eneth am eu bod mor anufudd; ond ni wnaethant [ni ddarfu iddynt].—Digwyddasant [digwyddodd iddynt] ddyfod i mewn pan yr oeddym ar gychwyn ymaith.—Ni ddarfu iddynt yfed y gwin i gyd, ai do? Na ddo: y mae (yno⁵) ychydig eto yn y botel.—Pa bryd y darfu i'm hewythr ofyn i chwi giniawa gydag ef? Prydnawn echdoe, wrth ddyfod adref o'r farchnad.—Chwychwi a ddarfu dynu y wal i lawr, onide? Nage, nid nynt a ddarfu.—Pa hyd y darfu i'ch esgidiau bara [pa hyd y parhâodd eich esgidiau]? Ni ddarfu iddynt bara [ni pharhasant] am fwy na thri mis.—Bu yn agos iddo dori ei goes a'i fraich wrth ddringo i ben y goeden afalau.—Bygythiodd y dyn dynu'r ty i lawr; ond ni wnaeth [ni ddarfu iddo] wedi'r cwbl.—Pa un ai y gof neu'r saer a ddarfu fygwth euro eich chwaer fach? Y gof a ddarfu.—Bu yn rhaid [gorfu] i ni groesi'r afon, a myned i fyny i ben bryn uchel.—A orfu arnynt ddyfod i lawr oddi yno? Do.—Echdoe wrth fyned i fyny i ben y mynydd y digwyddodd i ni gyfarfod y bugail.—Nid fy machgen bach i a ddarfu ladd y gath lwyd, aie? Nage: bachgen y gof a ddarfu.—Defaid pwy a ddarfu i'r ci eu lladd? Defaid fy nghymmydog nesaf.

B.) We were (*p. ind.*) obliged to threaten them.—I nearly fell over the bridge into the deep river.—Which of us refused to pay the money we owe you? None of you did.—Who shod

⁵ See *Ex. p. 39, foot-note.*

your horse?—He neither beat the boy nor threatened to beat him.—With whom did you dine yesterday? With a relative of yours.—As we were coming from the fair the-day-before-yesterday, we happened to meet an old man who told us that he was a hundred years old.—Was it **this boy** or **that boy** that threatened to beat your little sister? It was **this boy**.—The fire did not last for more than five hours.—You did not pull down the wall after all, as you threatened.—You nearly broke your arm, did you not? Yes: I nearly broke my two arms.—She was (*p. ind.*) not obliged to beat them, was she? No.—How long did your pair of gloves last? They were very poor gloves,—they did not last for more than three weeks.—Whom did she meet that evening in the hamlet? She met nobody.—How did you go up to the top of that dangerous rock?—Is this the naughty boy who broke the windows? Yes.—Who cut his finger with the razor? I did.—It was not || *your* little boy that killed the poor cat, was it? No.—Who fell through the window? **You** did not.—Have the gardeners finished their work? No, not yet (*W. = no, yet*).—You did not go up to the top of the house after all.—When did we threaten to pull the garden wall down?—It was your eldest brother that declined (*l.u.* “refuse”) to dine with my uncle, was it not? Yes; and he was very sorry that he was obliged to decline.—They were (*p. ind.*) obliged to cross the bridges after all.—You nearly killed the poor dogs yesterday.—With whom did they dine? With me.—We happened to say that we wanted two thousand pounds.—Whose servants threatened to beat the school children? || *Your* servants.—Whose servants did the school children threaten to beat? The farmer’s servants.—We don’t care whom you met in the hamlet yesterday afternoon.—Did you not tell me that the little boy, who broke his arm the-day-before-yesterday, had neither a father nor a mother? Yes.—This is the new pony (*f.*) which your father bought last week for your youngest sister, is it not? Yes.—Those naughty boys did not take all the apples and pears from the orchard last night, did they? No, there are still a few on some of the trees.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

[Object antithetical,—subject antithetical,—reflective pronouns.]

§ 349. *Reflective pronoun.* (Gr. § 188.)

Fy hun (or hunan), <i>myself.</i>	Ein hunain, <i>ourselves.</i>
Dy hun (or hunan), <i>thyself.</i>	Eich hunain, <i>yourselves.</i>
Ei hun (or hunan), <i>himself, f. herself.</i>	Eu hunain, <i>themselves.</i>
Eich hun (or hunan), <i>yourself.</i>	

Notes and References.

§ 350. When the **object** is antithetical, it takes precedence in the clause. *Ex.* § 96.

Maneg Myfanwy a roddodd efe dan ei droed, *it was Myfanwy's glove that he put under his foot.*

§ 351. The expletives **a** and **y**.

Myfi a droisant hwy allan o'r parlwr, <i>it was I that they turned out of the parlour.</i>	}	<i>Ex.</i> § 257.
Ai chwychwi a fygythiasant ei droi allan? <i>was it you that they threatened to turn out?</i>		
Y rhosyn coch yr ydwyf wedi ei ddewis, <i>it is the red rose that I have chosen.</i> <i>Ex.</i> § 258.		

§ 352. **Mae**, pl. **maent**. *Ex.* § 95, c: also § 258 § 5.

Nyth aderyn y mae'r bachgen wedi ei weled, *it is a bird's nest that boy has seen.*

Ai yn y ffordd fawr y maent wedi gadael y defaid? *is it in the high road that they have left the sheep?*

§ 353. **Subject antithetical.** *Gr.* §§ 578, 579.

Ai chwychwi a ganodd y gloch? *was it you that rang the bell?*

Naill ai hwynt-hwy neu eu brodyr a ddygodd yr afalau, *it was either they or their brothers that stole the apples.*

Nyni sydd wedi ennill y gwobrwyon, **we** have gained the prizes. *Ex.* § 135.

§ 354. **Reflective pronouns.**

a. Position. *Gr.* § 529.

b. Efe a'i twyllodd ei hun, } *he deceived himself.*
 Efe a dwyllodd ei hun, }

When the subject and the object of the verb refer to the same person, as in the foregoing example, the introductory pron. is sometimes placed before the verb, and sometimes omitted. (*Gr.* § 600, b.)

c. With himself, *gydag ef ei hun*. Between themselves, *rhyngddynt (hwy) eu hunain*.

In W., a reflective pron. cannot be the object of a preposition ; it always stands in apposition to a pers. pron., either expressed or applied in the pronom. prep. *Gydag ef ei hun*, = *with him himself*. *Rhyngddynt (hwy) eu hunain*, = *between them themselves*.

d. Against ourselves, *yn ein herbyn (ni) ein hunain*.

The preceding remark applies to compound prepositions ending with a Substantive. (See a list, *Gr.* § 373.) *Yn ein herbyn (ni) ein hunain*, = *against us ourselves*.

§ 355. Perf. indef. of verbs ending in *oi*. *Gr.* §§ 237, 243, 244, d.

Sing., Troais,¹ troaist, trôdd. Pl., Troisom, troisoch, troisant.

Give the perf. indef. of *cyffwrdd* (*Gr.* § 234); *dîwyn* (*Gr.* § 322.)

§ 356. VOCABULARY.

Bala, y Bala. ² <i>Gr.</i> § 418.	To divide (into), <i>rhanu</i> (<i>yn</i> ⁴ or <i>i</i>).
Shrewsbury, yr Amwythig.	To turn, convert (into), <i>trôi</i> (<i>yn</i> ⁴).
Prayer-book, <i>Llyfr gweddi</i> , <i>pl.</i>	To become of, <i>dyfod o</i> .
<i>Llyfrau gweddi.</i> <i>Gr.</i> § 408.	To travel, <i>têthio</i> .
Hymn-book, <i>Llyfr emynau</i> , <i>pl.</i>	To fight, <i>ymladd</i> .
<i>Llyfrau emynau</i> .	To deceive, cheat, <i>twyllo</i> .
Song, <i>cân</i> , <i>pl.</i> <i>caneuon</i> (<i>f.</i>)	Forgetful, <i>anghofus</i> .
High road, <i>ffordd fawr</i> .	Myself, &c. See above, § 349.
Question, <i>gofyniad</i> , <i>pl.</i> - <i>au</i> (<i>m.</i>)	By myself, alone, <i>wrthyf fy hun</i> ;
<i>cwestiwn</i> , <i>pl.</i> <i>cwestiynau</i> (<i>m.</i>)	<i>ar fy mhen fy hun</i> , <i>pl.</i> <i>ar ein</i>
Piece, <i>dàrn</i> , <i>pl.</i> - <i>au</i> (<i>m.</i>)	<i>penau ein hunain</i> .
Parlour, <i>parlwr</i> , <i>pl.</i> <i>parlyrau</i> (<i>m.</i>),	Under (<i>prep.</i>), <i>tàn</i> , <i>dàn</i> , <i>o dân</i>
To ring ; sing, <i>canu</i> .	(<i>md.</i>)
To put, <i>rhoddi</i> , <i>rhòdi</i> .	Under me, <i>tanaf</i> or <i>danaf.</i> <i>Gr.</i>
To touch, <i>cyffwrdd â</i> .	§ 378.
To leave, <i>gadael</i> , <i>gadaw</i> . ³	Without me, <i>hebof.</i> <i>Gr.</i> § 379.
To forget, <i>anghòfio</i> , <i>gadael</i> (<i>or</i>	Between me, <i>rhyngof</i> .
<i>gadaw</i>) <i>yn anghof</i> .	

¹ *Rhoi* makes *rhois* and *rhoist* for *rhoais* and *rhoaist*.

² *Bala* is probably the same word as the Irish Gaelic *baile*, a town or village : so that *y Bala* is = *the town* or *the village*. [*Bala* and *baile* are probably cognate with L. *villa*, Fr. *ville*, and Eng. *vill*.]

³ *Gadaw* in finite tenses : *gadawodd*, *gadawsant*, &c.

⁴ This is *yn* apposition, and hence governs the *mid*. *Into* (= *so as to make* or *form*) with verbs of *turning*, *dividing*, &c., and standing before the 2nd accus., is usually translated by *yn*.

§ 357. EXERCISES.

A.) Ai myfi a gyffyrddodd â chwi? Nage, eich brawd a gyffyrddodd â mi [eich brawd a ddarfu].—Onid eich chwiorydd a ganodd y gloch? Ië, hwynt-hwy a'i canodd [a ddarfu].—Pa un ai darn o gaws ynte darn o gig a roddasoch chwi i'r ddynes dlawd? Darn o gig a roddais iddi.—Ym mha le y rhoddasoch [rhoisoch] fy esgidiau? Wrth ddrws' eich ystafell wely y rhoddais [rhois] hwynt.—Y ceffylau, nid y gwartheg, a droisant hwy allan o'r cae i'r ffordd.—I ba le y trôdd eich gweision ddefaid fy nghymmydog? I'r ffordd fawr.—Myfi fy hun a ranodd yr arian rhyngddynt.—Pwy a ddywedodd wrthyhych ein bod yn hoffi teithio ar ein penau ein hunain [wrthym ein hunain]? Chwychwi eich hunain a ddywedodd wrthym.—Pwy sydd wedi eu rhanu yn dair rhan?—Mi a gerddais yr holl ffordd o'r Bala i'r Amwythig ar fy mhen fy hun.—Yr oedd yr Esgob ei hun yn bresennol.—Ni wyddom beth sydd wedi dyfod o'r bachgen, druan.—Pa beth arall a adawsoch chwi yn anghof? Fy Llyfr emynau a adewais yn anghof.—Erfyniais arno fy hun beidio â myned hebof.—Ai chwychwi a anghofiodd gymmeryd eich Llyfr gweddi i'r Eglwys? Nage, fy chwaer ieuengaf a ddarfu.—Hwynt-hwy (*coll.* y nhw) eu hunain a'n twyllodd ni.—Y mae'r dynion, druan, yr ydym yn ofni, yn (eu) twyllo eu hunain.—I bwy y prynasoch chwi'r ceffyl? I mi fy hun.—Y mae efe yn hoffach o hono ei hun nag o neb arall.—Lle y rhoddasoch chwi fy Llyfr gweddi? Dyma efe.

B.) Which of you travelled alone from Shrewsbury to Bala? None of us did.—Was it you that rang the bell? Yes, it was; we wanted to ask you a question.—He put to him what he considered a difficult question.—Who turned the geese into the field? The **men-servants** turned them.—They fought against themselves.—He cut the apple into four parts, and asked us to divide them between us.—Into how many parts have they divided the piece of ground (*l.u.* "land")? Into five parts.—It was the shopkeeper's idle son that I turned out of the parlour,—he had no right to come near (to) || *my* parlour.—Is **this** the Hymn-book that you left in church last Sunday? Yes.—What has become of him? We cannot tell you what has become of him.—The man is gone without it

(*m.*),—he is so very forgetful.—Who left his Prayer-book in church? I did.—We forgot to ask him a question which the clergyman put to us this morning.—You are too fond of praising yourselves.—She left the Prayer-book there herself.—**You yourselves** turned them into the high road.—He has not sung a single song for-a-long-time (*point of time*).—She is always by herself [alone].—You take more care of yourself than of anybody else.—Why did you run under the plum tree? Must I tell you why I ran under it? No, you need not.—Who told you that the lawyer intended to convert his kitchen into a parlour? **He himself** told me,—I saw him yesterday at Bala.—Myvanwy wants to know who put her new books on this dirty shelf? **She herself** put them there.—Did we not leave them under your care?—They came without them,—they say that they are so forgetful that they forget everything.—You must not touch things that don't belong to you.—It was either you or your fellow-servant that deceived the poor children. **We** did not deceive them.—In trying to deceive us they deceived themselves.—We all know Shrewsbury well.—It was not I that touched them.—For whom did you buy these cups and spoons? For ourselves.—You were afraid to show yourselves, were you not? Yes, we were.—How much money did those dishonest people steal from you? They stole a hundred and fifty pounds.—He is under age.—Do you want to know what has become of your Prayer-book and Hymn-book? Yes. Your little girl has taken them to church.—Where did you put the other pieces? Here they are.—Was it you or your cousins that travelled from Bala to Shrewsbury with them? **We** did.—There they are sitting by themselves.—They put the Prayer-book under their feet.

CHAPTER XXXVII.


[Compound prepositions,—*cyn* and *o flaen*,—*wedi* and *ar ol*,—*eriodd* and *byth*,—*yna*,—*ym mhlith* and *ym mysg*.]

Notes and References.

§ 358. **Compound prepositions** ending with a substantive. (List, *Gr.* § 373.)

Decline *ar fy ol* (*i*), after me. *Gr.* § 743.

§ 363. Give the indef. perf. of *sefyll* (*Gr.* § 235 (a); *chwerthin* (*Gr.* § 322).

 *Safais* or *sefais*; *safaist* or *sefaist*: *chwarddais* or *chwerddais*; *chwarddaist* or *chwerddaist*. *Gr.* § 241.

§ 364. VOCABULARY.

Enemy , <i>gelyn</i> , <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>m.</i>)	About (= <i>near to</i> : <i>prep.</i>) <i>o gwmpas</i> , <i>ynghylch</i> , <i>oddeutu</i> (<i>rd.</i>)
Miller , <i>melinydd</i> , <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>m.</i>)	About me , <i>am danaf</i> ; <i>o'm cwmpas</i> , <i>yn fy nghylch</i> .
Mill , <i>melin</i> , <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	About (<i>adv.</i>), <i>o gwmpas</i> , <i>oddeutu</i> .
Such (<i>adj.</i>), <i>y fâth</i> (<i>md.</i>)	Opposite (<i>to</i>), <i>ar gyfer</i> (<i>rd.</i>)
Such (<i>adv.</i>), <i>y fâth</i> , <i>môr</i> or <i>cŷn</i> .	Opposite to me , <i>ar fy nghyfer</i> .
Ever , <i>erioed</i> ; <i>byth</i> ; ¹ <i>un amser</i> .	For the sake of , <i>er mwyn</i> (<i>rd.</i>)
Never , <i>not ... ever</i> , <i>ni ... erioed</i> ; <i>ni ... byth</i> ; <i>ni ... un amser</i> ; (<i>in elliptical answers</i>) <i>erioed</i> ; <i>byth</i> ; <i>un amser</i> .	For my sake , <i>er fy mwyn</i> .
For ever , <i>am byth</i> .	Instead of , <i>yn lle</i> (<i>rd.</i>)
Before (<i>prep.</i>), <i>cŷn</i> (<i>rd.</i>); <i>o flaen</i> (<i>rd.</i>); <i>gèr brôn</i> (<i>rd.</i>)	In my stead , <i>yn fy lle</i> .
Before me , <i>o'm blaen</i> ; <i>gèr fymrôn</i> .	Amongst , <i>ym mhlith</i> , <i>ym mysg</i> ³ (<i>rd.</i>): <i>i blith</i> , <i>i fysg</i> . ⁴
Before , = before then , <i>cŷn hŷny</i> .	Amongst us , <i>yn ein plith</i> [<i>mysg</i>]: <i>i'n plith</i> , <i>i'n mysg</i> . ⁴
Before (<i>adv.</i>), <i>o'r blaen</i> .	Then (= <i>at that time</i>), <i>yna</i> , <i>y pryd hwnw</i> (<i>or hyny</i>).
After (<i>prep.</i>), <i>wedi</i> (<i>rd.</i>); <i>àr ôl</i> (<i>rd.</i>)	Then (= <i>after that</i>), <i>yna</i> , <i>ar ol</i> (<i>or wedi</i>) <i>hyny</i> .
After me , <i>àr fy ôl</i> .	Then (= <i>in that case</i>), <i>yna</i> .
After , <i>after that</i> , <i>afterwards</i> , <i>wedi</i> (<i>or àr ôl</i>) <i>hŷny</i> , <i>wed'yu</i> .	Then (= <i>therefore</i>), <i>ŷnte</i> , <i>gàn hŷny</i> .
About (= <i>concerning</i> : <i>prep.</i>) <i>àm</i> ² (<i>md.</i>), <i>o gwmpas</i> (<i>rd.</i>), <i>ynghylch</i> (<i>rd.</i>)	Face to face , <i>wyneb yn wyneb</i> .

I am right, *yr wyf yn fy lle*, *yr wyf yn iawn*.

I am wrong, *yr wyf (allan) o'm lle*.

§ 365. EXERCISES.

A.) *Ymladdodd y milwyr yn erbyn gelynion eu gwlad*.—
A gyfarfuoch chwi âg ef erioed o'r blaen? *Na ddo*, *erioed*.—

¹ Monosyllables ending with *th* are long; but *byth* is long or short.

² As a rule, *am* should be used only when *about* may interchange with *of*.

³ There is a slight difference, though not always observed, between *ym mhlith*, and *ym mysg*, the latter implying less order than the former. *Ym mhlith angylion*, *amongst angels*. *Ym mysg hen lyfrau*, *amongst old books*. *Ym mhlith* (from *plith*, *cf. L. plecto*) = *interwoven with*: *ym mysg* (from *mysg*, *cf. L. misceo*) = *mixed up with*.

⁴ After verbs of motion.

Rhedasom ein goreu ar ol mab a merch y melinydd.—Cy-chwynais i'r Bala cyn deg o'r gloch, arosais yno tan ar ol dau, a daethym adref erbyn pump.—Aethant ill dau oddi yma ar ol ciniaw, ac ni welsom mo honynt byth wedi hyny [wed'yn].—Ni bydd ei thad a'i mam byth [un amser] yn codi o'i blaen.—A fuont hwy yn y felin wedi [ar ol] hyny? Na ddo, byth.—Nid yw ddim yn iawn iddynt eich dewis chwi o'n blaen ni.—Pa un ai ar eich ol chwi neu ar ein hol ni yr oedd gwraig y melinydd yn rhedeg? Yr ydwyf yn meddwl mai ar ol ein cymmydog anghofus yr oedd hi yn rhedeg.—Aethant oddi yma oddeutu [o gwmpas] awr a hanner cyn amser ciniaw.—Ni ddywedasom ni ddim yn eu herbyn nac am danynt.—A ydyw'r plant yn rhywle o gwmpas [oddeutu]?—O flaen [ger bron] pwy y safasant dros [am] ddwy awr? O'n blaen [ger ein bron] ni,—yr oedd arnom eisieu gofyn amryw gwestiynau anhawdd iddynt.—Y mae'n rhaid i'r melinydd anonest hwnw beidio byth â dyfod yn agos yma eto.—Ni ddywedodd fy ngwr i erioed y fath beth. Beth ynte a ddywedodd efe? Efe a ddywedodd, ym mhlith pethau ereill, eich bod chwi yn fynych yn eich lle, a'i fod yntau yn fynych (allan) o'i le.—Yr ydym wedi bod yn chwilio llawer am y llyfr ym mysg yr hen lyfrau hyn.—Tarawodd y bachgen yr eneth fach ar ei phen, ac yna rhedodd i ffwrdd.—Safasom wyneb yn wyneb.—Gallwch fyned i'r pentref ar ol ciniaw, ond nid cyn hyny.—Pa ham y chwarddasoch am eu pen (*or* eu penau)? Yn wir, nis gallen beidio.—Yr ydym wedi eu colli am byth.

B.) The miller came here before dinner, and went away about two hours after dinner.—|| *He* and his enemy stood face to face.—You tell me what I knew before.—Are they gone away for ever? No, not for ever.—Do you want || *me*? No. Whom then do you want?—He paid me first, and then paid my fellow-workman.—I never asked him for such a thing.—She stood before me for half an hour. Who stood before you? The miller's wife.—You may go if you like (*l.u.* "to choose") after dinner, but not before.—We never met them after.—We heard that they were both at the mill about eight o'clock this morning.—We never said an unkind word about || *you* or your daughters.—Some were walking before us, and some were walking after us.—Amongst other things, I said that they

were not always right.—Has she never been on a visit with her aunt? No, never.—Did you ever ask him afterwards? No, never.—The miller's wife is somewhere about, is she not?—Why did those ladies choose my youngest sister before me? Because they like her better than you.—We have never been on the top of that high mountain, neither (*Ex.* § 201) do we intend ever to go.—Is he unwilling? I think that he is. Then you must not go near the place.—We could not help laughing at them.—“You are right,” said he, “and I am wrong.”—What are they amongst so many?—There he is standing opposite the stable door.—We have never heard such things before.—There were but few before us.—The miller was (*p. ind.*) never here before.—Her two aunts never said a word about her afterwards.—He says that he wants to finish the first part of his book before March.—There never was (*p. ind.*) such a day as that before (*IT*), or after (*IT*).—The young men left us about five o'clock.—We never take any trouble about them now,—they are such ungrateful people.—He could not tell me what happened afterwards.

C.) Yn lle pwyl y mae hi wedi myned? Yn fy lle i.—Mae'n dda genym eich gweled unwaith eto yn ein plith.—Ni byddant byth [un amser] yn myned i fysg plant drwg.—Mi a wnaethym hyn er eich mwyn chwi a'ch mam.—Safodd y plant ddwy awr ar gyfer ffenestr y parlwr.—Pwy oedd yn eistedd ar eich cyfer?—Pa un ai ar fy nghyfer i neu ar eich cyfer chwi yr oedd efe yn eistedd?—Addawsant wneyd hyny yn ein lle ni a'n chwirydd; ond ni wnaethant.—Rhaid i chwi beidio â myned byth i'w mysg.—Yr oeddynt yma ill tri yng nghylch [oddeutu, o gwmpas] tair wythnos yn ol.—Pwy yr ydych wedi ei benodi yn athraw yn lle yr un a droisoch i fwrdd?—Ni chwerddais am ei ben ef na'i gân. Gwyddent hyny o'r blaen.—Nis gallwn weled y melinydd na'i wraig yn unlle o gwmpas.—Ni welsom mo hono erioed cyn hyny, ac ni welsom mo hono byth wed'yn.

D.) He is willing to do all this, and more, for her sake.—I stood there by myself for about three hours.—How tall was the man who laughed at you?—They need not do anything for our sake.—I am come once again amongst you.—They begged of us to tell you that they are not willing to do such hard

work instead of you.—It is not on their account that we are in such trouble.—You must endeavour to be more careful for your poor mother's sake.—The man stood opposite his greatest enemy.—They had no right to stand opposite to us.—Is **this** the man who is ready to undertake the work instead of that idle man, who has given it up? Yes, **this** is the man.—We were both (*f.*) ashamed to show ourselves on your account.—For they have heard that thou art amongst this people.—“For,” said he, “I have seen God face to face.”—Few of us are always right.—Most of you are oftener wrong than right.—We are delighted to have you amongst us.—Who was the gentleman who sat opposite to me at dinner? I do not know his name; but he has dined here once or twice before.—We never like to go amongst them.—We have asked the boys to go instead of || *us* and the girls.—There fell that day about three thousand men.—I did not laugh at them when they were reading.—Why have they appointed || *him* instead of || *you*?—We commanded them both never to come near this house again.—How long did you stand before them? For half an hour.—He is sure that the children are somewhere about.—I broke the knife after cutting the bread.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

[Compound prepositions,—“*y tu ol i,*” “*y pen yma i,*” &c.,—*is law*, &c.,—*heb law*,—*cerdded* and *rhodio*.]

Notes and References.

§ 366. Compound prepositions.

a.) The prep. *i* is used idiomatically after several compound prepositions (*see Gr.* § 372); and after a few other words, mostly denoting *place*, such as *tu* and *ochr*, side; *pen*, end. These are rendered into Eng. either by prepositions, or by *of* preceded by a noun.

Y tu ol i'r drws, behind the door.

Y pen yma i'r pentref, this end of the hamlet.

Yr ochr [y tu] yma i'r mynydd, this side (of) the mountain.

b.) *Is law*, below or beneath; *ger llaw*, by or near; *uwch law*, above, are followed by *i* when the object is a personal

pronoun: when the object is a noun, *i* is not commonly employed. (*Gr.* §§ 744, 745.) The same remark applies to the simple prep. *heibio*, by.

Is law i mi, *beneath me.*

Is law mynydd uchel, *below a high mountain.*

Uwch law iddynt, *above them.*

Uwch law y mynydd uchaf, *above the highest mountain.*

Ger llaw i ni, *near us.*

Ger llaw afon ddofn, *near a deep river.*

Heibio iddo, *by him.*

Heibio ty bychan, *by a small house.*

c.) *Heb law*, besides. *Gr.* § 744 (a).

Heb law pethau ereill, *besides other things.* Heb law n.yfi, *besides me.* (*Ex.* § 25.)

☞ “*Heb law fi*,” *besides me*, and “*heb law ti*,” *besides thee*, are = “*heb law y fi*,” “*heb law y ti* ;” i.e. the coll. form of *myfi* and *tydi*.

§ 367. Give the finite roots of *cerdded* and *gafaelyd* (*Gr.* § 236); of *rhodio* and *cydio* (*Gr.* § 237).

§ 368. VOCABULARY.

Oswestry, Croesdswallt.

Stack; rick, *dâs* or *tâs*, *pl.* *dèisi* or *tèisi* (*f.*)

Rope, *rhâff*, *pl.*-*au* (*f.*)

End, *pèn*, *pl.*-*au* (*m.*)

Side, *òchr*, *pl.*-*au* (*f.*), *tu* (*m.*)

Back (*n.*), *cèfn*, *pl.*-*au* (*m.*)

Grave, *bêdd*, *pl.*-*au* (*m.*)

Understanding, *deall* (*m.*)

Notice, remark, *sylw*, *pl.*-*adau* (*m.*)

To walk, *cèrdded*; *rhodio*.¹

To take a walk (or turn), *rhòl tro*.

To go for a walk, *myned am dro* [*i roi tro*].

To lay or take hold of, *cýdio* [*gafaelyd*] *mewn* or *yn*.

To go by or past, pass (by), *myned* [*pàsiò*] *hèibio* (*rd.*)

Near (to), *agos* (*i* or *at*).

Near, by (*prep.*), *gèr llaw* (*rd.*), *gèr* (*rd.*)

Within ... (of), *o fewn* (*rd.*) ... (*i*).

Behind (*prep.*), *y tu ol* [*cèfn*] *i*.

Behind (*adv.*), *ar ol*.

Beyond (*prep.*), *y tu draw* [*hùnt*?] *i*.

Below, beneath (*prep.*), *is law* (*rd.*)

Above (*prep.*), *uwch law* (*rd.*)

Besides (*prep.*), *heb law* (*rd.*)

Besides (*adv.*), *heb law hyn* or *hyny*.

Outside (*prep.*), *y tu allan* [*maes*] *i*.

Outside (*adv.*), *y tu allan*, *oddi allan*.

(The) one ... the other, *y naill* (*md.*) or *un ... y llall*.

By this (time), *erbyn hyn*.

In spite of, *er gwaethaf* (*rd.*)

In spite of me, *er fy ngwaethaf*.

By, *pr.* and *ad.* (= *near*, in motion), *heibio* (*rd.*)

Probably, *mae'n debyg*.

¹ *Cerdded* is the general term for *to walk*. *Rhodio*, according to present usage, is *to walk for one's pleasure*, *to take a walk*; also *to walk*, metaphorically, = *to live*, e.g. “*to walk by faith*.”

² *Draw*, *hùnt* = *yonder*; *beyond*. *Yn y fan draw* (= *acw*), *in yonder place*. *Yr ochr draw i'r afon*, = *the side beyond the river*; *the other side of the river*.

Irregular adjective.

Agos : mor agos, cyn agosed [nèsed] : agòsach, nês : agòsaf, nèsaf : nèsaf.
near : *as or so near* : *nearer* : *nearest* : *next*.

Give the W. for the adverbs *near*, *nearer*, &c. [The rule for *adverbs of quality* applies here. *Ex.* § 187.]

§ 369. EXERCISES.

A.) Safodd y bobl y tu allan i'r drws am oddeutu dwy awr a hanner.—Y maent erbyn hyn, mae'n debyg, o fewn milltir neu ddwy i'w cartref.—Onid oedd yr eneth yn ymguddio ar y pryd y tu ol [cefn] i'r das [ddas] wair? Nac oedd, yn wir : ni bu yr eneth ddim yn agos i'r das [ddas] wair er's talm.—Yr ydwyf yn meddwl mai yn y pen yma i'r pentref y mae'r gof yn byw.—Pwy sydd wedi aros ar ol?—Y mae gwlad well i bobl dda y tu draw [hwnt] i'r bedd.—Arferai ein hanwyl gyfaill, yr hwn sydd wedi ein gadael am byth, rodio bob dydd ger llaw yr afon yma.—Sefais ger llaw iddo am hir amser.—Ym mha ben i'r rhaff y darfu i chwi gydio [afaelyd]? Yn y pen yma i'r rhaff y darfu i mi gydio [afaelyd].—Cerddasant cyn ciniaw o'r naill ben [o un pen] i'r dref i'r llall.—Beth oedd ar y gwr dieithr, oedd yn siarad â chwi y tu allan [maes] i ffenestr y parlwr, ei eisieu?—Y mae Llanfor yn agos i'r Bala, onid ydyw? Ydyw, y mae o fewn milltir i'r Bala.—Aeth y bachgen i'r ffair er ein gwaethaf.—Llanfyllin ger llaw [ger] Croesowallt.—Y mae'r hyn a ddywedwch is law sylw.—Eisteddodd un uwch law a'r llall is law iddi.—Yr ydym ni mor anwybodus fel y mae'r llyfrau hyn, y mae arnom ofn, ym mhell uwch law ein deall.—Pa ham na afaelasoch [chydiasoch] chwi ym mhen y ceffyl?—Pwy a gerddodd gyda chwi i'r dref heb law mab y cigydd? Ni cherddodd neb gyda mi heb law efe.—Siaradodd yn gas am danaf y tu ol i'm cefn.—Onid yw y saethau y tu hwnt i ti?—Safai un yr ochr yma i'r afon, a'r llall yr ochr draw (*or* arall).—Y mae cryn³ ugain o bobl yn sefyll oddi allan [y tu allan].—I ba le y maent yn myned i roi tro? I'r cae y tu draw i'r afon, yr ydwyf yn meddwl.—Pwy sy'n dyfod gyda ni i roi tro heb law chwydwi? Nid oes neb yn dyfod boreu heddyw heb law myfi.—Aethom heibio amryw dai ac Eglwys dlws.—Yr ydym ni yn myned i roi tro

³ See *Ex.* p. 131, *foot-note*.

[am dro] i'r cae gwair.—Y mae'r dyn tlawd cyn agosed perthynas i chwi ag ydyw i minnau, os nad yw yn nes perthynas.—Hwn ydyw'r llwybr agosaf [nesaf] i'r llan.—Heb law hyny, y mae'n ammheus genym a ydynt yn ddyinion gonest ai peidio.—Pa ham y byddant yn myned heibio i chwi heb siarad efo chwi?—Hi a ddaeth, wedi'r cwbl, o fewn yr amser.—Yr ydym yn hoffi rhodio ger llaw yr afon glws yma.—Dyna efe yn myned heibio.

B.) Above all things you must be honest, and endeavour to please the gentleman.—He laid hold of this end of the rope.—They have, I think, hid themselves behind the corn stack.—I have, probably, left several things behind.—There she is standing in front of (*l.u.* “before”) the house.—Why have you turned your back upon him?—They have asked several friends, besides you, to dine with them to-morrow.—It is seldom she ever takes notice of any of us.—Who told you that you were then within twenty yards of your friend's house?—The clergyman said in his sermon, which he preached this morning, that there is a better land beyond the grave for all who love God.—He walked with God.—They are all near neighbours.—They are nearer to you than to us.—Is Llanfyllin near (to) Oswestry?—Llanfyllin is, he thinks, within fifteen miles of Oswestry.—I put on the letter “Llansantffraid near Corwen.”—He took hold of a large knife, and threatened to kill us.—Was it you or the other boy that took hold of my horse's head?—He did not want any one, besides me, to go for a walk with him.—We are going to take a turn in your garden.—He took them in spite of me.—What did he take in spite of you? The roses from the rose trees, and the apples from the apple trees.—Besides, it is our duty to do so.—This is the nearest road to Corwen.—I sat at dinner next to a gentleman, who is, probably, the best rider in the whole (*l.u.* “all the”) country.—He made some excellent remarks on the duty of parents; but I have, I am sorry to say, forgotten most of them.—These books are, we fear, far above the children's understanding.—They have, probably, finished all their work by this time.

C.) That man's words are beneath my notice.—Some are below me and some are above me.—“The arrows,” said he, “are beyond thee.”—We promised to pay all our debts within

a fortnight.—Who is on the other side?—I see him on the other side of the river.—|| I laid hold of one end of the rope, and your brother laid hold of the other.—Don't you see him walking by the river?—The man threw the heavy stone beyond them.—Your father's friend lives, I think, at this end of the town.—We passed by a field of corn.—What is the reason that there are so many outside?—He finished his work within the time you gave him to finish it.—The ropes were, probably, at the other end of the hay rick.—Who was the young man who passed by about half an hour ago?—Do not medical men say that it is a good thing to take a walk before dinner?—And besides, you do not know how long we have been expecting you.—He passed us when we were going to school.—We have endeavoured to walk in the path of duty.—You were then, probably, within three or four miles of her comfortable home.—There they are (*near*) going by.—This young man can walk from one end of the field to the other in much less time than any of us can.—He passed by me without saying a single word.—They were going out for a walk when we met them.—They passed by this place about six o'clock this morning.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

[Transitive clause in perf. tense,—different forms,—“*you must have.*”]

Notes and References.

§ 370. **Transitive clause** in *perfect tense* may be expressed in different ways.

Form I.

Positive. “That I have learnt.” Fy mod (i) wedi dysgu.¹ *Gr.* § 761.

Negative. “That I have not learnt.” Nad wyf (fi) wedi dysgu. *Gr.*

§ 762.

Form II.

Positive. “That I learnt;” “that I have learnt.”

I mi,	i ti,	iddo (ef),	iddi (hi) ddysgu.	} <i>Gr.</i> § 765.
I ni,	i chwi,	iddynt (hwy)	ddyysgu.	

¹ This periphrastic form is, in *positive* sentences, sometimes employed to express perf. indef. = *that I learnt.*

Negative. "That I did not learn:" "that I have not learnt."

Na ddysgais (i), &c. *Gr.* § 765.

Or, with *darfod* prefixed. *Gr.* § 765 (a).

Pos. Ddarfod i mi ddysgu.² *Neg.* Na ddarfu i mi ddysgu.

Form III.

Positive. "That I learnt:" "that I have learnt."

Ddysgu o honof (fi): o honot (ti): o hono (ef), o honi (hi): o'r dyn.

Ddysgu o honom (ni): o honoch (chwi): o honynt (hwy): o'r dynion. } *Gr.* § 763.

(a) This is the most elegant of the three forms, but the least colloquial.

(b) The negative form is the same as Form II. (*na ddysgais*, &c.)

(c) Forms II. and III. are used to express the *perf. indef.* oftener than the *perf. def.*

§ 371. **Antithetical.** *Mai* (S.W. *taw*) is used when any part of the clause, except a finite verb, is antithetical. Negative, *nad*, or *mai* [*taw*] *nid*. *Gr.* §§ 772, 773.

Mai myfi sydd wedi bod yn y berllan, *that I (= it is I that) have been in the orchard.*

Mai nyni a nacäodd ei gynnorthwyo, *that we refused to help him.*

Nad [mai *nid*] at eu chwiorydd yr ysgrifenasant, *that it was not to their sisters they wrote.*

(a) "Mai myfi sydd wedi bod," &c.,—"mai nyni a nacäodd," &c. *Gr.* §§ 578, 641.

§ 372. "You *must* have taken the knife." When "must" may be explained by *necessarily*, or by *it must be that*, the sentence is translated by (*y mae yn*) *rhaid*, followed by a transitive clause.

You must be very hungry, (*y mae yn*) *rhaid eich bod yn newynog iawn.*³

The man must have taken the knife, *rhaid fod y dyn wedi cymmeryd y gyllell.*

You must have drunk the wine, *rhaid mai chwyehwi a yfodd y gwin.*

§ 373. VOCABULARY.

Opinion, bärn, *pl.*-au (*f.*)

Meaning, signification, ýstyr, *pl.*

Meaning (= *intention*), meddwl,

ystyriaethau, meddwl (*m.*)

pl. meddýliau (*m.*)

Sweet, melus or melys, *pl.*-ion.

² "Ddarfod i mi ddysgu," is elegant, but not common in coll. language

³ = there is need that you are very hungry.

Mistake, camgymmèriad, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)	To thank (TO), diolch (i).
Behaviour, conduct, ymddÿgiad, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)	To misunderstand, camddeall. ⁴
Street, heol, <i>pl.</i> -ydd (<i>f.</i>)	To mistake; to be mistaken, cam- gymmeryd.
Singing (<i>n.</i>), canu.	To mistake ... for, camgymmeryd ... yn lle.
Eye, llygad, <i>pl.</i> llygaid (<i>m.</i>)	To make a mistake, gwneyd cam- gymmeriad.
Proper (= <i>decent</i>), gweddus, addas.	To mean or intend (by), meddwl (wrth).
Improper, anweddus, anaddas.	Tomean, signify, arwyddo, meddwl.
Like (TO), <i>adj.</i> , tebyg i.	Towards (<i>pr.</i>), tua (<i>asp.</i>), tuag; ⁵ tuag at; at.
Like (<i>adv.</i>), fêl (<i>rd.</i>)	Towards me, tuag ataf.
To behave, conduct one's self, act, ÿmddwyn. <i>Gr.</i> § 322.	Already, eisoes, yn barod.
To hope, gobeithio.	
To lead, arwain.	

I am mistaken, yr wyf wedi camgymmeryd (*perf. def.*)

§ 374. EXERCISES.

A.) A ydych chwi yn meddwl dweyd fy mod i wedi camgymmeryd wrth ddewis hwn yn lle y llall? Nac ydym, nid ydym yn meddwl dweyd y fath beth.—Ai tybed fod y plant wedi bÿyta yr holl afalau melusion hyny?—Mae yn ddigon eglur nad ydych wedi deall fy meddwl.—Yr ydym yn gobeithio nad ydynt wedi gwneyd na dweyd dim yn anweddus [yn anaddas].—Mae'r meddyg yn sicr nad ydyw efe ddim wedi camgymmeryd; ond y mae yn ofni ein bod ni.—(Y mae yn) rhaid ein bod wedi eu camddeall.—Yr ydym newydd glywed fod rhyw ddyn anonest wedi eich twyllo: a ydyw hyny yn wir? Nac ydyw, ddim.—Y mae'r melinyddion yn dweyd eu bod wedi bod yn gweithio gormod yn y felin.—A ydych chwi yn sicr nad ydyw'r plant drwg hyny ddim wedi bod yn dÿwn afalau yn y berllan?—Pwy sy'n dweyd nad ydym wedi bod yn agos i'r ysgol er's pythefnos?—Nid yw'r meddyg ddim yn credu fy mod i wedi darfod fy nghiniaw eisoes [yn barod].

B.) [*Use Form I.*] Is it possible that he has returned already?—Are you sure that you are not mistaken. No: we are afraid that we are mistaken.—What a shame that they have conducted themselves so improperly!—We have just heard that two men have escaped from (THE) prison.—Are you

⁴ The prefix *cam* is = *mis*.

⁵ *Tua* and *tuag* are used only when *towards* = *in the direction to*, in a physical sense; and also when = *nearly*.

quite sure that the miller's eldest son went with them that afternoon?—Do you mean to say that they have not behaved properly?—Your mother says in her letter that she hopes you and your brothers have not eaten all those sweet apples.—We hope that they have not mistaken our meaning.—She must have been mistaken.—Is it true that you have spent the money already?—Who wants you to say that the carpenter's sons have not been working hard?—These men must have told us an untruth.—They are ready to take their oath that they have been looking for you all day.—We don't think that the poor old gentleman has been anywhere from this room for a fortnight.—Her grandfather says he is quite certain that he has not made a mistake.—They must have made a mistake.

C.) Yr ydwyf yn sicr (ddarfod) i'r eneth ddiolch i'r foneddiges am y dillad newyddion a gafodd ganddi.—Os yw yn dweyd na ddiolchasom iddo, yna y mae'n dweyd anwiredd.—Pwy sy'n dweyd (ddarfod) i mi gyfarfod eich dwy nith ar yr heol echdoe?—Yr ydym yn sicr na ddarfu i ni ei gamddeall.—Mae'n wir i fy nhad ofyn ystyr y geiriau hyny.—Ai tybed iddynt ymddwyn mor anweddus?—Mae yn dda genyf yn fy nghalon i chwi ymddwyn ddoe mor ddoeth a gweddus tuag at y dyn hwnw.—Onid yw yn ddrwg ganddynt na ddaeth y meddyg yn gynnarach?—Dywed yr eneth i'w brawd dori ei fys boreu ddoe â chyllell finiog.—Y maent oll yn dweyd na ddiolchasoch iddynt am yr hyn a gawsoch ganddynt.—Y mae arnom gywilydd dweyd i ni gamgymmeryd ei dy ef yn lle eich ty chwi.—Nid ydynt ddim yn sicr na wnaethant gamgymmeriad.—Ni ddywedasom ni erioed nad ymddygasoch tuag atom fel gwir gyfaill.—Mae arnom ofn na ddarfu i'r ddau felinydd ddweyd yr holl wir wrthych.

D.) [*Use Form II.*] Is it possible that the poor man did not thank the gentleman for being so kind to him?—He told me that he and his enemy met yesterday in the street, face to face.—It is quite plain that they mistook the meaning of those words.—My little boy says in his letter, which I received this morning, that your uncle behaved towards him like a father, when he fell and broke his leg.—He does not believe that anybody has ever heard of such improper conduct.—None of us ever said that they did not conduct themselves like gentlemen.

—I do not remember having ever seen you (W. = *that I ever saw you*) before last Sunday.—They do not remember having ever asked us the meaning of the word “already.”—Are you not glad that I was (*p. ind.*) not in the fair last Thursday?—Are you sure that you understood his meaning when he said so?—They are ashamed to say that they mistook the school for the church.—We are afraid that those boots did not last very long.—They are glad in their heart that they never promised such a thing.—Don’t you say that she turned her eyes towards you?—Who says that the young man did not mistake one sister for the other?—We are certain that they both promised to come here towards evening.—Do you then mean to say that you have never made mistakes?

E.) Mae yn dra sier gamddeall o hono feddwl neu ystyr y gair “ymddygiad.”—Nid wyf yn cofio glywed o honof y fath beth.—Yr ydym yn clywed arwain o honoch y canu yn dda.—Nid ydwyf yn gwybod ddywedyd o’r bachgen un gair cas wrth neb o honynt.—Y maent yn dweyd ar eu llw nad ymddygasant erioed yn anweddu tuag at neb.—Y mae’n ddrwg genym yn ein calon ymddwyn o honom mor anweddu tuag atynt.—Y mae yn wir addaw o honi hi dalu y chwe phunt.—Pwy sy’n dweyd gamgymeryd o’r gwr boneddig y naill chwaer yn lle’r llall?

F.) [*Take the examples under “D,” and translate them according to Form III.*]

G.) Nis gallaf fod yn sier mai tua’r afon y gwelais ef yn cerdded.—Onid ydyw yn dda genych mai nynt sydd wedi prynu’r ceffylau?—Mae pawb o honom o’r farn mai chwychw i a dorodd y ffenestri, ac a ddygodd y cwpanau arian.—Y maent yn gobeithio nad [mai nid] yn y ffair y mae’r ddau arddwr wedi bod.—Y mae’r gwas yn sier mai nid â’i gyllell ef y torodd y bachgen bach ei fys.—Mae yn dra thebyg mai camgymeryd a ddarfu i chwi [a wnaethoch].—A ydynt hwy yn dweyd mai hwynt-hwy (*coll.* y nhw, y nhwy) a ddiolchodd i’r wraig foneddig?—Yr ydych chi yn meddwl nad myfi a bedolodd y ceffylau: yr ydwyf finnau yn sier mai myfi a’u pedolodd.—A ydych chi yn dweyd mai chwychw i a arweiniodd y canu?

H.) [*Antithetic: see § 371.*] You are of (THE) opinion, are you not, that **my neighbour** sent that letter to the newspaper? No, I am not; for every one tells me that **you** sent it.—Myvanwy says that it was with this large stone the carpenter's boy broke the parlour window.—The boy is quite certain that it was not near the bridge he lost the half sovereign.—My wife tells me that **the gentleman**, who sat next to you at dinner, saved the young lady from being drowned.—Why are you so very glad that **I** have gained (*l.u.* “earn”) the prize (*l.u.* “reward”)?—We think that **you** wrote those letters.—He is pretty sure that it was not || *his* daughter who said that.—We trust (*l.u.* “hope”) that it was not you who wrote those unkind letters against us.—**The farmer's son** must have taken the two spades.—**The lady**, whom we met yesterday in the street, must have sent us all these pretty things.—Is it possible that **this** led him to prison?—The servant is ready to take his oath that **he** did not turn the ponies out of the field.—I am glad in my heart that **I** did not lead the singing that Sunday morning.—You say that **the carpenter's son** stole the apples; but it is much more likely that **you yourself** stole them.

I.) Beth yr wyt ti yn ei feddwl, fachgen, (*Gr.* § 752) wrth fod mor ddiog?—Pwy sydd nad yw yn gwybod beth ydyw ystyr [meddwl] y gair “pentref?”—Pa sut y gall dynion anwybodus, fel nyni, beidio â chamgymmeryd?—Y mae'r bachgen yn bur debyg i'w dad.—Nid yw efe ddim wedi myned i'r afon; ond y mae yn cerdded tuag ati.—Pwy ydyw hwnaew sy'n rhedeg ei oreu at dy [tua thy] y gof?—Y mae'r eneth yma yn debycach o lawer i'w modryb nag ydyw ei chwaer.—Nid oes ganddo yr un bunt ar ei helw tuag at dalu ei ddyled.—Dyna (*Gr.* § 551) a ddywedodd wrthyf echnos.—Beth y mae'r dyn yn ei feddwl wrth ddywedyd nad ymddygasom yn addas tuag ato?—Beth y mae'r gair “Bala” yn ei arwyddo? Yr ydwyf yn meddwl fod y gair “Bala” yn arwyddo “tref” neu “lan.”

J.) I saw him soon after, walking towards the doctor's house.—Is not that young man very like your nephew? Yes, really, he is very like him.—I do not know what this word means.—They are, like many others, fonder of spending money than of giving any to poor people.—He promised to come here

towards evening.—How many pounds have we towards paying the debt we owe the farmer for hay and corn?—This is || *my* opinion, and that is || *your* opinion.—This is what they told me, that I am always making great mistakes about something or other.—Have you good singing here?—He is of opinion that we are all wrong.—A learned man, like you, must know the meaning [signification] of the word “society.”—You have nothing to say against his conduct, have you?—What do you mean, man, by spending all your money?—Has he **black eyes or blue eyes**?—The word “inch” signifies “the twelfth part of a foot.”—He does not know what the other words mean.—If he is not a dishonest man, he is very like one.

CHAPTER XL.

[Cause and concessive clauses in perfect tense,—absolute clause,—*go, lled, pur, tra, iawn.*]

Notes and References.

§ 375. **Cause clause.** Perfect tense. A transitive clause may be converted into a cause clause merely by prefixing a causal conjunction.

Am ein bod wedi eu rhwystro.	Because we have hindered them.
O herwydd nad ydych wedi ymddwyn yn addas.	Because you have not acted properly.
Gan (ddarfod) iddo gymmeryd [gan gymmeryd o hono] yr holl waith arno ei hun.	Since [as, seeing that] he took all the work upon himself.
Yn gymmaint ag na ddaethant mewn pryd.	Inasmuch as they did not come in time.
Gan mai chwydychwi a brynodd y tai.	Seeing that you bought the houses.

§ 376. **Concessive clause.** Perfect tense. A transitive clause may be converted into a concessive clause merely by prefixing a concessive conjunction.

Er bod pawb o honynt wedi methu (â) fy narbwylllo.	Although all of them have failed to persuade me.
Er i'r dyn gymmeryd arno [er cymmeryd o'r dyn arno] fod yn wallgof.	Although the man pretended to be mad.
Er mai nyni a gauodd y drysau.	Although we shut the doors.
Er nad [mai nid] hwynt-hwy a agorodd y ffenestri.	Although they did not open the windows.

§ 377. Absolute clause. *Gr.* § 878, &c.*Positive.**Negative.*A mi (or myfi¹) yn ofnus, *I being timid.*A mi heb fod yn ofnus, *I not being timid.*A chwi yn darllen, *you reading.*A chwi heb fod yn darllen, *you not reading.*Ac efe wedi gorphen, *he having finished.*Ac efe heb orphen, *he not having finished.*

A cause clause, headed by *seeing that*, &c., and occurring in the 2nd or subsequent part of the sentence, is very often expressed in W. by the absolute construction. [Cf. Eng. *we having* = *seeing that we have.*]

Why are you offended with us, *seeing that we have done our best?* *pa ham yr ydych wedi digio wrthym, a ninnau² wedi gwneyd ein goreu?*

To followed by infinitive, and also a participle, used absolutely, are rendered into W. by *a* or *ac* with infinitive.

To tell you the truth, I have already spent all the money, *a dweyd y gwir wrthyeh, yr ydwyf wedi gwario yr holl arian yn barod.*

He is tolerably comfortable, considering everything, *y mae efe yn lled gysurus, ac ystyried pob peth.*

§ 378. Go (*mdl.*), lled (*mdl.*); pur (*mdl.*), tra (*asp.*); iawn.

Go, lled, *pretty, rather, somewhat, tolerably.* These particles are weaker than *pâr* and *tra*.

Pur, tra, *pretty, very* (unemphatic). *Pâr* and *tra* are weaker than *iawn*. But *tra* is sometimes stronger than *pâr*, and almost equivalent to *iawn*.

Iawn, *very*, both emphatic and unemphatic.

Dyn lled wybodus, *a tolerably well-informed man.*

Dynes led wybodus.

Dyn go wybodus. ~~Gr.~~ Dynes go wybodus.

} *Gr.* § 474, and (a).

Y mae efe yn dra gwybodus, *he is very well-informed.* *Gr.* § 692.

§ 379. VOCABULARY.

Advantage, *màntais*, *pl.* *man-teision* (*f.*)

Mad, *gwallgof.*

Timid, *ðfnus.*

Fence, *clàwdd*, *pl.* *clòddiau* (*m.*)

Well-informed, *knowing*, *gwybodus.*

Hedge, *gwrŷch*, *pl.*-*oedd* (*m.*)

To pretend, *cymmeryd arnaf.*

Dissenter, *ymneillduwr.* } *Gr.*

To take ... upon, *cymmeryd ... arnaf.*

Hypocrite, *rhagrithiwr.* { § 130.

To confess (to), *cyfaddef* (*wrth*).

¹ See *Prel. Remarks*, § 26.

² The conjunctive pronoun is used in this construction.

To stop, <i>v. int.</i> , aros.	So long, <i>adv.</i> cyhŷd.
To stop, hinder, prevent (from), rhwŷstro (i or rhag).	Rather, tolerably, &c. See § 378.
To fail, methu, methu â.	Rather than, yn hŷtrach na.
To persuade, darbwyllo, perswàdio.	Rather, <i>with comp.</i> , bràidd.
For (= because of), am.	Rather too, braidd yn rhy.

For my life, for the life of me, possibly, yn fy myw.

The more the pity, alas, unfortunately or unluckily, ysywaeth.

Rather too much or many, braidd ormod : braidd yn ormod (*predicative*).

Rather too little or few, braidd ry fach : braidd yn rhy fach (*predicative*).

I am offended with, yr wyf wedi digio wrth (*perf. def.*)

He pretends to be, y mae'n cymmeryd arno fod or ei fod (ef).

§ 380. EXERCISES.

A.) Y maent wedi digio wrthym am [o herwydd] ein bod wedi bod gyhyd oddi cartref.—Gan ei bod hi wedi anghofio ei gwerau yn barod, y mae'n rhaid na ddysgodd mo honi yn dda iawn.—Pa fodd y gallwch garu yr Eglwys, a chwithau wedi troi eich cefnau arni?—Nis gallaf yn fy myw ei ddarbwylllo [berswadio], er fy mod wedi ceisio fy ngoreu.—Os ydynt wedi dweyd hyny, y mae'n rhaid eu bod yn rhagrithwyr mawr.—Yr ydych wedi rhoddi braidd ormod o siwgr yn fy nhe.—Y mae efe yn ddyn go [lled] wybodus, ac ystyried ei fanteision.—Y maent yn cymmeryd arnynt fod [eu bod] wedi digio wrthyh o herwydd i chwi eu rhwystro [o herwydd rhwystro o honoch hwynt] i groesi'r afon.—Nid oes arni ddim hiraeth am ei chartref, er nad yw wedi bod gartref er's tair blynedd.—Ni ŵyr efe ddim beth y mae'r gair "ymneillduwr" yn ei arwyddo.—Gan i chwi gymmeryd y gwaith arnoch eich hun, eich dyledswydd yw ei wneuthur.—Er na wnaethom ddim allan o'i le, er hyny chwi a fuoch yn gas wrthym.—Y mae eich rhieni wedi digio wrthym o herwydd na rwystrasom chwi [o herwydd na ddarfu i ni eich rhwystro chwi] i fyned gyda ni ddoe.—Nis gallwn yn ein byw eu rhwystro rhag myned dros y cloddiau a thrwy y gwrychoedd.—Nis gallant feddwl yn uchel o honoch, yn gymmaint ag nad ydych wedi gwneuthur yr hyn a addawsoch.—Y mae'n rhaid eich bod yn gwybod yn dda am y plwyf hwnw, a chwithau wedi byw ynddo gyhyd [gan eich bod wedi byw ynddo gyhyd].—Pa ham yr ydych yn anfon Myfanwy ar ei phen ei hun, a hithau yn eneth mor

ofnus?—Yn gymmaint ag mai chwychwi a brynodd y dillad, chwychwi a raid dalu amdanynt.—Yn hytrach na bod yn ddiog, y mae'n well genym weithio am ddim.—Yr ydwyf, yn wir, yn dra diolchgar i chwi amdanynt.—Y maent wedi digio wrthym am eu rhwystro i fyned dros y cloddiau.—Y mae efe, ysywaeth, yn rhy hoff o gymdeithas pobl ddiog.—Y mae'r rhaffau hyn braidd yn rhy fyrion.—Y mae hi braidd yn oerach heddyw nag ydoedd hi ddoe.—Yn gymmaint ag i chwi fethu perswadio [fethu â pherswadio] y dynion, ni all neb eu perswadio.—Nis gallwn yn ein byw ddeall beth y maent yn ei feddwl.—Pa ham y beiwch ni [arnom ni] am siarad yn rhy uchel, a ninnau heb ddweyd yr un gair?—Ai hwnacw ydyw'r dyn sy'n cymmeryd arno ei fod yn wallgof? Nage.

B.) You are pretty well-informed, considering how few advantages you have had.—This fence is rather too high.—He is very fond of drink, the more the pity.—Although he has failed to gain the prize this year, he does not intend to give up.—Although **he himself** persuaded me to prevent the boy from going with them, he now finds fault with me for doing so.—We are not offended with them because they have laughed at us.—If they have told you so, they must be very great hypocrites.—He is tolerably well-informed, considering that he has never had many advantages.—We have all, alas, broken God's commandments.—Although he pretended to be mad, they all knew that he was not.—It is rather cold weather.—Although we are at present (*l.u.* "now") pretty comfortable, we have been *very* uncomfortable.—The coffee is rather too sweet.—Although my master has given me rather too much work, I am not unwilling to do what I can.—What you gave me was rather too much.—It is rather warmer this week than it was (**THE**) last week.—We have, unfortunately, promised to take all this work upon ourselves.—You are not always right, although you pretend to be so knowing.—As [since, seeing that] the servant confessed to you yesterday evening that he broke the window, you must pardon him.—Why are you offended with the young men? Because they have been so long in the village.—Do you blame me because I said that you were a dissenter?—Although || *they* failed to go through the hedge, || *we* went.—He is rather like || *your* brother; but he is more

like || *my* brother.—They must know London well, seeing that they have [having] lived there so long.—I cannot for the life of me [possibly] stop him.—To confess the truth, I did say that he was a hypocrite.—He blames you because you did not confess to him all (that) you knew.—As she is a rather timid girl, we must not send her by herself.

C.) She is afraid that she gave you rather too little time to do the work well.—They found fault with us for saying that they were dissenters.—We were (*p. ind.*) obliged to give up the work, inasmuch as they refused to help us.—We could not possibly go that day because the rain stopped us.—As they had not much time, they could not stop.—Why is her aunt so unkind to her, seeing that she has done nothing wrong?—What you have offered is rather too little.—To tell you the truth, we are not so young as you think we are.—Considering his great age, he is pretty strong.—They cannot for the life of them understand why the man pretends to be mad.—Seeing that **you** did not hinder him from going over the fence, why is he angry with you?—It is your duty to do something for her, seeing she is so very poor.—We are offended **with your brother, not with you**, because **he** beat the boy.—As **he** did not buy the clothes, he is not willing to pay for them.—“Rather than stop here,” said he, “I prefer going anywhere.”—They beat us, although **we** did not go through the hedge.

CHAPTER XLI.

[PLUPERFECT TENSE,—time clause,—ought or should,—“to put on,” —“to take off,”—not = *peidio*,—worse and worse,—*myned yn, dyfod yn.*]

§ 381. PLUPERFECT TENSE.

(a) *Periphrastic.*

Yr oeddwn (i) wedi bod, *I had been.* Gr. p. 64.

Yr oeddwn (i) wedi dysgu, *I had learnt.* Gr. p. 71.

(b) *Inflected.*

Buaswn (i), *I had been.* Gr. p. 64.

Dysgaswn (i), *I had learnt.* Gr. p. 71.

The inflected form is chiefly used in subjoined clauses, such as *relative indirect, interrogative, transitive, &c.*

(c) *Progressive.*

Yr oeddwn (i) wedi bod yn dysgu, *I had been learning.*

(d) "I ought (or should)." *Dylwn*: like imperf. of *Dysgu*.

"I ought to (or should) have." *Dylaswn*: like plup. of *Dysgu*.

(e) Learn the pluperfect of Irregular verbs.

Notes and References.§ 382. **Time clause.** Past time.

Pan, *er pan*, *tra*, *tan*, *cyn gynted ag*, are construed with *finite* verbs. (*Gr.* § 800.)

(a) They are followed by the affirmative particle *y* or *yr*: but *pan*, *er pan*, and *tân*, are often used without the particle, and then govern the *mid.* sound. (*Gr.* §§ 806, 807.)

(b) The particles of negation in a *Time clause* are *na*, *nad*, *nas*. *Gr.* § 800. [What clauses require *na*, *nad*, *nas*? *Gr.* § 687.]

(c) Order: *conjunction—verb—subject.*

Tan orphenodd hi [*tan y gorphenodd hi*] *ei gwaith*, *until she finished her work.*

Er pan glywodd [*er pan y clywodd*] *ei deulu oddi wrtho*, *since his family heard from him.*

Cyn gynted ag y dechreuodd efe siarad, *as soon as he began to speak.*

Wedi and *ar ol* are construed with *infinitive*¹ verbs.

(a) *Wedi* and *ar ol* govern the *rad.* sound.


(b) The construction of the sentence is the same as that of the *Transitive clause.* (*Ex.* § 370, *Forms II. and III.*)

Wedi iddo roddi ei fenyg am ei ddwyllaw, } *after he had put on his*
Wedi rhoddi o hono ei fenyg am ei ddwyllaw, } *gloves.*

Cyn, *nes*, and *hyd nes*, are construed with *finite* or *infinitive* verbs; i.e., either like *pan*, &c., or like *wedi*, &c. (*Gr.* § 801.)

Cyn, *nes*, and *hyd nes*, when construed with *finite* verbs, are followed by *y* or *yr*: when with *infin.*, they govern the *rad.* sound.

Nes y cododd efe o'i wely, }
Nes iddo godi [nes codi o hono] o'i wely, } *until he was out of bed.*


 In *Time clause*, the Eng. pluperfect is very frequently rendered into W. by the *perf. indefinite*.

¹ *Wedi* and *ar ol* are but rarely found with a *finite verb* of past time.

§ 383. Ought or should.

I ought to answer the letter, *dylwn ateb y llythyr.*

I ought to have answered the letter, $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{dylaswn ateb y llythyr.} \\ \textit{dylaswn fod wedi ateb y llythyr.} \end{array} \right.$

 The apodosis (or corresponding clause) of “*dylaswn ateb*” has its verb in the *imperf.* and *perf. indef.*; and that of “*dylaswn fod wedi ateb*” in the *present* and *perf. def.*

Dylaswn ateb y llythyr, ond ni wnaethym [ni ddarfu i mi], but I did not.

Dylaswn fod wedi ateb y llythyr, ond nid ydwyf (wedi ei ateb), but I have not (*answered it*).

§ 384. **On, am**; before pers. pron. *amdan*—. **Off, oddi am**; before pers. pron. *oddi amdan*—.

“To put *on*” (a garment, &c.): *rhoddi am*. The word that might be added after *on* is in most cases added after *am*.

“She had put on her gloves,” *yr oedd hi wedi rhoi ei menyg am ei dwylaw (= on her hands).*

“To take, put, or pull *off*” (a garment, &c.): *tynu oddi am*, or simply *tynu*.

“They had not taken off their gloves,” *nid oeddynt wedi tynu eu menyg,—nid oeddynt wedi tynu eu menyg oddi am eu dwylaw (= off their hands).*

§ 385. **Not**, negating an implied infinitive: *peidio*.

You must not, *rhaid i chwi beidio*.

You had better not, *gwell i chwi beidio*.

I had rather [I prefer] not, *gwell genyf beidio*.

You may as well not, *ni waeth i chwi beidio*.

§ 386. Eng. Worse and worse. W. Worse worse. (*Inflexed comparison.*)

Eng. More and more hard-hearted. W. More more hard-hearted. (*Periphrastic comparison.*)

Y mae'n myned yn waeth waeth, he is becoming worse and worse.
[~~§~~ 2nd adj. in *mid.* sound.]

Y mae'r dyn yn myned yn fwy-fwy calon-galed bob dydd, the man is becoming more and more hard-hearted every day.

§ 387. VOCABULARY.

Dress , <i>gwisg</i> , <i>pl.</i> -oedd (<i>f.</i>)	To put on , <i>rhoi</i> or <i>rhoddi am</i> , <i>gwisgo</i> .
Stocking , <i>hòsan</i> , <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	To take [put, pull] off , <i>tynu oddi am</i> , <i>tynu</i> .
Family , <i>teulu</i> , <i>pl.</i> -oedd (<i>m.</i>)	

To dress (= to put clothes on), gwisgo am : gwisgo. ²	To become of, dyfod o.
To dress myself, gwisgo amdànaf (fy hân) : ymwisgo. ³	To become (= <i>becit</i>), gweddu i.
To undress, tynu (dillad) oddi am.	Ought or should. See § 383.
To undress myself, tynu (fy nillad) oddi amdànaf (fy hun).	Wet, gwlyb, <i>pl.</i> -ion.
To knock or strike, taraw, taro.	Hard-hearted, calon-galed (<i>pl.</i> calon-gelyd).
To knock at, curo wrth.	By (<i>before partic.</i>), trwy, wrth (<i>md.</i>)
To reach, arrive (at), cyrhaedd.	On, am ; amdan—.
To wait (for), aros (am).	Off, oddi am ; oddi amdan—.
To enter, dyfod or myned i mewn.	Before, <i>conj.</i> , cyn (<i>rd.</i>)
To become, get, myned yn ; dyfod yn. ⁴	After, <i>conj.</i> , wedi, ar ol (<i>rd.</i>)
	Until, tãn (<i>md.</i>), nes, hyd nes (<i>rd.</i>)
	As soon as, cùn gynted ag.

I had rather, y mae yn well genyf,⁵ gwell genyf.

I am up, I am out of bed, yr ydwyf wedi codi (o'm gwely.)

§ 388. EXERCISES.

A.) Yr oeddyd ni wedi rhoi ein dillad amdanom cyn i chwi godi o'ch gwelyau.—Nid oeddynt erioed wedi bod cyn belled o'r blaen.—Ni wyddai neb o honom beth a ddaethai [beth oedd wedi dyfod] o'r dynion.—Yr oedd y meddyg newydd ddarfod ei giniaw pan ddaethant i mewn.—Pa un ai Iorwerth ai Arthur oedd wedi gwisgo amdano cyn i'r forwyn guro wrth y drws? Yr oeddynt ill dau wedi gwisgo amdanynt.—Efe a gododd oddi ar ei gadair cyn gynted ag y daeth y ddwy foneddiges i mewn.—Wedi iddo roi [wedi rhoi o hono] ei het am ei ben a'i fenyg am ei ddwyllaw, aeth allan o'r ty.—Pan wybu hi beth yr oeddynt wedi ei wneyd [beth a wnaethent], dywedodd wrthynt eu bod yn blant drwg.—Ni roddodd Myfanwy ei gwisg newydd amdani hyd nes y daethom ni yno [hyd nes i ni ddyfod yno].—Wedi iddynt gyrhaedd eu cartref, tynasant eu dillad (oddi amdanynt), ac aethant i'w gwelyau.—Yr oeddynt ill tri wedi myned i fyny i ben y mynydd cyn i mi godi [cyn y codais i⁶].—Oni ddylai

² *Gwisgo* is most usually "to dress" = *to deck or adorn*.

³ *Ymwisgo* is most usually "to dress myself" = *to deck or adorn myself*.

⁴ *Dyfod yn* is used only when the predication is favourable or complimentary to the person or object spoken of.

⁵ The imperf. subj. is often used. "*Byddai* yu well genyf," I would rather.

⁶ This construction is less common than the preceding.

y dyn calon-galed yma ofalu am ei deulu? Dylai; ac fe ddylech chwithau ofalu am eich teulu.—Ni ddylasent fyned trwy yr afon heb dynu eu hesgidiau a'u hosanau.—Dylaswn fod wedi gorphen y llyfr er's talm; ond nid wyf wedi ei orpheu eto.—Y maent, ysywaeth, yn myned yn ddiocach ddiocach bob dydd.—Y mae'r gwr ieuanc, trwy ddarllen llyfrau dysgedig, wedi dyfod yn ysgolaig rhagorol.—Y mae'r plant am dynu eu hosanau (oddi am eu traed). Gwell iddynt [y mae yn well iddynt] beidio,—y mae hi yn oer ac yn wlyb.—Arosais amdanoch yn y ffordd tan [nes] yr oedd hi yn naw o'r gloch.—Gwell genym [y mae yn well genym] ddyfod ryw ddiwrnod arall,—y mae hi heddyw mor hynod o wlyb ac oer.—Trwy [wrth] fod yn fynych yng nghymdeithas dynion drwg, y maent hwythau yn myned yn waeth waeth ac yn fwy-fwy calon-galed.

B.) We had not put on our shoes and stockings when he knocked at the door.—They had dressed themselves and written three or four letters before we were out of bed.—As soon as we reached the top of the mountain we all sat down.—The woman, who had spent all the money she had, came behind him and touched him.—After the lady had gone away Myvanwy took off her new dress, which her mother had bought for her in London.—They had not said a word to us about their new dresses until that day.—They had not dressed the children when we entered the house. O what a shame!—When the woman saw that he knew what she had done, she confessed the truth before all the people.—Whilst we were taking off our shoes, they were putting on their stockings.—You ought to [should] take care of yourself.—He ought not to have come here on such a wet day.—You had better come with us. We had rather not.—I had rather remain here with you, if you please.—They had heard, before they entered the house, that the husband and wife were very ill.—She ought to have dressed the children by this (time); but she has not, as you see.—Is it true that you waited yesterday afternoon for the lady and gentleman until it was half-past three?—We had been teaching in school when you met us.—You cannot help becoming a learned man.—Have you seen those places before? No, never.—They confess that they do not know what has

become of the new dresses which their aunt bought for them the other day.—By reading a little every day the men have become pretty well-informed.—By listening too much to our enemies they also became our enemies (*W.* = *enemies to us*).

C.) Mae gwisgoedd tywyllion yn gweddu yn well i ni na gwisgoedd goleu.—Ni wyddem ar y pryd pwy oedd wedi dweyd [pwy a ddywedasai] y fath anwiredd.—Sut y gallem fod yn ddig wrth ddyn na wnaethai ac na ddywedasai ddim erioed yn ein herbyn?—Pan ddeallasom ym mha le yr oedd-ynt wedi bod [y buasant], ni ddywedasom ddim yn angharedig wrthynt.—Pan y clywsant pa beth yr oeddym wedi bod yn ei wneuthur, hwy a ddechreusant ein canmol.—Yr oeddwn wedi bod yn aros amdanoch oddeutu awr a hanner, cyn i'ch morwyn fy ngweled.—Chwi a ddylasech fod wedi gwisgo eich hosanau a'ch esgidiau.—Cyn gynted ag yr agorasant y drws, aeth pawb o honom i mewn.—“Yr ydwyf yn ofni,” ebe hi, “fod ein cymmydoges yn myned yn fwy-fwy anghofus bob dydd.”—Nid oeddylnt wedi codi o'u gwelyau pan gurason wrth y drws.

D.) Little children ought to be out of (*THEIR*) bed early.—They had been walking up and down for hours before we had dressed ourselves.—They had rather have new dresses than new books.—Is it here you are still? You ought to have gone to the village and come back by this time.—They ought to have dressed the children, but they did not.—After they had visited several countries, they returned home to their friends and families.—This black dress does not become (*TO*) you.—It seems to me that nothing becomes me.—As soon as we had dressed || *ourselves* we dressed || *them*.—They did not undress the children until they had undressed || *themselves*.—We did not know at the time what we had promised towards building the new church.—It was our duty to be kind to the children whose parents had done so much for us.—You may go; but your invalid (*l.u.* “sick”) sister had better not,—it is too wet.—We want you also to come. We had rather not, if you please.—She ought to know that such conduct does not become a lady.—That foolish young man is, I am sorry to say, getting prouder and prouder every day.—He knocked his head against the wall before we had time to prevent him.—They asked us

how long we had been waiting.—My wife says that the servants are getting more and more careful.—That's what those hard-hearted men should have done.—We did not know then who had been knocking at the parlour window.—We are going to ask the lawyer to give us a pound or two towards building the new school. You may as well not,—he never gives anything to anybody.—Your brothers may take off their shoes and stockings; but you must not.—After those naughty boys had knocked at the window, they ran through the garden into the road.—He arrived at his friend's house about five o'clock.—I take off my clothes when I am wet.—They are becoming so proud and disagreeable that we care much less about them than we did.—We are afraid he is become idle and careless.

CHAPTER XLII.

[Transitive clause in plup. tense,—cause clause,—concessive clause,—participial clause,—*yn, gan, dan, wedi*,—*being*,—*having*.]

Notes and References.

§ 389. **Transitive clause.** Pluperfect tense.

a.) In *affirmative* propositions, the pluperfect of a transitive clause is the same as the perfect. The context decides the tense. [See *Ch. xxxix., Forms I., II., III.*]

“That I had learnt.”

a. Fy mod (i) wedi dysgu.

b. I mi ddysgu : ddarfod i mi ddysgu.

c. Ddysgu o honof (fi).

b.) In *negative* propositions, use the plup. Indicative.

“That I had not learnt.”

Nad oeddwn wedi dysgu : na ddysgaswn.

c.) **Progressive.**

Affirm. Fy mod (i) wedi bod yn dysgu, } *that I had been learning.*
I mi fod yn dysgu,

Neg. Nad oeddwn wedi bod yn dysgu, *that I had not been learning.*

d.) **Antithetic.**

Mai chwychwi oedd wedi myned [a aethai] i mewn gyntaf, *that you had entered first.*

Nad [mai nid] o'r ddinas yr oedd wedi dyfod [y daethai], *that it was not from the city he had come.*

§ 390. **Cause clause.** Pluperfect tense. A transitive clause may be converted into a cause clause merely by prefixing a *causal* conjunction.

“Because they had spent too much time.”

O herwydd eu bod wedi treulio gormod o amser : o herwydd (darfod) iddynt dreulio, &c. : o herwydd treulio o honynt ormod o amser.

“As the butcher had not spent the pound.”

Gan nad oedd y cigydd wedi gwario [gan na wariasai y cigydd] y bunt.

“Since he (= it was he who) had asked you.”

Gan mai efe oedd wedi gofyn i chwi : gan mai efe a ofynasai i chwi.

§ 391. **Concessive clause.** Pluperfect tense. A transitive clause may be converted into a concessive clause merely by prefixing a *concessive* conjunction.

“Although the women had brought the baskets with them.”

Er bod y gwragedd wedi dyfod â'r basgedi gyda hwynt : er (darfod) i'r gwragedd ddyfod â'r basgedi, &c. : er dyfod o'r gwragedd â'r basgedi, &c.

“Although we had not travelled all night.”

Er nad oeddym wedi teithio [er na theithiasem] trwy'r nos.

“Although it was not at their house we had heard the news.”

Er nad [mai nid] yn eu ty hwy yr oeddym wedi clywed [y clywsem] y newydd.

§ 392. **Participial clause.**

a.) **Yn** (*rad.*) *Gr.* §§ 266, 267 : 671.

“Y mae'r plentyn yn *crio*,” the child is *crying*.

“Yr ydym wedi bod yma dair awr yn *aros* amdanoch,” we have been here for three hours *waiting* for you.

“Cyn gynted ag y gwelsant ni yn *dyfod*, ymguddiasant,” as soon as they saw us *coming*, they hid themselves.

b.) **Gan** (*mid.*) *Gr.* § 672. [*Càn*, *Gr.* § 672 (a).]

“Daethant yma yn gynnar ddoe, *gan ddisgwyl* eich gweled chwi,” they came here early yesterday, *expecting* to see you.

“*Gan feddwl* eu bod wedi blino, mi a ofynais iddynt eistedd i lawr,” *thinking* that they were tired, I asked them to sit down.

“Aeth y gwas â'r bladur i'r cae, *heb wybod* i bwy yr oedd hi yn perthyn,” the servant took the scythe to the field, *not knowing* to whom it belonged. [Neg., *heb*, without.]

c.) **Dan** (*mid.*) *Gr.* § 673. [*Tàn*, *Gr.* § 673 (a).]

“Aeth yr eneth fach i'w gwely *dan grio*,” the little girl went to bed *crying*, = *crying as she went*.

d.) **Wedi, ar ol** (*rad.*) *Gr.* § 268.

"*Wedi [ar ol] gorphen ei waith, efe a aeth i'w wely,*" *having (or after having) finished his work, he went to bed.*

The negative is usually rendered into *W.* by a *cause* clause, and sometimes by an *absolute* clause. [See below.]

"*Not having finished his work, he did not go to bed,*" *gan na orphen-odd [ac efe heb orphen] ei waith, nid aeth, &c.*

§ 393. **Being.** *Gr.* § 428.

"*Being an honest man, he paid all,*" *gan ei fod¹ yn ddyn gonest, efe a dalodd y cwbl.*

"*Not being a strong man, he gave his work up,*" *gan nad oddd yn ddyn cryf, efe a roddodd ei waith i fyny.*

"How is it that you, *being* so rich, have not given more?" *beth ydyw'r achos nad ydych chwi, a chwithau mor gyfoethog, wedi rhoi chwaneg?*

"Why should I, *not being* a relation of theirs, do so much for them?" *pa ham y dylwn i, a minnau heb fod yn berthynas iddynt, wneuthur cymmaint iddynt?*

§ 394. **Having** (participle of "*to have*" = *to possess*): *a chenyf; a ... genyf.* *Neg. heb.* *Gr.* §§ 333, 674.

"Why did not you, *having* so much money, buy that land?" *pa ham na ddarfu i chwi, a chenyh gymmaint o arian [a chymmaint o arian genych] brynu'r tir hwnw?*

When "*having*" introduces the sentence, it is oftener rendered into *W.* by a *cause* clause. [See below.]

§ 395. Clauses headed by participles are very frequently equivalent to *relative, cause, or time* clauses; and in *W.* these clauses are often preferred to the participial.

"*Being (= as he was) an honest man, he paid all.*" [See above, § 392.]

"*Thinking (= as we thought) they were our spoons, we took them,*" *gan ein bod yn meddwl mai ein llwyau ni oeddylnt, ni a'u cymmersom.*

"*Not having (= as he had not) heard from her, he wrote to her,*" *gan nad oddd wedi clywed [gan na chlywsai] oddi wrthi, efe a ysgrifennodd ati.*

"*Having (= as they had) a long journey before them, they set out early,*" *gan fod ganddynt daith hir o'u blaen, hwy a gychwyn'sant yn foreu.*

"*Having (= as I have) no dictionary, I cannot translate your verses,*" *gan nad oes genyf yr un geirlyfr, nis gallaf gyfieithu eich pennillion.*

"*Seeing (= when she saw) an apple falling from the tree, she ran to it,*" *pan welodd hi afal yn syrthio oddi ar y goeden, hi a redodd ato.*

¹ "*Gan fod yn ddyn,*" &c., is occasionally met with.

§ 396. VOCABULARY.

Dictionary , gèirlyfr, <i>pl.</i> -au, geiriadur, <i>pl.</i> -on (<i>m.</i>)	To cry (= <i>shed tears</i>), crio, nadu, (S.W.) llefain.
Journey , tàith, <i>pl.</i> tèithiau (<i>f.</i>)	To be or get tired (of), blino (<i>ar</i>).
City , dinas, <i>pl.</i> -oedd (<i>f.</i>)	To bring , dyfod â, dŵyn.
Assistance, help , cynnòrthwy, <i>pl.</i> -on (<i>m.</i>)	To take , cymmeryd, myned â. ²
Basket , basged, <i>pl.</i> -i (<i>f.</i>)	To translate , cyfieithu.
Gift , rhôdd, <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>f.</i>)	To spend (<i>e.g. time</i>), trêulio.
Present , n., ànrheg, <i>pl.</i> -ion (<i>f.</i>)	To desire , dymuno ar.
Authority , awdurdod, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	Immediately, directly , yn union, yn èbrwydd.
Idle = at leisure, unemployed, segur.	All night , trwy'r nos.
Tired , blinedig.	Good-bye , da bo chwi, byddwch wych, ffarwel (<i>i chwi.</i>)
To give to understand , rhoi (<i>or rhoddi</i>) ar ddeall.	
To bid adieu or wish good-bye to , canu yn iach â, ffarwelio â.	
I am tired (of), yr wyf wedi blino (<i>ar</i>), (<i>perf. def.</i>)	

§ 397. EXERCISES.

A.) Nid oeddwn yn sicr fy mod wedi diolch [i mi ddiolch, —ddiolch o honof] i'r foneddiges am ei rhodd garedig.—Onid oedd yn ddrwg gan wraig y garddwr nad oedd wedi dyfod [na ddaethai] â'r plant gyda hi?—Dymunasant arnaf ddweyd wrthyech eu bod wedi bod yn teithio trwy'r dydd a thrwy'r nos; ac mai hyny oedd yr achos nad oeddynt wedi gwisgo amdanynt pan yr anfonasoch atynt.—Ni a'u hadnabuasom hwynt yn union [yn ebrwydd], er nad oeddym wedi eu gweled er's rhai blynyddoedd.—Er ein bod wedi bod yno oddeutu dwy flynedd cyn hyny, eto yr oedd amryw o'r bobl wedi ein hanghofio.—Pa ham yr oedd y plentyn bach yn crio? Am fod rhyw fachgen drwg wedi dŵyn [lladrata] oddi arno yr anrheg a gawsai gan ei daid.—Yr oeddym yn awyddus i ddyfod â'r plant [i ddwyn y plant] gyda ni, o herwydd nad oeddynt erioed wedi gweled y ddinas fawr yma.—Cyfaddefodd wrthym ei fod wedi blino ar ein cymdeithas.—Pa ham y rhoisoch ar ddeall iddynt mai chwyhwi oedd wedi cyfieithu y pennillion?—Ar ol canu yn iach [ffarwelio] â'i gyfeillion, efe a gychwynodd i'w daith bell.—Onid chwyhwi a ddywedodd wrthym eich bod wedi gweled y dyn yn gwerthu basgedi? Ië.—Ymddygasant yn dra angharedig tuag atom, gan ein taro ni â'u ffyn, a dweyd wrthym ein bod yn ddyinion drwg ac anonest.

² = to go with. *Myned â* is "to take" in the sense of taking away.

—Y mae'n gywilydd mawr i chwi, a chwithau yn ddyn iach a chryf, dreulio eich holl amser yn segur.—Yr oedd yn rhyfedd iawn gan fy nhad glywed nad oeddych wedi myned â'r [wedi cymeryd y] geiriadur yn ol i'r offeiriad.—Gan eu bod mor flinedig, hwy a ddylent fyned i'w gwelyau yn union.—Canys yr oedd efe yn eu dysgu hwynt fel un ag (*or* *ac*) awdurdod ganddo.—Daeth yr eneth yma dan nadu; ond hi a aeth oddi yma dan ganu.

B.) Having so much property, you ought to be satisfied.—Not knowing that he had brought the books back, I wrote to ask him to bring them directly.—They gave us to understand that they had been travelling all night.—The servant confessed that she had forgotten to take our presents to the little girls.—They answered that they had never seen us idle (= unemployed).—The two children were crying when you entered, because the other children had not taken them to see the wonders of this large city.—Why did not you help the poor woman, seeing she had been so ill?—They had all forgotten us, although they had seen us about three months before.—We were (*p. ind.*) obliged to pay for the baskets, because **we** had bought them.—The old lady knew me as soon as she saw me, although she had not spoken to me for some years.—Were you tired after travelling all night.—Seeing the farmer coming with a large stick in his hand, they hid themselves behind the hayricks.—The clergyman went from house to house, hoping to obtain assistance to build the new school.—Having told them that I had no time to listen to them translating the work so badly, I took my hat in my hand, and immediately went out.—If you are at leisure, I want to ask you a few questions.—Being so tired, we cannot possibly do to-day what they have desired us to do.—An old man, whom I met this morning, as (*or* when) I was going to my work, desired me to tell you that he saw yesterday evening, about eight o'clock, two or three or four men standing opposite to and looking through your parlour window.—Having reached our journey's end, and being very tired, we asked the servant to bring us candles, and then went immediately to bed.—We took all the books, and amongst them two small dictionaries, not thinking that they were || **your property**.—They came here singing merrily; but they went away

crying.—For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me.

C.) Y maent eisoes wedi blino ar ein cymdeithas.—Y mae yma fachgen a chanddo ddau bysgodyn.—Gallaf ddringo'r goeden yma dan ganu.—Anaml y byddwn ni byth yn blino.—Gyda chynnorthwy geirlyfr gallais gyfieithu'r bennod yn lled dda.—Gan i chwi gael y llyfr yn rhodd, nid yw ddim yn beth gweddus ei roi i neb.—Sut y mae eich chwaer, a hithau yn eneth mor ofnus, yn myned ar ei phen ei hun?—Pa ham yr oeddynt mor awyddus i ddyfod yma? Am nad oeddynt erioed wedi gweled y ddinas fawr.—Bu yn rhaid i'r dyn gymmeryd y rhaw i'r ardd, o herwydd mai o'r ardd yr oedd wedi ei chymmeryd.—Pa ham y rhoisoch ar ddeall iddo mai nyni oedd wedi bod yn segur?—Yr oedd yn rhyfedd genym nad oeddych wedi blino, a chwithau wedi bod yn teithio trwy'r nos.

D.) Is this the man who told you that we were tired.—Although I had spent so many hours in school teaching the children, they both found fault with me, telling me that I did not do my best, and that I was oftener out of school than in school.—Having wished us good-bye, they immediately set out for their long journey.—Why did they give us to understand that **they, not you**, had sent us the presents?—They all knew that it was not to the fair, but to the top of the mountain, we had gone that day.—Although he pretended that he was tired of their society, he could not help visiting them once or twice every week.—They brought us many gifts, although we had done nothing to deserve any.—As soon as we had wished them good-bye, we went away.—Being in the house at the time, I heard every word he said.—They are as sheep having no shepherd.—Seeing me with a hammer in my hand, he said, what! are *|| you* working?—We must bid you all adieu.—Good-bye, my friend,—I must go now, having a long journey before me.—I am afraid that he is a man who soon gets tired of everything.—Having finished that work, he immediately commenced (*l.u.* “begin”) writing a dictionary.—He is astonished at you, having plenty of time, that you do not write a dictionary.—Why did he write such an unkind letter to his son? Because he had gone from home without wishing his brothers and sisters good-bye.

CHAPTER XLIII.

[FIRST FUTURE TENSE,—different forms,—“he comes to-night,”—“if I go,”—auxiliaries *gwneyd*, *cael*, *mynu*,—“a gofiwch chwi fi ! *gunaf*,”—*gobeithio*,—*ym mhen*,—*cyn pen*,—I am welcome, &c.]

Notes and References.

§ 398. FIRST FUTURE TENSE.

Form I.

Byddaf (fi), *I shall be.* *Gr.* p. 65.

Dysgaf (fi), *I shall learn.* *Gr.* p. 71.

Learn the first future of Irregular verbs.

(a) The preceding form denotes **futurity** and **promise** (and sometimes, with subject-pronoun preceding, and emphasis on the expletive *a*, **determination**).

Gofynaf iddo y fory, *I shall ask him to-morrow.*

Mi a chwareuaf, *I will play.*

(b) In English, “the present indefinite is often used for a future, both for future indefinite and future-perfect; as, “Duncan comes here to-night.” This is *not* the case in W.

“Duncan comes here to-night,” *daw* D. *yma heno*, i.e. *will come*.

(c) Future contingency (*if I should go, if I go*) is expressed in W. by the first future.

(d) The first future is often used for future perfect and present Subj., especially in time clause. *Gr.* § 805.

Form II.

Bydd i mi ddysgu. Bydd i ti ddysgu. Bydd iddo (ef) or iddi (hi) ddysgu.

Bydd i ni ddysgu. Bydd i chwi ddysgu. Bydd iddynt (hwy) ddysgu.

(a) This impersonal form has the same force as *Form I*. It occurs often after *os*, and in dependent clauses.

Os bydd iddo eich rhwystro (=os rhwystra efe chwi), *if he should prevent you.*

Pan y bydd i ni ei weled (=pan welwn ef), *when we see him.*


(b) *Gorfod* is used impersonally; and also frequently *digwydd*. [*Gorfod i* or *ar*.]

Ni orfydd i chwi [arnoch] adael eich cartref, *you will not be obliged to leave your home.* [*Gorfydd* : *Gr.* § 321].

Os digwydd iddynt ei chyfarfod, *if they (should) happen to meet her.*

¹ Professor Rushton's *Rules and Cautions*, § 352.

Form III.

Inflection of the auxiliary *gwneyd*. [ *Gwneyd* is both an auxiliary and a principal verb.]


Gwnâf (fi) ddysgu.	Gwnèi (di) ddysgu.	Gwnâ (efe or hi) ddysgu.
Gwnàwn (ni) ddysgu.	Gwnèwch (chwi) ddysgu.	Gwnânt (hwy) ddysgu.

(a) This form expresses **futurity** and **promise**. It is stronger than the two preceding.

(b) This auxiliary is much used in questions; and also in answering questions, whether the question is introduced by it or by an inflection of the principal verb.

A *wnewch* chwi fy nghofio i? *Gwnaf*. } Will you remember me? Yes.
 A *gofwch* chwi fi? *Gwnaf*.² }

Form IV.

Inflection of the auxiliary *cael*. [ *Cael* is both an auxiliary and a principal verb.]

Câf (fi) ddysgu.	Cèi (di) ddysgu.	Câiff (efe or hi) ddysgu.
Càwn (ni) ddysgu.	Cèwch (chwi) ddysgu.	Cânt (hwy) ddysgu.

(a) This form expresses **permission** (= *shall* in all persons); sometimes **futurity**; and, with emphasis on the auxiliary, **compulsion** (= emphasized *shall* in all persons).

Chwi a gewch fyned, os mynwch, *you shall go, if you wish.*

Hwy a *gânt* dalu yr arian, *they shall pay the money.*

(b) *If I may, and may I?* are often rendered by the auxiliary *cael*.

May I say one word? *A gaf ji ddweyd un gair?*

Form V. *Mÿnu*.

Mÿnu is both an auxiliary and a principal verb, and is conjugated regularly, like *dysgu*.

It implies *determination in spite of hindrance or opposition*. As an auxiliary it is = *will*; and as a principal verb it is = *will have*.

Generally, however, the meaning of *mÿnu*, somewhat like that of *will*, varies with the clause of which it forms a part. The following will serve as illustrations.

² This is not the case with all verbs,—such as *bod, dyfod, myncd, cael*. When the question is made by an inflection of any of these verbs, the answer must be made by an inflection of the same verb. *A ewch chwi yno ar eich pen eich hun? Af* [never *gwnaf*.]

Affirm. Mi a fynaf chwaneg, I will have more; I am determined to have more.

Mi a fynaf ei weled, I will see him; I am determined to see him.

Here *mynu* implies determination in spite of hindrance or opposition.

Neg. Ni fynaf chwaneg, diolch i chwi, I will not have or take any more, thank you.

Interr. A fynwch chwi afal? will you have or take an apple?

Here *mynu* may interchange with *cymmeryd*, to take.

Hypoth. Mi a af, os mynwch, I will go, if you wish.

Here *mynu* may interchange with *ewyllysio*, to wish.

Form VI. Progressive.

Byddaf (fi) yn dysgu, I shall be learning. 70, 58

§ 399. Third pers. sing. future. Gr. pp. 71, 72, foot-
notes (a), (b), &c.

§ 400. VOCABULARY.

Saw, <i>n.</i> , llif, <i>pl.</i> -iau (<i>f.</i>)	To gather, <i>hèl</i> , (S.W.) <i>hela</i> .
Hatchet, axe, <i>bwyell</i> , <i>pl.</i> <i>bwyell</i> (<i>f.</i>)	To collect, <i>caisglu</i> .
Minute (<i>time</i>), <i>munud</i> , <i>pl.</i> -iau or -au (N.W. <i>m.</i> , S.W. <i>f.</i>)	To find, <i>cael</i> ; <i>dyfod o hÿd i, cael hÿd i, cael gafael ar.</i> ⁵
Loan, <i>benthÿg</i> (<i>m.</i>)	To overtake, catch, <i>dâl goddi-weddyd, dyfod o hÿd i.</i>
Pleasure, <i>hyfrydwch</i> ; <i>plèser</i> , <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>m.</i>)	It is to be hoped, I or we hope, <i>gobeithio.</i> ⁶
Welcome, <i>n.</i> , <i>crêdesaw</i> or <i>crêdeso</i> (<i>m.</i>)	In, = in ...'s time, <i>ym mhen</i> (<i>rd.</i>)
Thanks, <i>diolch</i> (<i>m.</i>)	Before ...'s time, } <i>cyn pen</i> (<i>rd.</i>)
To borrow (from), <i>benthÿca</i> (<i>oddi ar</i>).	In less than, }
To lend, <i>rhoi benthÿg</i> , ³ <i>rhoi ... yn fenthÿg.</i> ⁴	On (= onward), <i>ym mlaen</i> .
To search (for), <i>chwilio</i> (<i>am</i>).	Where (<i>rel. adv.</i>), <i>lle</i> .
	Of course, <i>wrth rêswm</i> .

Before long, *cyn* (*bo*) *hîr*, *cyn pen hîr*.

Will you please? a *welwch chwi yn dda?*

Will you be kind enough to? a *fyddwch chwi gystal a or ag?*

Thank you very much, *diolch yn fawr* (*iawn*) *i chwi*.

Many thanks to you, *llawer o ddiolch i chwi*.

³ = to give the loan of.

⁴ = to give ... as a loan.

⁵ *Cael* is the general term for to find. In *dyfod o hÿd i*, &c., there is implied a greater search for the object than in *cael*.

⁶ Infinitive used impersonally. The full form would be *yr ydys yn gobeithio*.

And welcome, a chroeso.

I am welcome to, y mae i mi groeso i (*with a verb*).

I am welcome to, y mae i mi groeso o (*with a noun or pron.*)

I am very [quite] welcome, y mae i mi gân croeso.⁷

I shall be obliged, I must, } bydd yn rhaid i mi, gôrfydd i mi or
I shall have to, } arnaf.⁸

§ 401. EXERCISES.

A.) Mi a fyddaf yn fwy cysurus, gobeithio, cyn bo hir [cyn pen hir].—A ddeuant hwy yn ol? Deuant, gobeithio.—Bydd pawb o honom yn disgwyl eich gweled yma fis i heddyw.—Fe ddaw y garddwr yma ym mhen ychydig o funudiau i hel yr afalau oddi ar y coed.—Mi af fi ym mlaen, pa un bynag a ddeuwch chwi ym mlaen ai peidio.—Er i mi chwilio pobman, ni ddaethym o hyd i'r [ni chefais afael ar y] bwyell a gollais.—Chwi a gyrhaeddych y pentref cyn pen deg munud.—Os rhed y bachgen ei oreu, efe a ddeil ei [a ddaw o hyd i'w] daid a'i nain ym mhen pum munud, neu lai na hyny.—Diolch yn fawr [llawer o ddiolch] i chwi am fenthyg y llif a'r fwyell. Y mae i chwi gan croesaw.—A ddeuwch [ddowch] chwi gyda ni i hel cnau? Deuwn [down].—Y mae iddynt groesaw i chwilio pob ystafell yn y ty,—ni chânt ddim yn perthyn iddynt hwy.—A gaiff Myfanwy yr afal melus yma? Caiff, a chroesaw.—A gânt hwy fenthyg eich llif a'ch dwy fwyell? Na chânt,—ni chaiff neb eu benthyg.—Os bydd i mi gael [os caf] nad ydynt yn haeddu y gwobrwyon, ni chânt mo honynt, wrth reswm.—Os na ddeuant [os na bydd iddynt ddyfod] cyn bo hir, ni a awn ymaith hebddynt.—Anfonodd fy ewythr fi atoch i ofyn a welch chwi yn dda roi benthyg chwe phunt [roi chwe phunt yn fenthyg] iddo.—Gorfydd iddo [bydd yn rhaid iddo] dalu pob dimai a fenthycodd oddi arnaf.—Nis gwyddom beth a ddaw o honynt, os bydd yn rhaid iddynt dalu yr holl arian cyn pen tri mis.—Os digwydd i mi [os digwyddaf] gyfarfod y cyfreithiwr, mi a ofynaf iddo a wel efe yn dda roi benthyg y llyfr i mi.—A fyddwch chwi gystal a rhoi benthyg chweugain i mi? Gwnaf, a chroesaw.—A fydd yr esgidiau yn barod ym mhen yr wythnos? Byddant,—byddant yn barod cyn pen yr wyth-

⁷ = *there is to me a hundred welcome.*

⁸ *Gorfydd i mi or arnaf* is stronger than *bydd yn rhaid i mi*: it is often = *I shall be compelled.*

nos.—A aiff efe ym mlaen? Aiff, wrth reswm.—Efe a deifl (or dafia) y morthwyl dros y clawdd, os na rwystrweh ef.—Ni rydd (or ddyry) y dyn yma yr un swllt i neb.—Pa bryd y cychwyna'r gweision? Ym mhen awr a hanner.

B.) There will be great joy when you go there.—Many thanks to you for the loan of the hatchet.—Will you please to lend my father a saw and a hatchet? Yes, and welcome.—You are welcome to ask my master,—you will find that what I have told you is true.—You will overtake them in a few minutes, if you run.—Why will he not borrow money from his uncle? Because he never likes to borrow money.—If you search every room, you will find nothing belonging to you.—Will you be kind enough to take this letter to your father? Yes, with pleasure.—They will come here again, I (or we) hope, before long.—His greatest pleasure is to collect old books.—|| *We* will go on,—|| *you* may remain where you are.—We want to know whether he will lend us the saw and hatchet or not.—We shall expect (*W. = we shall be expecting*) to see you here again in three or four days.—When will your sister pardon me?—Will you please to tell your sisters that they are welcome to the flowers? Yes, I shall tell them this evening.—He will lend you two or three pounds, if you will promise to pay them back in less than six months [before six months' time].—We shall reach home, we hope [it is to be hoped], by four o'clock.—Shall my brother [may my brother] have the loan of this knife? Yes, and welcome.—These idle boys will do nothing we ask them.—Will you go with the other children to gather the apples? Yes, with pleasure.—You will have [you will be obliged] to remain with them until the first of January.—Must we stay in this dark room all day? No,—you shall go out before long.—Will you undertake to collect a hundred and fifty pounds towards the new church? Yes, willingly,—I shall be very glad to do it (*W. = that*).—He will give you a very handsome present, if you will persuade your friend to behave more like a gentleman.—May we [shall we] bring the little girls with us, if we happen to meet them? Yes, and welcome.—We do not know what will become of us,—we shall soon be as poor as the poorest in the country.—You are very welcome to them,—we don't want them.—Thank you very

much for what you sent me.—It is to be hoped that they have not forgotten their poor uncle.—Will he make the chairs? No.—Will she go by herself? No, of course.

C.) A wnewch chwi gasglu'r arian? Gwnawn.—A gawn ni fyned i'r ffair? Cewch.—Byddant yn dra diolchgar, os cânt aros tan dri o'r gloch.—Pa ham na wnaiff hi ddiolch i'r foneddiges?—Mi a gaf fyned i'r dref y fory,—y mae fy meistres wedi addaw.—Ti a *gei* wneyd y gwaith, er dy waethaf.—Eu prif hyfrydwch yw casglu aur ac arian.—Ni a awn yn eich lle gyda phleser, os mynwch [ewyllysiwch].—A fynwch [a gymmerwch] chwi ragor o afalau? Cymmeraf (not *mynaf*), os gwelwch yn dda.—Ni *chai*ff y dyn chwilio fy nhy i. Efe a *fyn* ei chwilio.—A fynwch [a gymmerwch] chwi ychydig o eirin duon? Na fynwn [na chymmerwn], diolch i chwi.—Hwy a *fynant* wario eu harian, er ein gwaethaf.—A werthwch chwi y ceffyl i mi am un bunt ar bymtheg? Na werthaf [na wna].—A gymmer hi ofal o'r plant? Cymmer [gwna].—A welwch chwi yn dda ddweyd wrth y plant fod iddynt groeso i fyned i'r berllan bob dydd, os mynant? Gwnawn.—Ni all fy nghyfaill eich goddiweddyd [ddyfod o hyd i chwi],—yr ydych yn llawer gwell cerddwr nag ydyw efe.—Ni *chewch* roi benthyg fy merlen i i'r dyn anniolchgar hwnw.—Ni a gawn wybod cyn pen hir pwy sydd i fod yn athraw.—Y mae iddo ef groesaw i fyned ym mlaen,—arosaf fi lle yr ydwyf am ychydig o funudiau.—Os bydd iddynt gael eich bod yn ddyn gofalus a gonest, hwy a fyddant yn garedig wrthyhych.—Pan y bydd i ni weled ein cyfnitheroedd, ni a ddywedwn hyny wrthynt.—Chwi a ddeuwch yma eto yn fuan, gobeithio.—A fyddwch chwi gystal a dweyd wrth eich tad ein bod ni ar gychwyn? Gwnaf, yn union.—Y mae iddynt gan croeso o'r holl lyfrau.

D.) They will do that for you with great pleasure.—|| I shall go with them, but || you shall not.—Will you have this saw? Yes, if you please.—Myvanwy will ask her parents if (= *whether*) she shall go with them.—The gardeners shall know the day after to-morrow what we intend to put in these beds.—They *shall* go,—we will not listen to their excuses.—Will you be kind enough to tell my father, if you happen to meet him, that I have gone on. Yes (*pl.*), with pleasure.—We *will* have the ponies, in spite of them all.—He will be obliged

to find the money.—They *shall* not touch my property.—Who will help me? || *I* will.—Who shall help you? || *You* shall.—You will, of course, confess all to your parents. Yes.—You will soon reach the house where we first met your two aunts.—We shall have great welcome, if we go with them.—The boys and girls are quite welcome to gather as many apples and pears as they like (*or* choose).—We shall see before long whether you are right or wrong.—Shall we ask your son-in-law to come? Yes,—I shall be very glad, if you will.—If || *we* go, || *you* must go.—If your master finds that you have not been industrious, he will, of course, blame you.—When the boys go back to school, they must be more industrious.—She will be expecting us all day to-morrow.—I *will* go to London with my friends.—Will they collect the money? Yes.—You shall search the house this minute, if you wish.—He will, I hope, pay all the money he owes us before a fortnight's time.—She will overtake her brother in less than four minutes.—He *will* have drink.—Will you have a few more nuts? No, thank you.—They cannot, of course, expect us to overtake them.—Your daughters will be very sorry if they will have to leave us next Saturday.—He will begin in about half an hour.

CHAPTER XLIV.

[FUTURE PERFECT,—time clause,—“he is dead,”—“he has been dead a fortnight.”]

§ 402. FUTURE PERFECT.

(a) *Periphrastic.*

Byddaf (fi) wedi bod, *I shall have been.* Gr. p. 65.67 } Also Gr.
Byddaf (fi) wedi dysgu, *I shall have learnt.* Gr. p. 72 } § 264.

(b) *Inflected.* (In subjoined clauses.)

Byddwyf (fi). Gr. p. 65.67 } Dysgwylf (fi). Gr. p. 72 }
(c) Learn the future perfect of Irregular verbs.

Notes and References.

§ 403. **Time clause.** Future tense. Read Ex. § 382 and notes.

a.) **Pan, tan, and cyn gynted ag,** are construed with *finite* verbs.

(a) The verb is put, in time clause, in the *first future*, or in the *future perfect inflected*, according as the action or state is contemplated as *certain* or *contingent*. The first future is, however, frequently met with, even when *contingency* is intended to be expressed.

The *periphrastic future perfect* denotes *certainty*.

(b) Eng. When we *finish*. W. When we *shall finish*, or *shall have finished*. *Ex.* § 398.

b.) **Wedi or ar ol,¹ cyn, nes or hyd nes,²** are construed with *finite* or *infinitive* verbs.

The construction with infinitive in *future* time is the same as that in *past* time; i.e., both are the same as the past transitive clause. Forms II. and III. *Ex.* § 370. ~~†~~ The time marked depends on the verb of the main clause. *Gr.* § 804.

Pan ddel (or ddelo) i mewn i'r ty, *when he comes into the house.*

Pan fydd efe wedi fy ngoddiweddyd, *when he has overtaken me.*

Arosaf tan gychwynant (or gychwynont), *I will wait until they set out.*

Gofynaf iddo cyn gynted ag y gwelaf ef (or gwelwyf), *I will ask him as soon as I see him.*

Cyn yr elant (or elont),—cyn iddynt fyned [cyn myned o honynt], *before they go.*

Cyn y byddant wedi gorphwys, *before they have rested.*

Nes [hyd nes] y dychwelwn (or dychwelom),—nes i ni ddychwelyd [nes dychwelyd o honom], *until we return.*

Wedi [ar ol] i ni orphwys digon [wedi or ar ol gorphwys o honom ddigon], *after we have rested enough.*

§ 404. **Byw and marw.** *Gr.* §§ 329, 330. The signification of *byw* and *marw* depends, in many instances, on the particle *yn* being inserted or omitted before them. [There is no difficulty in the construction of *byw* and *marw* except in their connection with *yn*.]

Rule I. If *byw* and *marw* are preceded by *yn* and assume the *mid.* sound, they are *adjectives*. [*Yn* is sometimes omitted, especially in negative propositions.]

Y mae dy fab yn fyw, *thy son is alive.* Bydd yn fyw, *he will be alive.*

Rule II. If *byw* and *marw* are not preceded by *yn*, and retain the *rad.* sound, they are verbs (progressive form); and

¹ *Wedi* and *ar ol* are not often followed by a finite verb, and never by the periphrastic future perfect.

² *Hyd nes* prefers the finite verb.

byw in this construction is *to live* in the sense of *to dwell*, *to enjoy life*, &c.

Rule III. If *byw* and *marw* are not preceded by *yn*, and retain the *rad.*, or assume the *mid.* (see below), they are verbs; and *byw* in this construction is *to live* as opposed to *to die*. [Rules II. and III. are not without exceptions, as will be seen further on.]

The following examples will illustrate Rules II. and III.

Pres. Y maent yn byw ym mhell oddi yma, *they live (or are living) far hence.*

Mae'n amlwg ei bod hi yn marw, *it is evident that she is dying.*

Imperf. Yr oeddym yn byw yn ddedwydd iawn, *we lived (or were living) very happily.*

Yr oedd efe yn marw pan aethym i mewn, *he was dying when I entered.*

Byddwn yn byw weithiau gyda fy nhaid, *I used to live sometimes with my grandfather.*

Perf. Bu fy chwaer yn byw yn y Bala, *my sister lived (or has lived, or has been living) at Bala.*

Bu y dyn, druan, fyw dri diwrnod wedi hyny, ac yna bu farw, *the poor man lived three days after, and then he died.*

Pa bryd y bu hi farw? *When did she die?* Boreu ddoe, *yesterday morning.*

Y maent wedi bod yn byw yma am ddwy flynedd, *they have been living here for two years.*

Plup. Yr oeddwn wedi bod yn byw yno am naw mis, *I had been living there for nine months.*

Fut. Byddwn yn byw yn Llundain cyn y dowch chwi yn ol, *we shall be living in London before you come back.*

Byddant byw yn hir, *they will live long (=to dwell, &c., or not to die).*

Bydd farw cyn pen dwy flynedd, *he will die in less than two years.*

§ 405. The initial sound of *byw* and *marw* after *yn* omitted (Rule III.) is very irregular, as writers and speakers seem to be guided by euphony.³ The student will, however, be safe, if he puts *byw* in *rad.* or *mid.*, and *marw* in *mid.*

Bu fyw, or bu byw, yn hir, *he lived long.*

Bu y ddau farw yr wythnos ddiweddaf, *both died last week.*

³ It would seem that the translators of the Holy Scriptures have, in the word *byw*, endeavoured to avoid the repetition of *f*: if the finite verb begins with *f*, *byw* retains the *radical*: and the contrary. "Efe fydd byw;" Neh. ix. 29. "Pa wedd y byddwn fyw?" Rom. vi. 2.

§ 406. **Meirw.** The word *marw*, even when a verb, has often in written language a plural form (*meirw*). This peculiarity, though probably founded in error, is too old to be discountenanced.

Y mae hi yn marw, *she is dying.* Y maent yn meirw, *they are dying.*

§ 407. Eng. He is dead : was dead : will be dead.

W. He has died : had died : will have died.

Eng. He has, &c., been dead (or gone) a fortnight.	} Point of time, <i>Ex.</i> § 335.
W. He has, &c., died (or gone) for (<i>er's</i>) a fortnight.	
Eng. He has been here (for) a fortnight.	} Duration of time, <i>Ex.</i> § 335.
W. He has been here (for, <i>am</i>) a fortnight.	

§ 408. VOCABULARY.

Soul , enaid, <i>pl.</i> enëidiau (<i>m.</i>)	[a'ch, a'u] gilydd ; at ein [eich, eu] gilydd. ⁴
Body , còrff, <i>pl.</i> cÿrff (<i>m.</i>)	
To live ; dwell , bÿw.	Long enough , <i>adv.</i> , (am) ddigon o hÿd, yn ddigon hir.
To die , marw.	Long before , <i>prep.</i> , ym mhell cyn or o flaen.
To rest , gòrphwys.	Over (= <i>past, finished</i>), dròsodd.
To lock , clòì.	At once , ar unwaith.
Alive, living , bÿw.	
Dead , marw, <i>pl.</i> meirw.	
Together , yng nghÿd ; gyd a'n	

§ 409. EXERCISES.

A.) Pan gyrhaeddwn yno, ni a awn ar unwaith at y meddyg.—Nis gallaf yn fy myw dalu i chwi hyd nes y tal fy meistr i mi.—Byddaf wedi marw ym mhell cyn hyny.—A fyddwch chwi wedi cloi'r drysau cyn i ni ddyfod [cyn dyfod o honom] yn ol? Byddwn, yr ydym yn meddwl.—Ni byddant wedi bod yma (am) bythefnos tan [hyd] dreneydd.—Gwell iddo aros tan fydd pob peth drosodd.—Ar ol [wedi] iddo orphen [ar ol gorphen o hono] y rhan gyntaf, bydd yn rhaid iddo ddechreu

⁴ *Gyda'n gilydd* = with one another : *at ein gilydd* = to one another. "Pan ddeuant *gyda'u gilydd*," when they come together (= with one another). "Pan ddeuant *at eu gilydd*," when they come together (= to one another).

yn ebrwydd ar yr ail ran.—Y maent oll yn fyw ac yn iach.—Yn Llundain y mae efe yn byw yn awr.—Am ba faint o amser y buoch byw yng nghyd? Am flwyddyn a hanner.—Gwell yw ci byw na llew marw.—A fydd yr enaid farw? Na bydd: nis gall yr enaid farw.—Nid oeddym yn byw yn gysurus gyda'n gilydd.—Nis gwyddom pwy a fu yn byw yn y ty hwn.—“Yr ydych wedi byw,” meddai efe, “(am) ddigon o hyd.”—Yr oedd ein tri chefneder wedi marw [meirw] cyn i ni wybod eu bod yn sal.—Pan y byddaf wedi talu i'r teiliwr, ni bydd arnaf ddim i neb.—Nis gall y forwyn gloi'r drws nes iddi gael [nes cael o honi] yr agoriad.—Byddwn oll wedi marw neu wedi myned ymaith ym mhell cyn y cymmer hyny le.—Efe a ysgrifena atom cyn gynted ag y gwybydd beth a ddaw o hono.—Wedi i chwi orphen y geirlyfr, rhaid i chwi orphwys ychydig.—Bydd Myfanwy wedi aros gyda'i modryb (am) dri mis ddydd Mawrth nesaf (or pan ddelo dydd Mawrth nesaf).—Bydd y plant wedi myned oddi cartref er's hanner blwyddyn ddydd Llun nesaf (or pan ddelo dydd Llun nesaf).—Er's pa bryd y maent wedi marw [meirw]? Y maent wedi marw [meirw] er's pedair blynedd.

B.) All of us will die before long.—Have you ever been living in that village? No, never.—The book gives an account of all who have died in the parish.—Is our old friend still alive [living]? No: he has been dead three years.—The neighbours tell us that the parents did not live long after their children.—We shall be gone long before the servants come from Bala fair.—They have been gone three weeks.—We shall have been here long enough.—Did you not tell us that they had lived happily together? Yes.—As soon as we have gathered enough for ourselves, we will gather a few for you.—Had you not better remain here until the rain is over?—Will you come for a walk with me after you have written your letters? Yes, with pleasure.—They will expect to hear from us as soon as we reach home.—When we meet them, we shall ask them what they meant by saying so.—They will have walked there and back, before you put on your stockings.—She will have been from home (for) three years next February (or W. = *when next February comes*).—How long (*point of time*) have they been dead? They have been dead many years.—Both live

together very comfortably, don't they? Yes.—How long (*duration of time*) have your uncle and aunt been living in this uncomfortable house? Six months.—They will, I hope, live together for many years.—Your old servant has been dead a fortnight or three weeks.—She will be dead before you see her.—You will all be dead men before long.—My uncle has lived here for five years.—Our kind uncle will have been dead seven weeks next Sunday (or *W.* = *when next Sunday comes*).—After they have rested a little, they must go for a walk.

C.) Pan fo [fydd] genych amser, rhaid i chwi dalu ymweliad â ni.—Ni faddeuwn iddo hyd nes y dywedo fod yn ddrwg ganddo am yr hyn a wnaeth yn ein herbyn.—Byddant wedi cyrhaedd adref ym mhell o'n blaen ni.—Cyn gynted ag y bydd wedi darfod [darfyddo] ei giniaw, efe a ddaw gyda chwi.—Rhaid i chwi aros hyd nes [tan] y daw pawb at eu gilydd [yng nghyd].—Bydd yn ddrwg iawn genym, os bydd ein cyfeillion wedi myned adref cyn y deuwn yn ol o'r farchnad.—Byddwn wedi bod oddi cartref yn ddigon hir [am ddigon o hyd].—Er iddynt chwilio yr afon trwy'r dydd, ni chawsant afael ar gorff y dyn, druan, a foddodd neithiwr.—A ydyw'r ddynes, druan, yn fyw? Nac ydyw : bu farw prydawnw ddoe oddeutu pedwar o'r gloch.—Bu fy nghyfaill fyw bum diwrnod ar ol hyny ; ond bu farw cyn i mi allu ei weled.—Am ba faint o amser y maent wedi bod yn byw gyda'u gilydd? Am chwe blynedd.—Bydd ein cyrff feirw ; ond ni bydd ein heineidiau feirw byth.—A fyddwch chwi gystal a dweyd wrth wraig y garddwr, pan weloch hi, fod ei bachgen drwg wedi cloi y drws, a chuddio'r agoriad.—Y mae'r wraig dda yn addaw aros nes i mi orphwys ychydig.

D.) After you have gathered all the plums, I shall want you to take some of them to your two aunts.—They ought to wait until their friends return.—The servant must not only shut, but lock all the doors as soon as you come in.—All will be over before you are out of bed.—When I have reached home, I will at once write the three letters which I promised to write.—The other gardener will have finished his work long before you (*Ex.* 359 (a)).—He will not lock the church door until we get our Hymn-books.—We shall all be very sorry if you are gone before we return from Shrewsbury.—Few have

yet come together.—Will you be kind enough to send for me as soon as you have brought them together?—The girl says that she is afraid to touch dead bodies.—And the man became a living soul.—As soon as they have finished what they are now doing, they will at once begin the work you have asked them to do.—The poor child will die, I am afraid, in three or four days.—Are not living dogs better than dead lions?—The woman, whom you met this morning in the street, told me last Friday that she and her cousin (*fem.*) had lived together long enough.—You will kill yourself, if you work so hard,—you must rest a little.—As soon as they reach their journey's end, they must rest for a day or two.—The body will die; but the soul can never die.—The soul will live for ever.

CHAPTER XLV.

[Transitive clause headed by *y* or *yr* with finite verbs,—adverbs of doubting,—*canlyn* and *dilyn.*]

Notes and References.

§ 410. **Transitive clause.** *Y* or *yr* with finite verbs. *Gr.* §§ 770, 771.

a.) *Present.* This construction is uncommon in the present tense, except in the use of such verbs as *gwybod*, *adnabod*, *gallu*, *medru*, *gweled*, *clywed*, *meddu* (to have, possess), which admit of this or the periphrastic form. The *present of habit* takes this construction.

Mi a welaf yr adwaenoch amryw o'r trigolion, I see that you know several of the inhabitants.

Mae'n eglur na wŷr y dyn y gwahaniaeth rhwng glas a melyn, it is plain that the man does not know the difference between blue and yellow.

Yr ydym yn ofni na byddant un amser yn gwneyd defnydd da o'u hamser, we fear that they never make good use of their time. (Present of habit.)

b.) *Imperfect.* This construction is uncommon in the imperf., except in the use of such verbs as *gwybod*, *adnabod*, *gallu*, *medru*, *meddu*. The *imperf. of habit* takes this construction. Also *dylwn*, I ought.

Efe a gyfaddefodd y gwyddai i ba le yr aethent, he confessed that he knew where they had gone.

Yr wyf yn deall y byddai yn darllen llawer [yr arferai ddarllen llawer, —y darllennai lawer¹], *I understand that he used to read much.*
(*Imperf. of habit.*)

Yr ydym oll o'r farn y dylech faddeu iddo, *we are all of opinion that you ought to pardon him.*

c.) *Perfect.* This construction is very seldom met with in the perfect.

d.) *Pluperfect.* This construction is very seldom met with in the plup. *Dylaswn*² takes this construction.


Cyfaddefant y dylasant wybod y gwahaniaeth, *they confess that they ought to have known the difference.*

e.) *Future.*

Mae'n bur debygoly bydd llawer o'r plwyfolion yn bresennol, *it is very probable that many of the parishioners will be present.*

Gobeithio na ddilynant siampl ddrwg eu cymmydog, *it is to be hoped that they will not follow the bad example of their neighbour.*

Mae'n lled sicr genym y byddant wedi gorphen cyn i chwi ddychwelyd, *we are pretty certain that they will have finished before you return.*

§ 411.  Thus, affirmative transitive clause in *present*, *imperfect*, *perfect*, and *pluperfect* Indicative, is, for the most part, expressed by the *periphrastic* (or *infinitive*) form; and transitive clause in *present of habit*, *imperfect of habit*, *first future*, and *future perfect* Indicative, is expressed by *y* or *yr* with finite verbs.

The same remark will apply to the *cause* and *concessive*. [Ch. xlvi.]

§ 412. The *antithetical* transitive has already been sufficiently explained.

§ 413. **Adverbs of doubting.** *Gr.* § 696.

§ 414. VOCABULARY.

Inhabitant, un o drigòlion, <i>pl.</i>	Difference, gwahaniaeth (<i>m.</i>)
trigòlion.	Use, defnydd, <i>pl.</i> -iau (<i>m.</i>)
Parishioner, un o blwyfòlion, <i>pl.</i>	To defend, amddiffyn.
plwyfòlion.	To succeed, llwyddo.
Example, siampl, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	To follow, canlyn, ³ dilyn.

¹ Not very common.

² *Dylwn* and *dylaswn*, which have been introduced into this Work for convenience sake, belong more properly to the Subjunctive mood, and follow the construction of the Subjunctive. (*Gr.* § 771.)

³ *Canlyn*, as a rule, is used only when the object is *physical*.

Sincere, didwyll, diffuant.

Very well, o'r goreu, pùrion.

Otherwise, (or) else, onide. [man.

Perhaps, possibly, hwyrach, efallai,

Everywhere, ym mhob man; i bob

fe allai, fe ddichon.

To take for granted, cymmeryd yn ganiatäol.

To get rid of, cael gwared o.

§ 415. EXERCISES.

A.) Yr wyf yn cymmeryd yn ganiataol y gŵyr efe fwy am y wlad hon nag a wn i.—Efallai [fe allai] na welant mo honom.—Ni ddylech gymmeryd yn ganiataol y gallaf [medraf] gerdded pedair milltir (yn) yr awr.—A ydych chwi yn credu na feddant ddim rhagor o arian?—Yr ydych chwi, fe allai, yn meddwl nas gallaf amddiffyn fy hun.—A ydynt hwy yn sicr na bydd y dynion hyny un amser yn canmol pobl anonest?—Mae yn ddrwg genyf glywed y byddwch yn myned oddi cartref yn rhy aml o lawer.—Y mae pawb yn dweyd y byddech allan o'r ysgol yn amlach nag y byddech yn yr ysgol.—Dywed fy nghymmydog yr arferai efe ganu llawer pan oedd yn ieuanc.—Mae'r ddau was yn dweyd yr ânt i ffwrdd y fory. Purion [o'r goreu],—mae yn dda genym gael gwared o honynt.—Hwyrach y bydd y llyfrau hyn o ryw ddefnydd i chwi,—nid ydynt o ddim defnydd i mi.—Y mae pawb o honom yn gobeithio yn ddiffuant mai chwyhwi a gaiff holl eiddo eich ewythr.—Yr ydym yn ofni na wna'r plant ddilyn siampl dda eu tad.—Y mae'n dra thebyg y byddwn oll wedi marw ym mhell cyn hyny.—Gwyddoch chwi, efallai, a ydyw'r gwr ieuanc yn debyg o lwyddo ai peidio.—Efallai nad adwaenai neb o'r trigolion mo honoch.—“Yr ydwyf yn gobeithio yn ddiffuant,” ebe efe, “y dilyna'r plant [y gwna'r plant ddilyn] siamplau da eu rhieni.”—Y mae'r ysgol feistr yn dweyd y rhaid i chwi siarad llai, onide y try efe chwi o'r ysgol.—Dywed fy mrawd yn ei lythyr na ddylwn wneyd dim gwahaniaeth rhyngddynt.—Y maent yn dweyd, os oes genym barch iddynt, y dylasem eu canlyn i bob man.—Anfonodd ei was i ddweyd y rhaid i ni edrych ym mhob man am y llwyau arian a gollasom.—Onid ydych chwi yn cael mai anhawdd yw cyfarfod â chyfeillion didwyll [diffuant] yn unlle?—Yr ydym yn meddwl yr edwyn yr offeiriad eisoes y rhan fwyaf o'i blwyfolion.—Hwyrach [fe ddichon] y byddent yn gwneyd gormod o wahaniaeth rhwng eu plant.—Y mae'r plant yn ofni

na fedrant ein canlyn i bob man.—Cyfaddefodd un o'r plwyf-
olion wrth yr offeiriad ddoe na bydd un amser yn myned i
unlle ar ddydd Sul.—Fe ddichon na lwyddwn, wedi'r cwbl.—
Rhaid i chwi gael gwared o honynt yn union, onide bydd yn
edifar genych.—Hwyrach mai nid myfi a gaiff y wobrwy,
wedi'r cwbl.

B.) It is certain that they will try to get rid of us.—I don't
believe that he can defend himself.—If we are poor now, it
does not follow that we shall always be poor.—Your master
says that you must look for them everywhere.—He takes for
granted that you will do what you can.—It is not likely that
they will follow you everywhere.—He has sent to say that the
shepherd and his wife must make haste, otherwise that they
will not be there in time.—We know very well that it will not
be easy to get rid of them.—They are afraid it will be of no use
asking any of the parishioners.—I am certain that some of the
inhabitants will be able to give you some account of the old
church.—Perhaps we shall all be dead long before then.—The
inhabitants are, possibly, angry with me on account of those
letters.—Why do you think that **the lawyer** will be your
most sincere friend?—We are all of opinion that they ought
to defend themselves, if they can.—Our aunt says in her letter
that she sincerely hopes we shall succeed.—Why do they say
that this old dictionary will be of no use to us? We think it
will be of great use.—Did you tell some of the parishioners
that you wanted to, but could not, get rid of us?—Most of the
inhabitants are of opinion that the young gentleman will follow
the good examples of his father and grandfather.—He says
that it is very seldom he goes out for a walk.—If the miller's
son tells you that he has not a penny in his pocket, he tells
you an untruth.—My opinion is that you ought not to make
so much difference between the two children.—Perhaps **your
two uncles** will come.—Perhaps they told you that we used to
borrow books from them.—The smith and carpenter say that
they will not help you. Very well: we can do without their
help.—You may be sure that the parishioners know more
about the parish than you know.—They must find the silver
spoons by this day week, or else they must pay for them.—
What did the clergyman say? That we ought not to have

followed their bad example.—A parishioner of mine (W. = *one of my parishioners*) said to me this morning that he can't understand my sermons.—They were not aware (*l.u.* “to know”) until the gardener told them, that the village children used to laugh at them.—The boy said that he had neither shoes nor stockings.—He takes for granted that you will follow him.—We fear that we shall be gone before you come back.—We both (*fem.*) sincerely hope that they will live happily together for many years.—The parishioners do not say that you never visited [used to visit] them.

CHAPTER XLVI.

[Cause and concessive clauses with finite verbs,—“the same,”—*bÿnag*,—Welsh,—English.]

Notes and References.

§ 416. **Cause and concessive clauses.** *Y* or *yr* with finite verbs. A transitive clause may be converted into a cause or a concessive clause merely by prefixing a cause or a concessive conjunction. (Read Ex. § 410.)

a.) *Present.*

O herwydd yr edwyn efe ef yn well na myfi, *because he knows him better than I do.*

Am nas gwyddom pa sut i'w gwahaniaethu, *because we do not know how to distinguish them.*

Gan y byddant yn myned i Gymru mor fynych, *as they go to Wales so often.*

Er y medr wahaniaethu rhwng drwg a da, *although he can distinguish between evil and good.*

Er na allwn wahanu y drwg oddi wrth y da, *although we cannot separate the evil from the good.*

Er na bydd hi un amser yn myned i Loegr, *although she never goes to England.*

b.) *Imperfect.*

Gan y gallent yn hawdd eu gwahaniaethu, *as they could easily distinguish them.*

Gan na feddwn eiriadur Cymraeg a Seisneg, *since I had not a Welsh and English dictionary.*

Am y byddech yn darllen cymmaint o Gymraeg, *because you used to read so much Welsh.*

Er na fedrem ond ychydig o Seisneg, *although we knew but little English.*

Nis gallwn eich esgusodi, er efallai y dylem, *we cannot excuse you, although perhaps we ought.*

Er y byddech yn prynu defaid Cymreig, *although you used to buy Welsh sheep.*

c.) *Pluperfect.* Dylaswn.

O herwydd y dylasech eu hesgusodi, *because you ought to have excused them.*

Er y dylaswn ufuddhau iddo, *although I ought to have obeyed him.*

d.) *Future.*

Am na wnewch eu gwahanu, *because you will not separate them.*

Gan y byddaf yn myned oddi cartref yn fuan eto, *as I shall be going from home soon again.*

Yn gymmaint ag na wna byth eto esgeuluso ei ddyledswydd, *inasmuch as he will never again neglect his duty.*

Er y cânt fwy na ni, eto ni byddant yn foddlon, *although they shall have more than we shall, still they will not be satisfied.*

O herwydd y byddwn wedi gorphen ym mhell cyn y deuant, *because we shall have finished long before they come.*

Er, fe ddichon, y bydd yreneth, druan, wedi marw ym mhell cyn hyny, *although, possibly, the poor girl will be dead long before then.*

§ 417. **The same**, *yr un*; sometimes *yr unrhwy*; also *yr un fath* (= of the same kind). Government: *yr un*, fem. *mid.*; *yr un*, mas. and pl. *rad.*; *yr un fath*, middle.

Yr un ddinas, *the same city.* Yr un dinasoedd, *the same cities.*

Aethom gyda'n gilydd i'r un pentref, *we went together to the same hamlet.*

Dywedodd wrthyf finnau yr un fath eiriau, *he said to me also the same (kind of) words.*

§ 418. When "the same" is unaccompanied by a noun (e.g. "my brother is of that opinion, and I am of *the same*," "my stockings are *the same* as Arthur's"), the word, which might be supplied to complete the notion in "the same," is in most cases supplied in Welsh. E.g.

If you would supply *one*, pl. *ones*, the W. will be *un*, pl. *rhai*.

If you would supply *thing*, the W. will be *peth*.

If "the same" = "of the same kind, sort, or nature," "in the same condition," the W. will be *yr un fath*. "The same," = "in the same condition," is also expressed by *yr un modd*.

My neighbour is of that opinion, and I am of the same (OPINION), *mae fy nghymydog o'r farn hono, ac yr ydwyf finnau o'r un farn.*

Her stockings are the same (= of the same kind) as yours, *y mae ci hosanau hi yr un fath a'ch rhai chwi.*

We are well, and we hope you are the same (= in the same condition),

yr ydym ni yn iach, ac yr ydym yn gobeithio eich bod chwitheu yr un modd [yr un fath].

§ 419. *Bynag* corresponds to the English *-ever*, *-soever*, and Latin *-cunque*. The clause introduced by *bynag* has its verb sometimes in the Subjunctive, and sometimes in the Indicative. Cf. Eng. "wherever he *may be*," "wherever he *is*." [In all the examples given below the Indic. may be used.]

§ 420. VOCABULARY.

Good, <i>n.</i> , da ; daioni (<i>m.</i>)	To excuse, esgusodi.
Goodness, daioni (<i>m.</i>)	The same. See §§ 417, 418.
Evil, <i>n.</i> , drwg, <i>pl.</i> drygau ; drygioni (<i>m.</i>)	The same one, yr un un, <i>pl.</i> yr un rhai.
Speech, araeth, <i>pl.</i> areithiau (<i>f.</i>)	Whoever, pwy bÿnag.
To expound, explain, esbònio, egluro.	Whatever, (pa) beth bÿnag.
To separate, gwahanu, ysgaru.	Whenever, (pa) bryd bÿnag.
To distinguish, differ, gwahaniaethu.	Wherever, lle bÿnag ; i ba le bÿnag.
To neglect, esgeuluso.	Simply, merely, yn unig.
	Exactly, yn gymimhwys.
(a) Welsh (= written or spoken in the W. language), <i>adj.</i> , Cÿmraeg' (sometimes Cÿmreig').	
(b) Welsh (= belonging to Wales, the Welsh people, or the W. language), <i>adj.</i> , Cÿmreig'.	
(c) Welsh (= Welsh speaking or writing), <i>n.</i> , Cymraeg' (W <i>m.</i>)	
(d) The Welsh language, y Gymraeg', yr iaith Gymraeg' (<i>f.</i>)	
(e) Welsh = Welshmen, Welsh people, Cÿmry, <i>sing.</i> Cÿmro (<i>m.</i>)	
(f) Welshwoman, Cymraes' (<i>f.</i>): <i>pl.</i> Cymry.	
(g) Wales, Cymru (<i>f.</i>)	

So also *English, the English language, &c.*

(a) English, <i>adj.</i> , Sèisneg (sometimes Sèisnig).	(e) English = Englishmen, English people, Sèison, <i>sing.</i> Sàis (<i>m.</i>)
(b) English, <i>adj.</i> , Sèisnig.	(f) Englishwoman, Sèisnes (<i>f.</i>); <i>pl.</i> Sèison.
(c) English, <i>n.</i> , Sèisneg (W <i>m.</i>)	(g) England, Llègr (<i>f.</i>)
(d) The English language, y Sèisneg, yr iaith Sèisneg (<i>f.</i>)	

A Welsh gentleman, bonédwr Cymreig ; and sometimes bonédwr o Gymro.

An English friend, cyfaill Seisnig ; and sometimes cyfaill o Sais.

§ 421. EXERCISES.

A.) Pa ham y mae'r plentyn yn nadu ? Am na all gael gafael ar y swllt a gollodd.—Y maent yn gofyn i chwi egluro [esbonio] y bennod, am y gwyddant y medrwech ei hegluro

[hesbonio] yn well na neb arall.—Gan na fedrai hi ddim siarad Seisneg, hi a ofynodd i mi gyfieithu rhyngddi hi a'r foneddiges Seisnig.—Yr oedd arnynt eisieu i mi wneyd araeth Gymraeg, er y gwyddent yn burion fy mod yn deall Seisneg yn llawer gwell na Chymraeg.—Pwy bynag ydyw, pa un ai Sais ai Cymro, rhaid iddo beidio âg esgeuluso ei ddyledswydd.—Gwell (yw) i ddyn y drwg a wŷr na'r drwg nas gŵyr.—Er y dylai pawb wneuthur da am ddrwg, ychydig sydd yn gwneuthur hyny.—“Mi a'ch canlynaf,” meddai efe, “i ba le bynag yr ewch.”—A ydyw yn well genych chwi ddefaid Cymreig na defaid Seisnig? Y mae'n dda genyf bob peth Cymreig.—Gan na wnewch ein hesgusodi, rhaid i ni geisio dyfod.—Ysgrifenodd ei lyfr yn Gymraeg, er fe allai y dylasai ei ysgrifenu yn Seisneg.—Yr ydym eto o'r un farn am eich cyfaill Seisnig.—A ydyw'r hosanau a brynasoch yr un fath a'r rhai hyn? Nac ydynt, nid ydynt yn gymmhwys yr un fath.—“Mae yn rhaid,” ebe efe, “fod (pa) beth bynag a ddywed y gwr hwnw yn wir.”—Nid yw yn rhyfedd genym, o herwydd y bydd yr un peth yn aml yn digwydd i ninnau.—Dywedasant wrthym ein bod yn bobl anwybodus, yn unig am na allem wahaniaethu rhwng coch tywyll a choch goleu.—Efe a wnaeth araeth ragorol mewn Cymraeg da.—Pa un ai Seison ai Cymry ydyw eich gweision? Y mae rhai o honynt yn Seison, a rhai yn Gymru.—Er mai Seisnes ydyw, y mai hi yn hoff iawn o Gymru.—Er y gwelwn ei ddaioni ym mhob man, ychydig o honom sy'n ddiolchgar iddo am ei ddaioni.—Er y byddai efe yn prynu hen lyfrau Cymraeg, ni byddai yn eu darllen.—“Nis gallwn fod,” meddent, “mewn dau fan ar yr un pryd.”—Yr un un fydd yn dyfod yma bob amser.—Gwelsom ninnau yr un rhai ag a welsoch chwi y dydd o'r blaen.—Yr ydym ein dau yn gyfeillion mawr, er y byddwn yn fynych yn gwahaniaethu mewn barn yng nghylch llawer o bethau.—Gofynodd cyfaill o Sais i mi gyfieithu y llyfr Seisneg yma i'r Gymraeg.

B.) He must obey me, whoever he is.—As you can expound the chapter much better than I can, I shall be very glad if you will do it (W. = *that*).—My English friend is exactly of the same opinion as you.—Many of the English, I am glad to say, are fond of Wales, and the Welsh, and the Welsh language.—Will you please to ask your Welsh friend not to come to-

morrow, as I shall not be at home?—We did what we could for them, although we could not do much.—Why will he not explain these difficult verses? Because he cannot.—You are welcome to have the loan of my pony (*f.*) whenever you like (*or choose*).—Whatever they do and say must be right.—Our Welsh friends say they will follow us wherever we go.—They are offended with us, simply because we will not separate || *our* sheep from theirs.—Is he a **Welshman** or an **Englishman**? He is a **Welshman**.—We are great friends, although we differ in opinion about many things.—As they could not excuse us, we went with them.—Although these Welshmen will not help || *me*, they will, I am sure, help || *you*.—All of us answered at the same time.—We shall not want your assistance because we shall have finished all our work before Friday.—We were offended with those Englishmen because they ought not to have neglected to do what we had asked them.—“I like your English friend,” said the lady, “because he is always the same.”—It is an excellent book, whoever wrote it.—Although the man can do no good, he can do evil.—Why are they not afraid? Because they know that his goodness will follow them everywhere.—This is the same (one) as the one I saw last Monday.—My friend, who is a good Welsh scholar, says that this is good Welsh.—He also wants to know if (= whether) he can write good English.—Some people laugh at the Welsh language, although they do not understand one word of it.—This is an **English and Welsh dictionary**: he wanted a **Welsh and English dictionary**.—He offered me this morning the same (ones) that he offered my sister yesterday.—She said that, although she knew I was a **Welshwoman**, she could not help telling me that England was prettier than Wales.—One wants to learn Welsh, and the other wants to learn English.—Exactly the same thing happened the other day to an English gentleman.—Your stockings are the same as Arthur’s.—Inasmuch as you will not go without us, we must come with you.—You ought not to consider him an ignorant man, simply because he cannot distinguish them.—|| *His* words and yours are not exactly the same.—Why do you ask me to make a Welsh speech? Because we know that you are a good Welsh scholar.

CHAPTER XLVII.

[IMPERATIVE MOOD,—*let*,—negation,—“give me half a crown,”—*dysgu*, *cynghori*, &c.]

§ 422. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Bydd (di), (*be thou*). *Gr. p. 65. 67* Dysg (di), *learn (thou)*. *Gr. p. 72. 87*

Bydded i mi fod. *Gr. p. 65. 67* } This form is very often a prayer
Bydded i mi ddysgu. *Gr. p. 72. 87* } = “may I be,” &c.

Gad, *pl. gadewch*,¹ i mi fod, *let me be*.

Gad, *pl. gadewch*, i mi ddysgu, *let me learn*.

Learn the Imper. of Irregular verbs.

Notes and References.

§ 423. **Gad**, *pl. gadewch* (the 2nd pers. imper. of *gadael*, to let or permit) is a command or exhortation given to the 2nd pers. respecting the 1st or 3rd person: so that in rendering *let* into Welsh, it will be necessary to consider to which person the command is given.

Gadewch iddo gymmeryd y cwbl, *let him (=allow him to) take all*.

Cymmared y cwbl, *let him take all (=‘take he all’)*.


§ 424. **Negation**. The imperative negative is *na* or *nac*. But in colloquial Welsh we always have the imper. of *peidio â* or *âg* (to cease from, not to), followed by the other verb in the infinitive. [Compare the two forms with Eng. “fear not;” *don’t fear.*”]

Nac ofna, *fear not*. Paid âg ofni, *don’t fear*.

Na ddywedwch wrtho, *do not tell him*.

Peidiwch â dywedyd wrtho, *don’t tell him*.

§ 425. **Second pers. sing. imper.** *Gr. p. 72, foot-note.*

§ 426. Give me half a crown. }  *Ex. § 222.*
Allow me to help you. }

(a) When the infinitive is the object or “accusative of the thing” (allow me to help you), the prep. *i* should not be placed before it, as is sometimes done. “Caniatewch i mi i’ch cynnorthwyo” is bad grammar.

(b) But when the person is the object, and *to* before the infin. denotes purpose, the prep. should be placed in W. before the infin., as in Eng. “Help us to go,” *cynnorthwywch ni i fnyed*.

¹ *Rho* and *dyro*, *pl. rhoewch* (imper. of *rhoi*) are sometimes used; and also occasionally *moes*, *pl. moeswch* (give). *Gr. p. 72 (a).*

(c) When another word is the object ; i.e. when neither the person nor the infinitive is the object, the prep. will be placed before the person and the infin. "I gave the servant half a crown to buy a pair of gloves," rhoddais hanner coron i'r gwas i brynu par o fenyg.

(d) After a few verbs (*dysgu*, *cynghori*, *hysbysu*, and sometimes *gorchymmyn*), the prep. may be placed either before the person or before the infinitive. (*Gr.* § 661 (a).)

Dysgodd fi i ddarllen,—dysgodd i mi ddarllen, *he taught me to read.*
Cynghorais hwynt i fyned,—cynghorais iddynt fyned, *I advised them to go.*

§ 427. **Vocative.** *Gr.* § 455.

§ 428. **Plural for singular.** *Gr.* § 530.

§ 429. VOCABULARY.

Lord, Arglwydd, <i>pl.</i> -i (<i>m.</i>)	To tell = <i>bid, order</i> , <i>peri</i> , dywedyd wrth.
Jesus, Iesu, yr Iesu (<i>m.</i>)	To inform, hysbysu.
Christ, Crist (<i>m.</i>)	To pray (to), gweddïo (<i>ar</i>).
Jesus Christ, Iesu Grist. (<i>Gr.</i> § 422.)	(I) pray? atolwg?
Prayer, gweddi, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	Pray (<i>e.g. pray, come</i>), da ti (<i>or di</i>), <i>pl.</i> da chwi.
Forgiveness, pardon, maddeuant (<i>m.</i>)	To call, galw, galw ar.
Mercy, trugaredd, <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	To call upon (<i>prayer</i>), galw ar ; (<i>visit</i>), galw gyda <i>or</i> efo.
Leave, permission, cènad (<i>f.</i>) caniatâd (<i>m.</i>)	To have mercy upon, trugarhau wrth, cymmeryd trugaredd ar.
Quietness, llonydd, llonyddwch (<i>m.</i>)	Don't, paid, <i>pl.</i> peidiwch.
Sinner, pechadur, <i>pl.</i> -iaid (<i>m.</i>)	No, don't, na, paid, <i>pl.</i> na, peidiwch.
Picture, dârlun, <i>pl.</i> -iau (<i>m.</i>)	Please to, be kind enough to, byddwch gystal a.
Crown = <i>five shillings</i> , coron, <i>pl.</i>	Quiet, <i>adj.</i> , llonydd.
To let, gadael, gadaw. [-au (<i>f.</i>)	Not (<i>imper.</i>), na, nac ; peidio â.
To permit, allow, caniatâu.	Unless, if ... not, os na.
To advise, cynghori.	

To be sure to, bod yn sicr o.

To tell ... to, dywedyd wrth ... am. Not to, am beidio â.

To take care to, gofalu (*or* cymmeryd gofal) am.

To remember to, cofio (am).

To let a man alone, gadael llonydd i ddyn, gadael dyn yn llonydd.

§ 430. EXERCISES.

A.) Bydd (yn, *Gr.* § 655) ddistaw, fachgen bach.—Byddwch yn llonydd [byddwch lonydd, *Gr.* § 655 (b)].—Da chwi, dowch yma i'm cynnorthwyo.—Gweddiwn ar ein Duw trugarog am faddeuant.—Gadewch i'r bobl ddieithr weled yr Eglwys.—Anfoned y ceffyl o'm blaen.—Bydded iddynt fyw

yn hir, a marw yn ddedwydd!—O Arglwydd, dysg i ni fod [dysg ni i fod] yn ufudd i'th orchymmynion.—Maddeu i ni, Dad trugarog, er mwyn dy anwyl Fab, Iesu Grist.—Gadewch i ni fyned gyda'n gilydd i Eglwys ein plwyf.—A welwch chwi yn dda roi yr hanner coron yma i'r ddynes dlawd? Gwnaf.—Gad i mi dy gynghori.—Gwybydd dy fod yn euog.—Gwybydded pawb nad nyni a roddodd ganiatad i'r dynion hyn.—Myfi a lefaraf, ac ateb di fi.—A fyddwch chwi gystal a galw (ar) y gweision i mewn? Gwnaf.—Da ti, paid â bod mor ddiog.—Nid ydym eto wedi galw gyda'r [efo'r] meddyg newydd.—Pwy ydyw efe, atolwg?—Da chwi, gadewch lonydd i mi [gadewch fi yn llonydd].—Rho [dyro] fenthyg dy gyllell i mi.—Rhowch i mi hanner coron i brynu pum pwys o siwgr.—Ant [cerddant] i ffwrdd y munud yma, os ydynt yn dewis.—Bydded i ni gael trugaredd yn y dydd hwnw!—Gelwch (*or galwch, Gr. § 241*) ar Dduw mewn gweddi ddifffuant, ac yntau a wrendy arnoch.—Paid â chyffwrdd â'r darlun yma.—Peidiwch â gadael i'r boneddigesau weled y darlun hyll yma.—Dôs [cerdd] i ffwrdd y munud yma, onide mi a anfonaf y ci ar dy ol.—Na ddwg (*Gr. § 322, a*) gam dystiolaeth yn erbyn dy gymmydog.—Anfoned yr hanner coron i mi cyn i mi anfon amdano.—Caniatewch i ni ddweyd gair neu ddau, os gwelwch yn dda.—Gwnewch eich gwaith, a byddwch ddistaw. Gwnânt hwythau eu gwaith, a gadawant ni yn llonydd.—Cyfaddef dy fod yn bechadur.—Rhodded i'r gwragedd tlodion ganiatâd i gymmeryd cynnifer ag a fynant.—Da chwi, peidiwch â chadw cymmaint o swm.—Byddwch gystal a chofio dyfod [a chofio am ddyfod] mewn pryd.—Bydded [boed] felly,—ni waeth genyf fi.—Yr Iesu (*Gr. § 416, a*) a safodd, ac a'u galwodd hwynt.—Dywed wrth dy frawd am [pera i'th frawd] redeg ei oreu.—Perwch i'r gweision [dywedwch wrth y gweision am] beidio â myned tan ddarfyddaf fi fy nghiniaw.

B.) O God, be merciful unto me a sinner (*Gr. § 526*).—Let them take all the sheep and cattle.—Let (*2nd pers. sing.*) me see thy sister's new hat.—Let (*2nd pl.*) us do what we can for the poor woman.—Come (*sing.*), here, little boy.—Look (*pl.*) at these pictures.—Let us be careful.—Call (*pl.*) the servant.—Then call thou, and I will answer.—Teach me thy way, O Lord.—Know thyself.—Pray (*sing.*), don't ask me

so many questions.—Pray (*pl.*), don't talk so loud.—Allow (*pl.*) me to go before you.—Go together to church and come back together.—Make haste, or else you will be too late.—Will you take a cup of tea? Yes, please (*or if you please*).—Please to remember to bring the English and Welsh dictionary with you.—Be it so,—we don't care.—Let (*sing.*) the poor man alone.—Tell (*pl.*) the lady that the pony is very quiet.—Don't (*pl.*) separate them.—I advised her to call upon you.—Be (*pl.*) sure to tell your son-in-law to come here before we go away.—Tell (*pl.*) them not to go near the deep river.—Don't (*pl.*),—let me alone.—Shall we tell them to go from the garden? No, don't,—I have given them leave to be there.—Give (*sing.*) it (*m.*) me directly.—Give (*pl.*) us an account of the places where you saw such wonderful things.—Pardon us, O merciful God, for the sake of thy dear Son, Jesus Christ our Lord.—May they succeed!—Let (*2nd pl.*) us take a walk together.—Do (*pl.*) your work, and take care of your family.—What are you doing here, pray?—Know all of you that you will have to pay me immediately.—Pray (*pl.*), don't make so much noise.—Let (*sing.*) it be so.—Let us pray.—Pray (*sing.*) to God for forgiveness and mercy.—He remembered the word of Jesus.—Pardon (*pl.*) her.—Which of them, pray, gave you permission?—Let them pay their debts first.—Be (*sing.*) sure to be here in time.—May she live long and die happily!—Pray, be quiet, and learn thy lesson.—Unless they will give us permission, we will not, of course, go near the place.—Allow (*pl.*) me, if you please, to defend myself.—Go from my door immediately, or else I will make you go.—We are all, alas, great sinners.

C.) Peidied y dyn â meddwl fy mod i mor ffol.—Peidiant â disgwyl y fath beth.—Na ofynwch iddo am ddim.—Dywed wrthynt fod arnaf eisieu cael llonyddwch i gyssgu.—Peidiwch â benthyca pethau pobl eraill.—Gofyn i Dduw yn enw Iesu Grist drugarhau wrthyt [gymmeryd trugaredd arnat].—Perwech iddi gadw ei harian yn ofalus.—Atebed y gofyniad, os gall.—Byddwch gystal a dweyd wrth blant yr ysgol am beidio â chadw cymmaint o swm.—Pwy, atolwg, a roddodd genad i chwi i gymmeryd fy mhladur a'm rhaw i? Mi a'u cymmerais heb genad neb.—Byddwch yn sicr o gychwyn mewn pryd.


—Perwch iddynt gofio (am) ein cyfarfod yno.—Hwy a hysbysant i chwi bob peth.—Na ddos yn agos atynt.—Dymunaf eich hysbysu [hysbysu i chwi] fod yr amser wedi dyfod.—Dysgodd yr athraw i ni ddarllen [ni i ddarllen] yn bur dda.—Cynghored y plentyn i fod [cynghored i'r plentyn fod] yn ufudd i'w athraw.—Pwy a berodd iddynt beidio â gadael llonydd i'r dyn tlawd.—Peidiwch,—pa ham na adewch lonydd i mi?—Galwch ar y gweision, a pherwch iddynt frysio.

D.) Fear not, for I am with thee.—Whatever you do, take care not to offend your uncle.—The woman says that she cannot get quietness anywhere.—Have mercy upon us, O Lord our God!—Tell (*pl.*) the boys to let the poor woman alone.—Why does your neighbour (*fem.*) wish to inform me that she is going from home?—Be (*pl.*) kind enough to show me the picture.—Put (*sing.*) these books on the shelf.—My wife is gone to call upon the lawyer's wife.—I know that, whatsoever God doeth, it shall be for ever.—May God have mercy upon you!—He went and preached Christ unto them.—Believe (*sing.*) in the Lord Jesus Christ.—Who, pray, gave you leave to look at these pictures?—Please to lend me half a crown?—Let them not think so.—Permit me to say a few words to them in Welsh (*Gr.* 732, *e*) (*b*).—Let him then not come near me.—Send it (*m.*) him directly.—The little boy never goes to bed without saying the Lord's prayer.—The gentleman has desired me to inform you that he cannot possibly promise more.—Then shall they call upon me, but I will not answer.—Let the other servant help him to finish the work.—Don't (*pl.*) let him see your letters.—We are sure that they will not allow you to stand before them.—He says that he wants to have, and that he *will* have, quietness to finish his work.—We cannot pay the tailor for our new clothes, unless you will give us money.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

[Reflectives, my own, &c.,—I have ... to do with,—the one ... the other, &c.,—either, neither (*pron.*),—one (*indef. noun*).]

Notes and References.

§ 431. Reflective personal pronoun.  Read *Ex.*
§§ 349, 354.

§ 432. Reflective verbs. *Gr.* § 224.

Nid wyf eto wedi ymolchi, *I have not yet washed myself.*

§ 433. Reflective possessive pronoun.

My *own* life, fy mywyd (i¹) *fy hun.* Our *own* lives, ein bywydau (ni)
ein hunain.

Thy *own* life, dy fywyd (di) *dy hun.* Your *own* lives, eich bywydau
(chwi) *eich hunain.*

His *own* life, ei fywyd (ef) *ei hun.* } Their *own* lives, eu bywydau (hwy)
Her *own* life, ei bywyd (hi) *ei hun.* } *eu hunain.*

⚡ Your *own* life, eich bywyd (chwi) *eich hun (sing.).*

The man's *own* life, bywyd y dyn The men's *own* lives, bywydau y
ei hun. *dynion eu hunain.*

Thus the *reflective personal* and the *reflective possessive* are expressed in W. by the same words.

When *fy hun*, &c., is *possessive*, it must be of the same number and person as the preceding possessive pron., or the noun in the possessive: when it is *personal*, it will be of the same number and person as the *noun* or *pers. pron.*, to which it is set in apposition.

Plant *fy mrawd fy hun*, *my own brother's children.*

Plant *fy mrawd ei hun*, *my brother's own children.*

Plant *fy mrawd eu hunain*, *my brother's children themselves.*

Some sentences will necessarily be ambiguous. In "yr wyf yn canmol fy chwaer fy hun," the sense may be either "I praise my own sister," or "I praise my sister myself."

§ 434. VOCABULARY.

Life, bywyd, *pl.-au.*

To wash, *v. tr.* gwlchi.

To wash (one's self), ymolchi.

To clean, glanhau.

To bathe, *v. intr.* ymdrochi.

To meddle with, ymhela â.

To do (= *answer the purpose*),
gwneyd y tro.

My own. See § 433.

Acquainted (with), cydnabyddus
(â).

Distantly, o bell.

I have ... to do with, y mae (*neg.* nid oes) genyf ... i ymwneyd â.²

For shame (of yourself)! rhag cywilydd (i chwi)!

(The) one ... the other, y naill or un ... y llall; (*adj.*) y ... arall.

The one and the other = both. *Ex.* § 174.

¹ The pers. pron. is added when *my, thy, his, &c.*, are emphatic.

² Or, "y mae ... a wnelwyf â," and "y mae ... a fynwyf â," with the 2nd verb (*gwnelwyf, fynwyf*) in the Subjunctive. What has he to do with me? *beth sydd a wnelo [a fynddo ef] â mi?* I have nothing to do with them, *nid oes dim a fynwyf [a wnelwyf] â hwynt.*

Another, *pl. others*, *noun*, arall, un arall,³ *pl. ereill*, rhai ereill.³

The other, *pl. the others*, *noun*, y llall, yr un arall, *pl. y lleill*, y rhai ereill.

Each other, one another, ein [eich, eu] gilydd, y naill y llall.⁴

Either ... or (*conjunction*). *Ex.* § 88.

Neither ... nor (*conjunction*). *Ex.* §§ 88, 201.

Either = the one or the other (*pron.*), y naill neu'r llall, un o'r ddau (*f. ddwy*), un o honynt.⁵

Either of, y naill neu'r llall o, un o.

Neither, not ... either (*pron.*), ni ... y naill⁶ na'r llall o, ni ... yr un o'r ddau (*f. ddwy*), ni ... yr un o honynt.

Neither of, ni ... y naill na'r llall, ni ... yr un o.

One (*indef. noun*, = *Fr. on*), dyn or un (*m.*), read enclitically.

§ 435. EXERCISES.

A.) Esgidiau pwy yr ydych yn eu gwisgo? Fy esgidiau fy hun.—Rhaid iddi orphen ei gwaith ei hun yn gyntaf.—Dylent geisio ei boddhau er eu mwyn eu hunain.—Y mae ein cyfeillion yn ofni ein bod yn twyllo [yn ein twyllo] ein hunain.—A welwch chwi yn dda ddyfod â dwfr i mi i ymolchi?—A ydyw efe am gymmeryd un arall?—Yr ydym yn disgwyl y daw (rhai) ereill yma cyn bo hir.—Y mae ereill yn meddwl mai chwychwi sydd yn eich lle.—I bwy y gwerthasoch y lleill [y rhai ereill]?—Yr oedd y naill yn foddlon i olchi ei wyneb, a'r llall yn anfoddlon.—Oni ddylai cyfeillion amddiffyn eu gilydd [y naill y llall]?—A ydych chwi yn gydnabyddus â'r ddwy ferch ieuanc acw? Ydym, yn dra chydabyddus â hwynt: y mae'r ddwy yn perthyn o bell i mi.—Beth ydyw'r achos fod y meddyg a'r cyfreithiwr yn ysgrifenu cymmaint yn erbyn eu gilydd?—Y mae'r boneddigion yn awyddus i gynnorthwyo y naill a'r llall o honom.—Fe wnaiff y naill neu'r llall [un o honynt] y tro i mi yn burion.—Ni chlywsom air oddi wrth y naill na'r llall [yr un o honynt] er's chwe blynedd.—Rhaid fod un

³ *Un arall* is now more common than *arall*, and is preferable when in the poss. after a *sing. noun*; and *rhai ereill* is preferable to *ereill* when in the poss. after a *plural noun*. (*Gwas un arall. Gweision rhai ereill.*)

⁴ The prefix *ym* has in some verbs a reciprocal force. *Y maent yn ymgusanu* (= *yn cusanu eu gilydd*), *they are kissing each other*.

⁵ When *either* is = "whichever you like," it may be rendered by *yr un a fynoch* (= the one you may wish).

⁶ Another negative is often put before "y naill." *Ni ... na'r naill na'r llall.* (*Ni welsom na'r naill na'r llall.*)

[y naill neu'r llall] o honoch o'i le,—nis gallwch eich dau fod yn eich lle.—Nis gall dyn [un] fod bob amser yn llawen.—Y mae y llall [yr un arall] gan fy chwaer hynaf.—Pa ham nad aethoch â dwfr iddo i ymolchi?—Golched ei dwylaw ei hun,—ni chaiff olchi fy nwyllaw i.—Pa ham na lanhasoch ein hesgidiau? Y mae yn ddigon i ni lanhau ein hesgidiau ein hunain.—Anaml y byddwn yn ymdrochi, er ein bod yn hoff iawn o ymdrochi.—Ar y naill ochr : ar yr ochr arall.—Glanhâed ei thy ei hun yn gyntaf.—Paid âg ymhela â'r ellyn finiog yna.—Efe a berodd i ni redeg ein goreu o un pen [o'r naill ben] i'r dref i'r pen arall.—Nid oes genyf fi ddim i ymweyd â'r un o honoch chwi (*see foot-note, p. 236*); ond y mae genyf gryn lawer i ymwneyd â'r lleill.—Golchwch eich gwynebau rhag cywilydd i chwi.—Gwell i ni beidio âg ymhela â'r pethau perygus hyn.—Bu fyw a marw yn ei gwlad ei hun.—Carwn ein gilydd, a gwnawn ein goreu i'n gilydd.—Y mae dyn [un] yn fynych yn camgymmeryd yng nghylch llawer o bethau.—Ni bu genym erioed ond ychydig iawn i ymwneyd â hwy.—Yr ydwyf yn sicr y gwna un o'r ddau y tro iddi.—Chwi a ddyl-ech garu, ac nid casâu y naill y llall [eich gilydd].—Yr ydwyf finnau yn ofni na wna yr un o'r ddau y tro iddi.—Rhag cywilydd! nid dylasech ymddwyn mor anweddus tuag at neb.—Nid oes genym fawr o barch i'r naill na'r llall [i'r un] o honynt.

B.) || *We think you are right; but others think you are wrong.—Where are the others gone?—Go this minute and wash your face for shame of yourself.—Why did you not bring me water to wash myself?—They were afraid that their own lives were in danger.—Bring (pl.) me my own stick.—|| Your own parents blame you.—Don't meddle with what does not belong to you.—I am very fond of bathing; but the doctor tells me that I ought not to bathe.—One cannot be always working.—Have you seen either? No, I have not seen either.—Either of them will do very well.—Neither of us has anything to do with them.—Fight (pl.) neither with small nor great.—Either you or your fellow-servant must clean this place before we come back.—They are distantly related to each other.—It is one's duty to do good to all.—|| I gave him one a few minutes ago, and his aunt gave him another.—It was || your own son who told me that you were in danger of*

losing your life.—Let (*2nd pl.*) the servant (*fem.*) wash your hands and face.—On the one hand: on the other hand.—Let her wash her own hands first.—I see another standing by the river.—If this (*m.*) will do for others, it must do for you.—The others, we are afraid, will not do for us.—We went with them from one end of the town to the other.—They walked after us from one end of the field to the other end.—Both are distantly related to us; but we are not acquainted with either.—Is it not a great pity that they write and speak so much against one another?—I have but little to do with them.—What has he to do with || *our* lives?—For shame! do you mean to say that you have nothing to do with your own family?—These are **my uncle's own horses**.—Be as careful and as industrious as you can for your own sake.—The young man, I am afraid, is deceiving himself.—Here is one,—the carpenter's wife has the other.—We promise (to) you that neither of us will meddle with them.—He wrote the letter with his own hand.—If we love one another, we do what God has commanded us.—I will take either of them (*see foot-note, p. 237*).—Are you going to bathe alone [by yourself]?—We are not acquainted with either.—She is ready to help one and the other.—It is true that both are distantly related to us; but they are nearly related to you.—Tell the servant to clean the kitchen for shame of herself.—The boy shall not meddle with either.—Both (*fem.*) say that you ought to have washed yourselves before this.—She will take the one or the other,—she does not care which.—One cannot be always reading and writing.—We fear that they do not understand each other.

CHAPTER XLIX.

[Mine, the boy's, &c.,—*eiddof fi*,—*fy un i*,—*piau*,—of mine,—whose,—my own.]

Notes and References.

§ 436. Mine, thine, &c.; the boy's, the boys'; that of, those of. These words may be rendered

a.) By a corresponding form.

Eiddof fi:	eiddot ti:	eiddo ef; (<i>f.</i>) eiddo hi:	eiddo'r bachgen.
Eiddom ni:	eiddoch chwi:	eiddynt hwy:	eiddo'r bechgyn.

The form *eiddof fi*, &c., occurs as *predicate*, and the order of the sentence is generally *predicate, verb, subject*. In other circumstances "yr" will precede *eiddof fi*, &c.

Eiddof fi yw yr holl dir yma, *all this land is mine.*

Efe a ganmolodd yr eiddoch chwi yn fwy na'r eiddof fi, *he praised yours more than mine.*

The preceding form is continually met with in the W. Bible. It does not occur in spoken language: instead, we often use the substantive *eiddo*, property (the root of the poss. *eiddof fi*, &c.)

Fy eiddo i: dy eiddo di: ei eiddo ef; (f.) ei heiddo hi: eiddo'r bachgen.

Ein heiddo ni: eich eiddo chwi: eu heiddo hwy: eiddo'r bechgyn.

b.) By naming the object referred to, or by using *un*, pl. *rhai*.¹ [This form is common both in written and spoken language.]

The cup is mine, *fy nghwpan i ydyw'r gwpan* (= *my cup is the cup*).

This harp is yours, *eich telyn chwi ydyw* (*y delyn*) *hon*² (= *your harp is this* (harp)).

This is his, *ei un ef ydyw hwn* (f. *hon*), (= *his one is this*).

Whose sheep do you see? Yours. *Defaid pawy a wclwch? Eich rhai* [*eich defaid*] *chwi*.

Order. The antithetic term, whether subject or predicate, will precede.

"The barrow is **my father's**," *berfa fy nhad ydyw'r ferfa*.

These are ours, *y rhai hyn yw ein rhai ni; or dyma ein rhai ni*.

The emphatic form of the poss. pron. (*Ex.* § 64) should always be used in rendering *mine, thine, &c.* *Fy nhelyn i ydyw hon, this harp is mine.*

c.) By the verb *piau* or *pia*, to own. *Gr.* § 326. The antithetic term precedes, whether subject or object.

This barrow is **mine**, *myfi biau'r ferfa yma* (= *I own this barrow*).

Those barrows are **yours**, *chwychwi biau'r berfeydd hyny*.

It is **mine**, *myfi a'i piau*. This is **his**, *efe a biau hwn* (f. *hon*).

¹ *Un* and *rhai* are more especially used in clauses similar to "this is mine," "he has ours," where the object spoken of is not mentioned in the clause. Thus: This book is mine, *fy llyfr i yw hwn*. This is mine, *fy un i ydyw hwn*.

² When a word, coming after the verb, can stand by itself (e.g. demonstrative pron.), the noun to which it refers need not be repeated. As above, "eich telyn chwi ydyw *hon*."

One of them was **his**, and the other was **his father's**, *efe oedd piau* (or *biau*) *un o honynt, a'i dad oedd piau* (or *biau*) *y llall*.

All these fields will be **theirs**, *hwynt-hwy fydd piau'r holl feusydd hyn*.

That is yours, and **this** is mine, *hwna biau chwi, a hwn biau minnau* (=that own you, and this own I).

These will be mine, and **those** will be yours, *y rhai hyn fydd biau mi, a'r rhai acw fydd biau chwithau*.

The preceding form is of continual occurrence, especially in constructions like the above. When *mine*, *thine*, &c., are in the objective case (e.g. he blames *mine*), they are to be rendered by form "b;" and also, in written language, by form "a."

§ 437. "Of mine," i mi; o'r eiddof.

A friend of yours called upon me the other day, *galwodd cyfaill i chwi* [*o'r eiddoch*] *gyda mi y dydd o'r blaen*.

"This book of mine," *fy llyfr hwn; y llyfr hwn o'r eiddof*.

§ 438. **Whose?** (interr. pronoun.)


a.) *Whose*, with a noun: "*whose hammer is this?*" *Ex.* § 147.

b.) *Whose*, by itself: *eiddo pwy? yr eiddo pwy? ... pwy? pwy biau?*

Whose is this harp? *eiddo pwy yw'r delyn hon? telyn pwy yw hon? pwy biau'r de'yn hon?*

Whose have you seen? *yr eiddo pwy a welsoch? un* (pl. *rhai*) *pwy a welsoch?*

§ 439. **Whose** (relative pronoun).

a.) *Whose*, with a noun: "*whose son is poorly.*" *Ex.* § 147.  *Gr.* §§ 875, 876.

b.) *Whose*, by itself, is rendered by *eiddo* and *piau*.

Whose I am, *eiddo yr hwn ydwyf; yr hwn a'm piau*.

§ 440. **My own**, &c. (e.g. I have *my own*): *yr eiddof fy hun; fy ... fy hun; fy un* (pl. *rhai*) *fy hun*.

Whose hat have you on your head? *het pwy sydd genych am eich pen?*

I have my own, *yr eiddof fy hun sydd genyf; fy het fy hun sydd genyf; fy un fy hun sydd genyf*.

§ 441. VOCABULARY.

Owner, *pèrchen*, *perchenog*: *pl.* (**Pair of**) **scissors**, *siswrn* (*m. sing.*) *perchenogion* (*m.*) *pl. sisÿrnau*.

Harp, *telyn*, *pl.-au* (*f.*) **Pig**, *mochyn*, *pl. moch* (*m.*)

Thimble, *gwniadur*, *pl.-iau* **Egg**, *ŵy*, *pl.-au* (*m.*)

(*N.W. m.*, *S.W. f.*)

Barrow, *bèrfa*, *pl. berfëydd* (*f.*)

World, <i>bŷd</i> , <i>pl.</i> -oedd (<i>m.</i>)	Mine, thine, &c. <i>Ex.</i> § 436.
Share, part, <i>rhàn</i> , <i>pl.</i> -au (<i>f.</i>)	Of mine, of thine, &c. <i>Ex.</i> § 437.
To burn, <i>llosgi</i> .	Whose. <i>Ex.</i> §§ 438, 439.
To agree (with), <i>cytuno</i> (<i>â.</i>)	My own. <i>Ex.</i> § 440.
To own, = possess, <i>pêrchen</i> ; ³ <i>piau</i> . <i>Ex.</i> § 436, c.	Notwithstanding, <i>pr.</i> , <i>er</i> (<i>rd.</i>)
Well-known, <i>hŷsbys</i> .	Necessarily, <i>o angenrhêidrwydd</i> .

All (*noting number*), *pàwb*; *y cwbl*, *yr oll*.⁴

All who (*whom*), *pawb*, *y rhai oll*, *yr holl rai*.

All (*noting quantity*), = the whole, *noun*, *y cyfan*, *y cwbl*, *yr oll* (*m.*)

All (*that*), *rel.*, *yr hyn oll*, *y cwbl*. All this, *hyn oll* or *i gŷd*.

All (*in apposition*), *i gŷd*, *oll*. *Ex.* § 174.

All, *adj.*, *pob* (*with sing. n.*) All (= *every thing*), *pob peth*.

All and whole, *adj.* (*with art.*, *demons.* or *poss. pron.*), *holl*, *before noun*; or *i gyd* or *oll* *after noun*.

All the (*with comp.*), *i gyd* or *oll*, *preceded by superl.*

Whole, *adj.*, *cyfan*, *pl.* *cyfain*.

At all (= *in any degree*), *mewn un môdd*.

Nothing at all, *nid* (*or another neg.*) ... *dim yn y byd*.

On the whole, *ar y cyfan*.

"All the inhabitants of the country," *holl* (*not yr holl*) *drigolion y wlad*. *Gr.* § 404.

"The whole duty of man," *holl* (*not yr holl*) *ddyledswydd dyn*. *Gr.* § 405.

§ 442. EXERCISES.

A.) A ddaeth yr eneth o hyd i'r nodwyddau a gollodd? Do, hi a ddaeth o hyd i'r cwbl.—Y maent oll yn gallu chwareu ar y delyn Gymreig; ond nid ydynt oll yn gallu siarad Cymraeg.—Yr oedd holl drigolion y wlad wedi dyfod yng nghyd.—Goreu oll [*i gyd*], os daw yntau hefyd yma.—Oni ddywed- asoch fod y milwyr wedi llosgi dinasoedd cyfain? Do.—Eiddof fi ydyw'r cwbl a welwch. Aie yn wir?—Chwi a wyddech yn burion [*o'r goreu*] mai eiddom ni oedd y pethau a gymmer- asoch.—Nid yw fy ngeiriadur i mor ddefnyddiol ac mor gywir a'r eiddo ef.—Pwy biau'r berfeydd hyn? Nyni a'u piau hwy (*coll. nhw*).—Ai eich cyfnither biau'r gwniadur a'r siswrn yma? Ië.—Nid eich siswrn chwi sydd genyf,—un Myfanwy sydd genyf.—I ba le y mae'r dynion wedi myned â'r moch?

³ Used only in the infinitive.

⁴ *Pawb* refers to *persons* (= all men, all persons): *y cwbl* and *yr oll* refer to *persons* or *other objects*, and cannot therefore be employed without *o* and a noun or pronoun following, unless the objects to which they refer have been previously mentioned.

Y maent wedi myned â'ch rhai chwi a rhai eich cymmydog i'r ffair.—Berfeydd pwy a gawsoch eu benthyg? Berfeydd [rhai] fy nghymmydog nesaf.—Pa un biau chwi? Hwn biau mi.—Y gwniaduriau a'r sisyrnau hyn biau ni.—Nyni biau'r moch acw.—Os gwrthyd (or gwrthoda) efe gymmeryd ei ran, mwyaf oll fydd eich rhan chwi o'r eiddo.—Telyn pwy sydd ganddo? Ei delyn ei hun.—Ai fy siswrn i sydd genych? Nage: fy un fy hun sydd genyf.—Gwell ganddynt eu rhai eu hunain na'n rhai ni.—Os ydych am werthu'r moch, mi a brynaf y cwbl sydd genych.—Gofynasant i ni a ydoedd yr eiddom ni yn fwy defnyddiol na'r eiddynt hwy.—Efe a roddodd afal cyfan i un, a darn o afal i'r llall.—I bwy y rhoisoch fenthyg y geiriadur Cymraeg a Seisneg? I berthynas o'r eiddof [i mi].—Y mae pob dyn, ysywaeth, yn pechu.—Cymmerwch yr eiddoch eich hunain, ac ewch ymaith.—Nid ydym mewn un modd yn cytuno â chwi.—Mae rhai o'r gwartheg yn y beudai, ond nid y cwbl.—Mae yr oll [y cwbl] o honynt yn dra defnyddiol.

B.) [*In translating mine, thine, &c., use the different forms as given in the Notes and References.*] Whose thimble is this? It is **mine**.—I have **Myvanwy's** scissors: whose have || *you*? || I have **her sister's**.—He has not yet found || *your* razor; but he has found || *mine*.—Which are her scissors? **These** are hers.—All good men do good.—I prefer my own to yours.—Do all the inhabitants of this village speak the same language? No: some speak Welsh, and some English.—They burnt whole cities.—Why did you say that I ate three whole eggs at the same time?—We are going to a near relation of ours to stay for a few weeks.—Is this all they have? Yes.—All men are sinners.—|| *I* have lost all my money,—take care of yours.—Whose property is this? It is **ours**.—He did not know at the time that the horse he rode was **yours**.—**These** were ours.—On the whole, I think you are right.—He is not at all willing to give you all he has.—Whose are those (*near*)? They are **Iorwerth's**. No, **these** are Iorwerth's.—What is the whole duty of man?—Will you please to look over my letter? I have not yet looked over my own.—She prefers her own to yours.—Have you sold your pigs? I have sold some of them, but not all.—All that you see belongs to an uncle of ours.—He promises to read a part, but not the

whole, of this difficult book.—They said that they did not at all agree with us.—Whose hat has he on (*Ex.* § 384) his head? His own, of course.—This is the young lady, whose harp you have just been playing.—It will be **all the better** for you, if they don't come.—The egg is still whole.—The carpenter, whose wife called here early this morning, has taken the whole work upon himself.—All that we said was, that we did not at all agree with them.—This is the whole of religion.—We sell pins, needles, and thimbles; but we don't sell scissors.

C.) Deued pawb [yr holl rai, y rhai oll] sy'n ewyllysio i mewn.—Ond er hyn oll [i gyd], gwell genym faddeu iddynt na'u cospi.—Y maent yn perchen cryn lawer o dir yn y ddau blwyf hyny.—Pwy yw perchenogion y perllanau hyn? Nid nyni yw eu perchenogion.—Y delyn Gymreig biau efe, nid y delyn arall.—Un pwy sydd ganddi? Ei hun ei hun.—Rhai pwy sydd genych chwi? Ein rhai ein hunain.—A ydyw yn well ganddi ein sisyrnau ni na'ch rhai chwi? Ydyw, o lawer.—Yr ydym o'r farn fod ei eirlyfr ef yn well ac yn fwy defnyddiol na'r eiddoch chwi.—Pa un ai fy siswrn i neu siswrn fy nghymmydoges sydd genych? Nid yw siswrn y naill na'r llall o honoch ddim genyf fi,—fy un [fy siswrn] fy hun sydd genyf fi.—A ydyw'r wyau yn gyfain? Ydynt, i gyd.—Ai eiddoch chwi yw y rhai hyn oll? Ië.—A ganmolasant hwy yr eiddom ni? Do.—Onid ydych yn ei ofni Ef, yr hwn y mae eich holl ffyrdd yn ei law [yn llaw yr hwn y mae eich holl ffyrdd]?—Chwi a ddylech ddarllen y llyfr ar holl ddyledswydd dyn.—Ai dyma'r gwr, yr hwn y mae ei enw mor hysbys drwy'r holl wlad? Ië.—Na ddywedwch ddim [peidiwch â dweyd dim] yn y byd am hyny.—Pwy ydyw perchenog [perchen] y ddwy ferfa yma? Myfi ydyw eu perchenog.—Nid wyf, ysywaeth, yn perchen yr un llathen o dir yn unlle.—Nid yw pawb sy'n meddu llawer o aur ac arian ddim o angenrheidrwydd yn ddedwydd.—Yr ydwyf yn meddwl, ar y cyfan, mai doethach yw i chwi gadw oddi wrthynt.—Eiddo pwy yw'r telynau hyn? Eiddom ni ydynt.—Nid yw'r amaethwr, yr hwn y galwodd ei fab gyda chwi ddoe, ddim mewn un modd yn ddyn iach.

D.) These scissors are **my mother's**.—These are **yours**, are they not? Yes.—They liked ours; but they liked yours better.—These barrows are **my father's**; and those (*near*), I think

are **yours**.—You say **that this** is mine : you are wrong,—**that** (*yonder*) is mine.—**These** are his uncle's.—They are **yours**,—take them.—All the houses you see will be **ours** before long.—We ought to fear Him, in whose hands are all our ways.—All who are poor are not necessarily ignorant.—**He** is the owner of the whole parish.—He promised to read the whole of that Welsh book.—You own much more property than I do.—All this is well known everywhere.—I have been staying for a short (*W. = little*) time with a gentleman, whose name is well known to you all.—Notwithstanding their unkind conduct to us, we cannot help pardoning them.—Have you **my thimble** or **my sister's**? I have neither yours nor your sister's.—Take these books and papers to their owners. Whose are they? They are **not yours**.—Your share will be **all the more**.—On the whole, I think he is acting wisely.—He agreed with us in all we said.—All who wish may come in.—Fear (*sing.*) God, and keep His commandments; for **this** is the whole duty of man.—Your share of the property is larger than his.—They have taken care of their own; but they have burnt yours and ours.—Which are ours? **These** are yours.

CHAPTER L.

[Hardly, scarcely, nearly, almost,—*po*,—*erbyn*,—no more, &c.,—such,—*cto* and *drachefn*,—I have a (good or great) mind,—it is high time.]

Notes and References.

§ 443. **Hardly, scarcely; nearly, almost.**

a.) **Hardly, scarcely,** { *prin*, *digon prin*, *bràidd*, with *y* or
yr, before the finite verb.
ni ... prin, *ni ... bràidd*, *ni ... bròn*,
after the finite verb.

It was hardly possible to cross the river, *prin* [*braidd*] *yr oedd yn ddichonadwy croesi'r afon* : *nid oedd prin* [*braidd*] *yn ddichonadwy croesi'r afon*.

We scarcely ever see them, *braidd y byddwn byth yn eu gwled* : *ni byddwn braidd byth yn eu gwled*.

The child is scarcely ten years old, *prin y mae'r plentyn* [*nid yw'r plentyn prin*] *yn ddeng mlwydd oed*.

Scarcely anybody believes him, *braidd y mae neb* [*nid oes neb braidd*] *yn ei gredu*.

Scarcely or **hardly** before *any* and *a* may also be rendered by *nid ... nemmawr*, or *nid ... odid*. [*Nemmawr* often includes *any*.]

There is scarcely a word which he does not understand, *nid oes odid [nemmawr] air nad yw efe yn ei ddeall*.

Scarcely any of them were willing to unlock the door, *nid oedd nemmawr (neb) o honynt [nid oedd odid neb o honynt] yn foddlon i ddadgloi'r drws*.

b.) **Nearly, almost**, { *bràidd na, bròn na, agos na*, before
the fin. verb. [verb.
bràidd, bròn, (yn) agos, after the fin.

It was almost impossible to unlock the door, *bràidd [bron, agos] nad oedd yn annichonadwy [yr oedd bràidd (bron, yn agos) yn annichonadwy] dadgloi'r drws*.

He has nearly as many as I have, *bron nad oes ganddo [y mae ganddo bron] gynnifer ag sydd genyf finnau*.

Some are ready, and others nearly ready, *mae rhai yn barod, ac ereill (yn) agos yn barod*.

We almost expect to hear that he has run away, *bràidd nad ydym [yr ydym bràidd] yn disgwyl dychweld ei fod wedi dianc ymaith*.

(a) *O'r bràidd* and *o'r bron* are often used instead of *bràidd* and *bron*.

I am nearly ready to start, *yr ydwyf o'r bron yn barod i gyckwyn*.

(b) *Nearly* before numerals is best expressed by *(yn) agos*, followed often by *i*.

I walked nearly twenty miles yesterday, *ni a gerddais (yn) agos i ugain milltir ddoc*.

(c) *Not ... nearly* will be expressed by *nid ... (yn) agos*,—never by *nid ... bràidd, nid ... bron*.

He is not nearly so polite as his brother, *nid yw yn agos mor foesgar a'i frawd*.

(d) *(Yn) agos* with perfect indefinite. Ex. § 344.

(e) *Bron a* and *(yn) agos a* with pres. of *Bod* and the infinitive of the other verb will in some cases express the Eng. *perf. definite*: so also will these adverbs with the first future of *Bod* and the infin. of the other verb express the *fut. perfect*.

Yr wyf bron a gorphen fy ngwers, I have nearly finished my lesson.

Byddwn (yn) agos a gorphen cyn y dychwelwch, we shall have nearly finished before you return.

(f) The adverb is sometimes put before, and sometimes after, the qualified term. [This remark applies equally to the equivalents of *hardly* and *scarcely*.]

Y mae bron bawb [y mae pawb bron] o'r un farn yng nghylch hyny, nearly all are of the same opinion about that.

Nid oes braidd neb [nid oes neb braidd] mor anfoesgar, *there are scarcely any so unpolite.*

§ 444. **Po** (*rd.*) *Gr.* § 486.

Po mwyaf a roddaf iddo, mwyaf sydd arno ei eisieu, *the more I give him, the more he wants.*

Po mwyaf y carwn Grist, mwyaf oll y casawn bechod, *the more we love Christ, the more we hate sin.*

“Po mwyaf a roddaf iddo.” “Po mwyaf y carwn Grist.” “Po mwyaf yr wyf yn ei roddi iddo.” Give the rule. [Read *Ex.* §§ 257, 258, 283, a, b, &c.]

In such constructions as “the sooner he goes, the better,” the order in W. is “the better, the sooner he goes.” *Gr.* § 486 (*b.*)

The riper they are, the better, *goreu po addfetaf ydynt.*
The less you hear, the better, *goreu po lleiaf a glyweh.*

§ 445. **Erbyn**, by the time (that). *Erbyn*, as a conjunction, is followed by the same construction as *cyn*, *nes*, and *hyd nes*. *Ex.* §§ 382, 403.

Erbyn y cyrhaeddodd [erbyn iddo gyrhaedd] adref, *by the time he reached home.*

Erbyn y gorphenweh [erbyn i chwi orphen] y wers, *by the time you finish the lesson.*

§ 446. **No more, &c.**

No more, not ... any more, adv. } nid ... mwyach o *rmw* y ;
No longer, not ... any longer, adv. } nid ... yn *hw* y.¹

Don't come here any more, *peidiweh â dyfod yma mwyach.*

They were not willing to remain any longer, *nid oddynt yn foddlon i aros yn hwy.*

Not ... any more than, nid ... uw y na.

He is not a hard-hearted man, any more than you, *nid yw yn ddyn calon-galed, mwy na chwithau.*

No more a ... than, } nid ... yn *fwy* o or yn *ddim mwy* o.
No more of a ... than, }

He is no more a lawyer than I am, { *nid yw efe yn *fwy* [yn *ddim**
He is no more of a lawyer than I am, { *mwy] o gyfreithiwr na*
wyf i'nnau.

§ 447. **Such**, y fath (*md.*), y cyfryw (*md.*), *Gr.* § 554 : o'r fath (= of the kind), after the noun.

¹ When duration of time is expressed, use *yn hwy*.

I do not deserve such presents, *nid wyf yn haeddu y fath anrhegion* [*anrhegion o'r fath.*]

You are welcome to them, such as they are, *y mae i chwi groeso o honynt, y fath ag ydynt.*

(a) *Y* is omitted when *y fath* and *y cyfryw* is preceded by *yn* apposition. *Y mae efe yn fath gybydd fel na rydd yr un ddimai i neb, he is such a miser that he will not give anyone a halfpenny.*

Such, *adv.*, *y fath*, *mor* or *cyn*.

Is he guilty, I wonder, of such unpolite conduct? *a ydyw efe yn euog, tybed, o'r fath ymddygiad anfoesgar* [*o ymddygiad mor anfoesgar*]?²

Such (= *that, those*), *dyna*.

Such were his words, *dyna oedd ei eiriau.*

Such as (= *as for example*), *megys* (*rd.*)

We want several other things, such as beds, chairs, tables, &c. (and so forth), *y mae arnom eisieu anryw bethau ereill, megys gwelyau cadeiriau, byrddau, &c. (ac felly ym mlaen.)*

§ 448. VOCABULARY.

Earth , <i>dàiar</i> or <i>daear</i> (<i>f.</i>)	Again , <i>èto</i> ; <i>drachefn</i> . ²
Flattery , <i>gwèniaith</i> (<i>f.</i>)	Again and again , <i>drachefn a thrachefn.</i>
Miser , <i>cybydd</i> , <i>pl.</i> - <i>ion</i> (<i>m.</i>)	Even , <i>adv.</i> , <i>hŷd yn nôd.</i>
Three days , <i>tridiau</i> (<i>m.</i>) <i>tri diwrnod.</i>	And so forth (&c.), <i>ac felly ym mlaen</i> or <i>yn y blaen.</i>
Mannerly , <i>polite</i> , <i>mðesgar.</i>	However (<i>with adj.</i>), <i>pa mor</i> or <i>cyn ... bŷnag.</i>
Moral , <i>adj.</i> , <i>mðesol.</i>	At least , <i>o leiaf, o'r hyn lleiaf.</i>
Unmannerly , <i>unpolite</i> , <i>anfðesgar.</i>	Mostly , <i>for the most part</i> , <i>gan mwyaf.</i>
Immoral , <i>anfðesol.</i>	Off with you! <i>i fwrdd â chwi!</i>
Impossible , <i>annichonadwy, amhossibl.</i>	By the time (<i>that</i>); <i>èrbyn.</i> See § 445.
Ripe , <i>àddfed.</i>	No more , &c. See § 446.
Here take , <i>here, hwde, pl. hwdiwch. Gr. § 327.</i>	Such . See § 447.
To envy , <i>cenfigènu</i> (<i>wrth</i>).	The (e.g. <i>the more you work</i> , &c.) See § 444.
To flatter , <i>gwenièithio</i> (<i>i</i>).	Hardly , <i>scarcely</i> , } See § 443.
To attack , <i>gmòsod</i> <i>ar.</i>	Almost , <i>nearly</i> , }
To dare , <i>mèiddio</i> (<i>or</i> <i>bèiddio</i>).	
To unlock , <i>dadgloi.</i>	
He who, he whom , &c. <i>Gr. § 866.</i>	
I have a (<i>good</i> or <i>great</i>) <i>mind</i> , <i>y mae arnaf flys</i> [<i>chwant</i>].	
It is high time , <i>y mae hi yn hŷyr</i> or <i>hen bryd, y mae hi yn hŷyr</i> or <i>rhŷyr</i> . ³	

² *Eto*, with present, perf. def., or future: *drachefn*, generally, with imperf., perf. indef., or plup.

³ For *rhyhwyr* = very late.

§ 449. EXERCISES.

A.) Digon prin y meiddiai efe ddweyd mai efe oedd piau ei dy ei hun.—Mae'r byd yn myned ym mlaen bron ym mhob peth.—Nid oes genym prin ddigon i ni ein hunain.—Braidd y meiddiwn fyned o'r ty i'r ffordd heb ei chaniatâd.—Arosweh am funud,—yr ydym agos [bron] a gorphen.—Nid oes odid [nemmawr] neb mor ffol a chredu pob peth a glyw.—Mae'n rhaid i ni gyfaddef fod y dyn, trwy weniethio i ni, bron wedi ein perswadio i gredu mai nyni oedd y bobl oreu yn y byd.—Rhaid i mi gyfaddef nas gallaf garu yr hwn sy'n fy nghasâu heb achos.—I ffwrdd â chwi! yr ydym yn casâu gweniaith yn fwy braidd [braidd yn fwy] na dim ar wyneb y ddaiar.—Y mae'r ysgol feistr yn ofni yn fawr nad oes ganddo agos ddigon iddo ei hun a'i deulu.—Y mae hi yn hwyr [hen] bryd i chwi ddechreu ar eich gwaith,—yr ydych eisoes wedi treulio tridiau heb wneuthur dim.—Goreu po pellaf y cedweh oddi wrth ddynion anfoesol.—“Nid yw,” ebe efe, “y dyn anfoesgar ddim o angenrheidrwydd yn ddyn anfoesol.”—Mae llawer o'r rhai sy'n gwenieithio i chwi yn eich gwyneb yn beio arnoch wrth (*p. 95, foot-note*) ereill.—Nis gwyddoch chwi mwy na ninnau, a fyddwn byw y fory.—Ac ni feiddiasant mwyach ofyn dim iddo ef.—Yr ydym wedi aros yma dridiau,—nid aroswn yn hŵy.—Yr ydym yn lled sicr na feiddiant ddyfod yma mwy.—A phan na allai hi eu guddio ef yn hŵy, hi a'i cymmerodd ac a'i rhoddodd wrth yr afon.—Ymosododd arnaf yn ei dy ei hun, a dywedodd wrthyf nad oeddwn yn fwy o feddyg nag yntau.—Y mae y fath ymddygiadau [ymddygiadau o'r fath] yn gwneyd i ni eu casâu.—“Ymaith,” ebe hwy, “â'r cyfryw oddi ar y ddaear.”—Dyna oedd ei ymddygiad tuag ataf, wedi'r cwbl.—Y mae'r plentyn mor anwybodus fel na all ddweyd hyd yn nod Weddi'r Arglwydd.—Gallaf roi benthg amryw bethau ereill, os bydd arnoch eisieu, megys pladuriau, rhawiau, rhaffau, ac felly yn y blaen.—Hwde dy gyllell, a dos i ffwrdd.—Hwdiwch y goron yma, a pheidiwch â dyfod yn agos ataf mwyach.—Anhawdd, yn wir, ydyw hoffi y rhai sy'n wastad yn ein beio.

B.) They attacked me in my own house.—Off with you! we hate those who flatter us.—It will hardly be possible to finish this work before next February.—It is high time for

you to begin to work, unless you think that you can live without working.—Go (*sing.*), and sin no more.—This harp does not belong to you, any more than to me.—You ought not to be unkind to those who are kind to *||you*.—Such is my opinion: what is yours?—They are such unmannerly boys that we seldom (*Ex.* § 204) ask them to come here.—You are welcome to have the loan of my scythe, such as it is.—They said that they did not deserve such presents.—They were almost ready to kill me.—The two men had scarcely reached the house before the fire began.—He has nearly finished the work which he undertook about four years ago.—We almost expect to hear that the boys have run away from school.—The soldiers were going to attack the most beautiful city in the world. What a shame!—It is almost impossible to please you.—You are nearly as tall as your eldest sister.—We do not believe that scarcely any of them have acted so unpolitely (*Ex.* § 187).—He will scarcely dare come near us again.—We are not always right, any more than you.—My grandfather is so weak that he cannot walk without a stick even from this chair to that.—Are you so silly as to think that they who flatter you when you are present, always speak well of you when you are absent?—Neither can they die any more.—And none of them durst ask him, who art thou? knowing (*Ex.* § 395) that it was the Lord.—If they are such immoral men, the sooner the better you come away from them.—He sells other things, such as cheese, bread, honey, butter, &c.—Here take this sovereign, and be satisfied.—“I am not fond of flattery,” said she, “any more than you.”—Even his own children refuse to obey him.—He is nearly fifteen years old.

C.) Goreu po lleiaf yr ewch i'w cymdeithas.—Y mae'r plwyfolion, gan mwyaf, nid yn unig yn gyfoethog, ond hefyd yn haelionus, ac yn barod i gynnorthwyo pob achos da.—Er-fyniasom arnynt drachefn a thrachefn beidio â chroesi'r afon ddofn hono.—Y mae ar Iorwerth ac Arthur flys myned i'r un lle unwaith eto.—Galwodd y dyn tlawd wrth fy nrws drachefn ym mhen tridiau.—Dos i dy wely, fachgen bach,—y mae hi yn rhŵyr (yn hŵyr) i ti fyned.—Y mae hi yn hen bryd i ni oll adael y lle hwn,—o leiaf [o'r hyn lleiaf] y mae hi yn hen

bryd i mi.—Nid ydym yn ddim mwy o gybyddion na hwythau.—Po mwyaf yr oeddym yn gwahaniaethu oddi wrthynt mewn barn, mwyaf oll [i gyd] oedd eu parch i ni. Y fath ryfeddod, onide?—Y mae'r ferlen hon mor dlws fel y mae arnaf chwant ei phrynu i'm gwraig.—Po amlaf y byddwn yng nghymdeithas y boneddigesau hyn, mwyaf oll y byddwn yn eu hoffi.—Er bod gan yr hen wr lawer o aur ac arian, nid yw yn gybydd, mwy na chwi a minnau.—Nis gallaf yn fy myw ddadgloi drws yr ysgol.—Yr ydwyf braidd yn cenfigenu wrthych,—yr ydych yn ymddangos mor gysurus.—Nid rhaid i chwi ddim cenfigenu wrthym; canys yr ydym ni, fel y rhan fwyaf, yn fynych yn anghysurus.—Erbyn i mi fyned yno drachefn, yr oedd y dyn, druan, wedi marw.—Yr ydym wedi bod yn disgwyl am yn agos i bum mlynedd.—Y mae'r dyn yn cymmeryd arno ei fod yn feddyg; ond nid yw yn ddim mwy o feddyg nag ydwyf finnau.—Y mae o'r braidd yn annichonadwy [amhossibl] peidio â chenfigenu wrth y merched ieuaine hyny,—y maent yn cael gan eu modryb bron bob peth a ewyllysiant ei gael.—Nid oes dim o'r afalau hyn agos yn addfed.—Pa cyn dloted bynag ydyw hi, mi a ofynaf iddi dalu yr hyn sydd arni i mi.—O'r hyn lleiaf, y maent mor foesol a'r lleill.—Efallai eu bod yn fwy moesol na chwi.—Ymosodasant arnom heb un achos yn y byd, a dywedasant nad oeddym yn ddynion moesgar, a'n bod yn hoff o feio ar ein cymmydogion, ac felly yn y blaen.—Byddwn oll bron yn barod erbyn y deuwch yn ol.—Nid yw prin yn bedair ar ddeg oed.—Mi a dreuliais y ddwy flynedd ddiweddaf gan mwyaf yn Lloegr.

D.) The young men are, for the most part, not only moral, but very polite.—I asked him again and again not to flatter me, telling him that I hated flattery.—The apples are scarcely ripe; but you may take them, such as they are.—Off with you! I have nothing to do with misers.—Both are such misers that we cannot get anything from them.—I have a good mind to bathe to-day.—However poor you are, you ought to pay your debts,—at least, you ought to try.—By the time you are ready, we shall have gone.—He that is kind to others is pretty sure to find friends.—By the time we came home, they had locked the doors and gone to bed.—They could no longer defend themselves.—She is not nearly so handsome as

her sister.—The more we read, the more we learn.—They are all very polite young gentlemen,—at least their parents think that they are.—The more money you borrow, the more you will have to pay back.—Here take it (*m.*),—I dont want it.—He does not believe that there are scarcely any of them so unpolite as to say such things.—We need hardly say anything.—He is no more the son of a Bishop than I am.—We never went near the old miser again.—They said that they almost envied her,—she seemed so comfortable and happy.—He has nearly finished his work,—at least, he has nearly finished the most difficult part of it.—Really (*or* indeed), we hardly know what to say to you.—She has been absent for nearly fifteen months.—Wait for two minutes,—we have nearly finished writing our letters.—It will be impossible to do all that work in three days.—Those who were absent were **mostly children**.—The less, the better, you go amongst those idle and unmannerly boys.—The riper the pears are, the sweeter they are.—We spent the last six months mostly in Wales.—He is a very poor farmer,—he is no more of a farmer than you are.—A Welsh friend told me the other day that you thought that Wales is the most beautiful country on the face of the earth.—They refused to unlock the door, although we begged of them again and again to unlock it.—If you have sold the harp, it is no longer **yours**.—We durst not go near the place again.—He had a good mind to tell the old gentleman that you had called him a miser; but he did not.—It is high time for us to start, else we shall not reach our journey's end before nine o'clock.

I. INDEX TO WORDS.

The figures refer to the sections in the Exercises.

[*n.* = noun ; *pron.* = pronoun ; *a.* = adjective ; *v.* = verb ; *ad.* = adverb ;
pr. = preposition ; *con.* = conjunction.]

- About, 364.
Above, *pr.* 368.
Absent, 322.
Account (of), 131.
Acquainted, 434.
Act, *n.* 299.
Act, *v.* 373.
Advantage, 379.
Advise, *v.* 429.
Afraid, 212, 221, 266.
After, 67, 255, 346, 387.
After all, 347.
Afternoon, 317.
After that, 364.
Afterwards, 364.
Again, 167, 448.
Against, 174, 245.
Age, 167.
Ago, 317.
Agree, *v.* 441.
Alas, 379.
Alive, 408.
All, 174, 193, 441.
All (that), *rel.* 193.
All the (my, this), 193.
All this, 193.
All who, 441.
Allow, *v.* 429.
Almost, 347, 443.
Alone, 357.
Along, *pr.* 59.
Already, 373.
Also, 120.
Although, 306.
Always, 131.
Amongst, 364.
And, 34.
And the, 34.
Angry, 131.
Another, 100.
Another, *n.* 434.
Any, 125.
Anybody, 125.
Any less, 284.
Any more, 284.
Any one, 125.
Anything, 125.
Anywhere, 336.
Appear, *v.* 299.
Apple, 120.
Appoint, *v.* 227.
Arm, 67.
Arrive, *v.* 387.
Arrow, 50.
As, 188, 282.
As, *con.* 306.
As ... as, 188.
As little or few, 284.
As many, 284.
As much, 284.
As soon as, 387.
Assistance, 396.
Ask, *v.* 262.
At, 59, 131.
At all, 441.
At home, 206.
At leisure, 396.
Attack, *v.* 448.
Aunt, 120.
Authority, 396.
Away, 206.
Axe, 400.
Back, *ad.* 91.
Back, *n.* 368.
Bad, 59, 284.
Badly, 91.
Bala, 356.
Barrow, 441.
Basket, 396.
Bathe, *v.* 434.
Be, *v.* 69.
Be able, 245.
Be drowned, 278.
Be in the habit of, 317.
Be mistaken, 373.
Be obliged, 252, 347.
Be offended, 306.
Be related, 322.
Be tired, 396.
Be worth, 245.
Beat, *v.* 347.
Beautiful, 143.
Because, 306.
Become, *v.* 387.
Become of, 356.
Bed, 120.
Bedroom, 120.
Before, 364, 387.
Before ... 's time, 400.
Before then, 364.
Beg, *v.* 245.
Begin, *v.* 255.
Behave, *v.* 373.
Behaviour, 373.
Behind, 368.
Believe, *v.* 306.
Bell, 67.
Belong, *v.* 322.
Below, 368.
Beneath, 368.
Besides, 368.
Best, 161, 188.
Between, 40.
Beyond, 368.
Bid, *v.* 429.
Big, 40, 196.
Bird, 131.
Bishop, 336.
Black, 40.
Blame, *v.* 296. 256
Blind, 245.
Blue, 59.
Body, 408.
Book, 91.
Boot, 262.

- Borrow, *v.* 400.
 Both, 174.
 Bottle, 120.
 Boy, 40.
 Brass, 290.
 Bread, 131.
 Breadth, 215.
 Break, *v.* 270.
 Breath, 107.
 Bridge, 247.
 Bring, *v.* 396.
 Broad, 59, 215.
 Brother, 50.
 Brother-in-law, 161.
 Build, *v.* 100.
 Bull, 50.
 Burn, *v.* 441.
 But, 80, 120.
 But also, 306.
 But few, 281, 284.
 But little, 281, 284.
 Butcher, 284.
 Butter, 131.
 Buy, *v.* 174.
 By, 131, 215, 317, 368, 387.
 By far, 188.
 By myself, &c., 356.
 Call, *v.* 429.
 Cau, *v.* 240.
 Candle, 120.
 Care, *n.* 290.
 Care, *v.* 260.
 Careful, 143.
 Carmarthen, 278.
 Carpenter, 152.
 Castle, 284.
 Cat, 59.
 Catch, *v.* 460.
 Cattle, 131.
 Cause, *n.* 278.
 Certain, 299.
 Chair, 120.
 Chapter, 245.
 Cheap, 196.
 Cheat, *v.* 356.
 Cheese, 131.
 Chief, *a.* 50.
 Child, 59.
 Choose, *v.* 245.
 Christ, 429.
 Church, 40.
 City, 396.
 Clean, *a.* 192.
 Clean, *v.* 434.
 Clear, *a.* 188.
 Clergyman, 200.
 Climb, *v.* 152.
 Clock, 245.
 Cloth (woollen), 59.
 Clothes, 67.
 Coffee, 215.
 Cold, 40.
 Collect, *v.* 400.
 Colour, *n.* 161.
 Comb, *n.* 270.
 Comb, *v.* 270.
 Come, *v.* 91.
 Come back, 91.
 Comfort, *n.* 131.
 Comfortable, 188.
 Command, *n.* 255.
 Command, *v.* 227.
 Commandment, 255.
 Conduct, *n.* 373.
 Conduct one's self, 373.
 Confess, *v.* 379.
 Consequence, 174.
 Consider, *v.* 227.
 Considerable, 284.
 Content, 322.
 Continue, *v.* 347.
 Convert, *v.* 356.
 Copper, 290.
 Corn, 167.
 Country, 59.
 Cousin, 143.
 Cow, 50.
 Cowhouse, 107.
 Crooked, 50.
 Cross, *v.* 299.
 Crown, 152, 429.
 Cry, *v.* 396.
 Cup, 270.
 Cupboard, 299.
 Cut, *v.* 270.
 Danger, 278.
 Dangerous, 143.
 Dare, *v.* 448.
 Dark, 100.
 Daughter, 34.
 Daughter-in-law, 161.
 Day, 100.
 Dead, 408.
 Deaf, 245.
 Dear, 50, 196.
 Debt, 227.
 Deceive, *v.* 356.
 Deed, 299.
 Deep, 215.
 Defend, *v.* 414.
 DEMONS. PRON., 55, 190, 191.
 Depend, *v.* 278.
 Depth, 215.
 Deserve, *v.* 245.
 Desire, *v.* 396.
 Desirous, 227.
 Dictionary, 396.
 Die, *v.* 408.
 Differ, *v.* 420.
 Difference, 414.
 Different, 227.
 Dine, *v.* 262.
 Dinner, 262.
 Directly, 396.
 Dirty, *a.* 152.
 Dirty, *v.* 91.
 Disagreeable, 299.
 Dishonest, 206.
 Disobedient, 107.
 Disobey, *v.* 255.
 Dissenter, 379.
 Distant, 188.
 Distantly, 434.
 Distinguish, *v.* 420.
 Divide, *v.* 356.
 Do, *v.* 107, 434.
 Doctor, 206.
 Dog, 34.
 Don't, 429.
 Door, 131.
 Doubt, *v.* 91.
 Doubtful, 299.
 Down, 347.
 Dress, *n.* 387.
 Dress, *v.* 387.
 Drink, *n.* 270.
 Drink, *v.* 262.
 Drown, *v.* 278.
 Duty, 107.
 Dwell, *v.* 408.
 Each, 174.
 Each other, 437.
 Early, 317.
 Earn, *v.* 174.
 Earth, 448.
 Easy, 227.
 Eat, *v.* 262.
 Egg, *n.* 441.
 Eight, 215.
 Eighth, 255.

- Either, *pron.* 434.
 Either ... or, *con.* 88.
 Eleven, 327.
 Eleventh, 327.
 Else, 414.
 Else (=other), 270.
 Employment, 107.
 Empty, 167.
 End, *n.* 368.
 Endeavour, *v.* 227.
 England, 420.
 English, 420.
 Enjoy, *v.* 306.
 Enough, *ad.* 299.
 Enough, *n.* 120.
 Enemy, 309.
 Enter, *v.* 387.
 Envy, *v.* 448.
 Escape, *v.* 278.
 Even, *ad.* 448.
 Evening, 317.
 Ever, 206, 364.
 Ever since, *con.* 336.
 Every, 174.
 Every one, 174.
 Every (or each) time, 290.
 Everywhere, 414.
 Evil, *n.* 420.
 Exactly, 420.
 Example, 414.
 Excellent, 161.
 Excuse, *n.* 188.
 Excuse, *v.* 420.
 Expect, *v.* 278.
 Explain, *v.* 420.
 Expound, *v.* 420.
 Eye, 373.
 Face, *n.* 152.
 Fail, *v.* 379.
 Fair, *n.* 336.
 Fall, *v.* 278.
 False, 50.
 Family, 387.
 Far, 188.
 Farmer, 120.
 Farthing, 120.
 Fat, 196.
 Father, 34.
 Father-in-law, 161.
 Fear, *n.* 215.
 Fear, *v.* 299.
 February, 327.
 Fellow, 167.
 Fence, *n.* 379.
 Few, 281, 284.
 Few less, 284.
 Few more, 284.
 Few too many, 284.
 Fewer, 24.
 Field, 59.
 Fifth, 255.
 Fifteen, 327.
 Fifteenth, 327.
 Fight, *v.* 356.
 Find, *v.* 400.
 Find fault with, 206.
 Fine, *a.* 100.
 Finger, 40.
 Finish, *v.* 336.
 Fire, 107.
 First, 255.
 First cousin, 143.
 Fish, 120.
 Five, 215.
 Five times, 290.
 Flatter, *v.* 448.
 Flattery, 448.
 Flesh, 284.
 Flower, 67.
 Follow, *v.* 414.
 Fond of, 80.
 Food, 270.
 Foolish, 80.
 Foot, 67, 215.
 For, *con.* 245, 306.
 For, *pr.* 152, 206, 227, 299, 336, 379.
 For ever, 364.
 Forget, *v.* 356.
 Forgetful, 356.
 Forgive, *v.* 306.
 Forgiveness, 429.
 Formerly, 317.
 Fortnight, 327.
 Four, 50.
 Four times, 190.
 Fourteen, 327.
 Fourteenth, 327.
 Fourth, 255.
 Friday, 327.
 Friend, 50.
 From, 40, 275.
 From here, 167.
 From home, 206.
 From the, 40.
 Full, 167.
 Garden, 67.
 Gardener, 152.
 Gather, *v.* 400.
 Gentleman, 143.
 Get, *v.* 245, 387.
 Get better, 299.
 Get drowned, 278.
 Get tired, 396.
 Get up, 317.
 Gift, 396.
 Girl, 40.
 Give, *v.* 174.
 Glove, 152.
 Go, *v.* 91.
 Go back, 91.
 Go by or past, 368.
 God, 50.
 Gold, 34.
 Good, *a.* 40, 188.
 Good, *n.* 420.
 Good deal, 284.
 Good many, 284.
 Goodness, 420.
 Goose, 196.
 Grand-daughter, 161.
 Grandfather, 107.
 Grandmother, 107.
 Grandson, 161.
 Grateful, 299.
 Grave, *n.* 368.
 Graze, *v.* 100.
 Great, 40, 196.
 Great deal, *ad.* 196.
 Greatly, 215, 284.
 Green, 59.
 Grey, 59.
 Guilty, 290.
 Hair, 152.
 Half, 59.
 Halfpenny, 120.
 Halfpennyworth, 270.
 Hamlet, 347.
 Hammer, 152.
 Hand, 34.
 Handsome, 143.
 Happen, *v.* 347.
 Happy, 107.
 Hard, 40.
 Hard, *ad.* 91.
 Hardhearted, 387.
 Hardly, 443.
 Harp, 441.
 Hat, 100.
 Hatchet, 409.
 Hate, *v.* 299.

- Hateful, 91.
 Have, *v.* 113, 245.
 Hay, 278.
 He who, &c., 448.
 Head, 34.
 Health, 306.
 Healthy, 80.
 Hear, *v.* 91.
 Heart, 67.
 Heavy, 67.
 Hedge, 379.
 Height, 215.
 Help, *n.* 396.
 Help, *v.* 227, 305.
 Hence, 167.
 Here, 80.
 Here are, 143.
 Here is, here's, 143.
 Hers, 148, 436.
 Hide, *v.* 152.
 Hide one's self, 278.
 High, 40, 196.
 High road, 356.
 Hill, 40.
 Hinder, *v.* 379.
 His, 148, 436.
 History, 245.
 Home, *n.* 255.
 Home (= *to home*), 206.
 Honest, 206.
 Honey, 131.
 Hope, *v.* 373.
 Horse, 34.
 Hot, 40.
 Hour, 67.
 House, 40.
 How? 80.
 How —? 188.
 How, 188.
 How long, 346.
 How many, 63.
 How much, 163.
 However, 306, 448.
 Hundred, 215.
 Hundredth, 255.
 Hunger, 270.
 Hungry, 264, 270.
 Husband, 40.
 Hymn, 245.
 Hymn-book, 356.
 Hypocrite, 379.
 Idle, 91, 396.
 If, 80.
 If ... not, 80.
 Ignorant, 306.
 Ill, 143.
 Immediately, 396.
 Immoral, 448.
 Impossible, 448.
 Improper, 373.
 Improve, *v.* 299.
 In, 59, 227.
 In, *ad.* 107.
 In, in ... 's time, 400.
 In less than, 400.
 In that place, 100.
 In this place, 100.
 Inasmuch as, 306.
 Inch, 215.
 Indeed, 161.
 Industrious, 40.
 Inform, *v.* 429.
 Inhabitant, 414.
 Ink, 120.
 Instant, *a.* 327.
 Intend, *v.* 91.
 Interfere, *v.* 255.
 INTERR. PRON., 143, 163,
 438, 439.
 Into, 40, 274.
 Into the, 40.
 Iron, 34.
 Is it? 160.
 Is it ... that? 106.
 Is it not? 160.
 Is it not ... that? 106.
 It, 100, 219, 296.
 January, 329.
 Jesus, 429.
 Journey, *n.* 396.
 Joy, 50.
 Just, *ad.* 336.
 Keep, *v.* 255.
 Key, 322.
 Kill, *v.* 347.
 Kind, *a.* 40.
 King, 34.
 Kitchen, 143.
 Knife, 120.
 Knock, *v.* 387.
 Know, *v.* 188, 241.
 Knowing, *a.* 379.
 Lady, 143.
 Lamb, 34.
 Land, 284.
 Language, 245.
 Large, 40, 196.
 Last, *a.* 327.
 Last, *v.* 347.
 Last night, 317.
 Late, 317.
 Lately, 336.
 Laugh, *v.* 174.
 Lawyer, 270.
 Lay hold of, 368.
 Lazy, 91.
 Lead, *v.* 373.
 Learn, *v.* 91.
 Learned, 188.
 Least, *ad.* 188.
 Leave, *n.* 429.
 Leave, *v.* 262, 356.
 Left, 167.
 Leg, 67.
 Lend, *v.* 400.
 Length, 215.
 Less, 284.
 Less, *ad.* 188.
 Lesson, 206.
 Let, *v.* 429.
 Letter, 91.
 Liberal, *a.* 152.
 Life, 434.
 Light, *a.* 100.
 Like, *a.* and *ad.* 373.
 Like, *v.* 215.
 Likely, 299.
 Linen (cloth), 174.
 Lion, 50.
 Listen, *v.* 322.
 Little, *a.* 40, 196.
 Little, *a. pron.* 281,
 284.
 Little, *ad.* 284.
 Little less, 284.
 Little more, 284.
 Little too much, 284.
 Live, *v.* 152.
 Living, 408.
 Loaf, 270.
 Loan, 400.
 Lock, *v.* 408.
 London, 245.
 Lonely, 50.
 Long, 67, 196.
 Long, *ad.* 91.
 Long, *v.* 264.
 Long ago, 336.
 Longing, 270.
 Look, *v.* 152.
 Look for, *v.* 336.

- Lord, 429.
 Lose, *v.* 188.
 Loud, 190.
 Love, *v.* 143.

 Mad, 373.
 Maidservant, 107.
 Make, *v.* 107.
 Make a mistake, 373.
 Make haste, 255.
 Man, 40.
 Mannerly, 448.
 Manservant, 107.
 Many, 120, 284.
 Many more, 284.
 March, 327.
 Mare, 40.
 Market, 206.
 Master, 100, 227.
 May, *v.* 240.
 Mean, *v.* 373.
 Meaning, 373.
 Measure, 174.
 Meat (flesh), 284.
 Meddle, *v.* 434.
 Medical man, 206.
 Meet, *v.* 336.
 Mend, *v.* 255.
 Merciful, 50.
 Mercy, 429.
 Merely, 420.
 Merry, 80.
 Middling, 80.
 Mile, 167.
 Milk, 215.
 Mill, 364.
 Miller, 364.
 Mine, 148, 436.
 Minute, 400.
 Miser, 448.
 Mistake, *n.* 373.
 Mistake, *v.* 373.
 Mistake ... for, 373.
 Mistress, 100.
 Misunderstand, *v.* 373.
 Monday, 327.
 Mon. afternoon, 327.
 Mon. evening, 327.
 Mon. morning, 327.
 Mon. night, 327.
 Money, 34.
 Month, 206.
 Moral, *a.* 448.
 More, 284.
 More, *ad.* 188.

 Morning, 317.
 Morrow, 327.
 Most, 284.
 Most, *ad.* 183, 188.
 Mostly, 448.
 Mother, 34.
 Mother-in-law, 161.
 Mountain, 67.
 Much, 120, 284.
 Much, *ad.* 188, 196, 215, 284.
 Much less *or* fewer, 284.
 Much more, 284.
 Must, 252, 372.

 Nail, 100.
 Name, *n.* 167.
 Narrow, 59.
 Naughty, 59.
 Near, 278, 368.
 Nearly, 347, 443.
 Necessarily, 441.
 Necessary, 257.
 Need not, 251.
 Needle, 167.
 Neglect, *v.* 420.
 Neighbour, 152.
 Neither, *pron.* 434.
 Neither ... nor, *con.* 88, 201.
 Nephew, 152.
 Nest, 131.
 Never, 206, 364.
 New, 50.
 News, 167.
 Newspaper, 120.
 Next, 327.
 Niece, 152.
 Night, 100.
 Nine, 215.
 Ninth, 255.
 No, *a.* 125.
 No (*in ans.*), 76, 105, 106, 117, 252, 312, 331.
 No less, 284.
 No more, 284.
 No one, 125.
 Nobody, 125.
 Noise, 245.
 None, 125.
 Not, 50, 80, 245, 429.
 Not? 80, 245.
 Not any, 125.
 Not ... anybody, 125.

 Not ... anything, 125.
 Not ... anywhere, 336.
 Not ... any less, 284.
 Not ... any more, 284.
 Not ... ever, 364.
 Not ... neither, 201.
 Not only, 306.
 Not to, 227.
 Nothing, 125.
 Notice, *n.* 368.
 Notwithstanding, *pr.* 441.
 Now, 8.
 Nowhere, 336.
 Number, 284.
 Nut, 270.

 O, 161.
 Oath, 322.
 Oats, 284.
 Obedient, 107.
 Obey, *v.* 255.
 Objection, 131.
 Obtain, *v.* 245.
 O'clock, 67.
 Of, 50, 245.
 Of me, &c., 123.
 Off, 387.
 Offend, *v.* 306.
 Offer, *v.* 306.
 Often, 188.
 Old, 50, 188.
 On, 40, 387.
 On, *ad.* 400.
 Once, 206.
 One, 50.
 One, *indef. n.* 434.
 One another, 434.
 One, *pl. ones*, 164.
 Only, *a.* 50.
 Only, *ad.* 120, 262.
 Open, *v.* 270.
 Opinion, 373.
 Opposite, 364.
 Or, 34.
 Or else, 414.
 Or not, 289.
 Orchard, 278.
 Order, *v.* 429.
 Oswestry, 368.
 Other, *a.* 100.
 Others, *n.* 434.
 Otherwise, 414.
 Ought, 387.
 Ours, 148, 436.

- Out, 80.
 Out of, 40, 275.
 Out of the, 40.
 Outside, 368.
 Over, *ad.* 408.
 Over, *pr.* 59.
 Overtake, *v.* 400.
 Owe, *v.* 211.
 Own, *v.* 441.
 Owner, 441.

 Page, 255.
 Pair, 262.
 Paper, 120.
 Pardon, *n.* 429.
 Pardon, *v.* 306.
 Parents, 107.
 Parish, 67.
 Parishioner, 414.
 Parlour, 356.
 Part, *n.* 255.
 Pass (*by*), 368.
 Past, 67.
 Path, 59.
 Pay, *v.* 227.
 Pear, 120.
 Penny, 120.
 Pennyworth, 270.
 People, 80.
 Perhaps, 414.
 Permission, 429.
 Permit, *v.* 429.
 PERS. PRON., 14-23.
 Persuade, *v.* 379.
 Picture, 429.
 Piece, 356.
 Pig, 441.
 Pin, 167.
 Pint, 215.
 Pity, *n.* 299.
 Place, *n.* 59.
 Plain, *a.* 188.
 Play, *v.* 91.
 Pleasant, 100.
 Please, *v.* 299.
 Pleasure, 400.
 Plenty, 120.
 Plum, 120.
 Pocket, 131.
 Polite, 448.
 Pony, 59.
 Poor, 143, 298.
 Poorly, 141.
 POSS. PRON., 61-67.
 Possess, *v.* 245, 441.

 Possible, 299.
 Possibly, 379.
 Possibly (= *perhaps*),
 414.
 Pound (*in money*),
 167, 327.
 Pound (*in weight*), 59.
 Praise, *v.* 206.
 Pray, *v.* 429.
 Prayer, 429.
 Prayer-book, 356.
 Preach, *v.* 336.
 Precious, 67.
 Prefer, *v.* 206.
 Prepare, *v.* *parotoi*.
 Present, *a.* 322.
 Present, *n.* 396.
 Pretend, *v.* 379.
 Pretty, *a.* 143.
 Pretty, *ad.* 80, 378.
 Prevent, *v.* 379.
 Principal, *a.* 50.
 Prison, 278.
 Probable, 299.
 Probably, 368.
 Promise, *v.* 227.
 Proper, 373.
 Property, 322.
 Prophecy, 50.
 Prophet, 50.
 Proud, 306.
 Psalm, 255.
 Pull, *v.* 357.
 Pull (*or put*) off, 387.
 Punish, *v.* 262.
 Punishment, 262.
 Put, *v.* 356.
 Put on, 387.

 Quarter, 59.
 Queen, 34.
 Question, *n.* 356.
 Quiet, *a.* 429.
 Quietness, 429.
 Quite, 299.

 Rain, *n.* 67.
 Rain, *v.* 100.
 Rather, 378, 379.
 Rather than, 379.
 Rather too, 379.
 Razor, 152.
 Reach, *v.* 387.
 Read, *v.* 91.
 Reader, 161.
 Ready, 131.

 Reason, 278.
 Receive, *v.* 278.
 Red, 67.
 REFL. PERS. PRON.
 (*self*), 349.
 REFL. POSS. PRON.
 (*own*), 433, 440.
 Refuse, *v.* 347.
 Regard, *n.* 306.
 REL. PRON., 134, 192,
 438, 439.
 Relation, relative, 322
 Religion, 50.
 Remain, *v.* 206.
 Remark, *n.* 368.
 Remember, *v.* 278.
 Repair, *v.* 255.
 Respect, *n.* 306.
 Rest, *v.* 408.
 Return, *v.* 91.
 Reward, *n.* 245.
 Rich, 143.
 Rick, 368.
 Ride, *v.* 131.
 Rider, 161.
 Right, *a.* 143, 167, 364.
 Right, *n.* 131.
 Ring, *v.* 356.
 Ripe, 448.
 Rise, *v.* 317.
 River, 100.
 Road, 59.
 Rock, 143.
 Room, 120.
 Rope, 368.
 Rose, 67.
 Run, *v.* 100.
 Run away, 278.

 Sack, 167.
 Sad, 80.
 Said ..., 245.
 Same, 417.
 Same one, 420.
 Satisfied, 322.
 Saturday, 327.
 Save, *v.* 278.
 Saw, *n.* 400.
 Say, *v.* 227.
 ... say, 245.
 Scarcely, 443.
 Scholar, 100.
 School, 100.
 Schoolmaster, 100.
 Scissors, 441.

- Seythe, 152.
 Search, *v.* 400.
 Second, 255.
 Second cousin, 322.
 See, *v.* 91.
 Seeing that, 306.
 Seem, *v.* 299.
 Seldom, 206.
 Send, *v.* 270.
 Sensible, 40.
 Sermon, 336.
 Servant, 107.
 Set out, 91.
 Seven, 215.
 Seventh, 255.
 Several, 174.
 Shame, *n.* 336.
 Share, *n.* 441.
 Sharp, 120.
 Sheep, 34.
 Shelf, 278.
 Shepherd, 270.
 Shilling, 120.
 Shoe, *n.* 131.
 Shoe, *v.* 270.
 Shoemaker, 131.
 Shop, 131.
 Shopkeeper, 131.
 Short, 67.
 Should, 387.
 Shrewsbury, 356.
 Shut, *v.* 270.
 Sick, 143.
 Side, 368.
 Signification, 373.
 Signify, *v.* 373.
 Silent, 255.
 Silk, 174.
 Silly, 80.
 Silver, 34.
 Simply, 420.
 Sin, *n.* 227.
 Sin, *v.* 227.
 Since, *con.* 306, 336.
 Since, *pr.* 336.
 Sincere, 414.
 Sing, 317.
 Singing, *n.* 373.
 Single, 152.
 Sinner, 429.
 Sister, 50.
 Sister-in-law, 161.
 Sit, *v.* 143.
 Six, 120, 215.
 Sixpence, 120.
 Sixteen, 327.
 Sixteenth, 327.
 Sixth, 255.
 Size, 215.
 Sleep, *v.* 270.
 Small, 40, 146.
 Smith, 167.
 Snow, *n.* 67.
 Snow, *v.* 100.
 So, 143, 188, 245.
 So ... as, 188.
 So ... that, 188.
 So little *or* few, 284.
 So long, *ad.* 379.
 So many, 284.
 So much, 284.
 So very, 143.
 Society, 306.
 Soil, *v.* 91.
 Soldier, 59.
 Some, 124.
 Some one, 124.
 Somebody, 124.
 Something, 124.
 Sometimes, 206.
 Somewhat, *ad.* 379.
 Somewhere, 336.
 Son, 34.
 Son-in-law, 161.
 Song, 356.
 Soon, *ad.* 91.
 Sorry, 299.
 Soul, *n.* 408.
 Sovereign, 167.
 Spade, 34.
 Speak, *v.* 188.
 Speech, 420.
 Spend, *v.* 262, 396.
 Spoon, 270.
 Stable, 107.
 Stack, 368.
 Staff, 317.
 Stand, *v.* 143.
 Stanza, 155.
 Start, *v.* 91.
 Stay, *v.* 206.
 Steal, *v.* 278.
 Steeple, 152.
 Stick (walking), 317.
 Still, *ad.* 167, 306, 322.
 Stocking, 387.
 Stone, 40.
 Stop, *v.* 379.
 Story, 245.
 Strange, 131.
 Stranger, 131.
 Street, 373.
 Strike, *v.* 336.
 Strong, 80.
 Succeed, *v.* 414.
 Such, 364, 447.
 Such, *ad.* 143, 364.
 Such very, 143.
 Sufficiently, 299.
 Sugar, 215.
 Sunday, 327.
 Sun. afternoon, 327.
 Sun. evening, 327.
 Sun. morning, 327.
 Sun. night, 327.
 Sure, 299.
 Sweet, 373.
 Sword, 120.
 Table, 120.
 Tailor, 120.
 Take, *v.* 196, 396.
 Take ... upon, 379.
 Take care, 290.
 Take hold of, 368.
 Take off, 387.
 Talk, *v.* 188.
 Tall, 161.
 Tea, 215.
 Teach, *v.* 91.
 Teacher, 227.
 Tell, *v.* 227, 429.
 Ten, 215.
 Ten shillings, 262.
 Tenth, 255.
 Testimony, 50.
 Than, 188, 282.
 Than I, &c., 188.
 Than my, &c., 188.
 Thank, *v.* 373.
 Thankful, 299.
 Thanks, 400.
 That, *con.* 188, 299.
 That ... not, 299.
 That is, 143.
 The, 34.
 The —, (*the more, &c.*)
 444.
 The one (*pl.* ones), 188.
 The other, the others,
 290, 434.
 Theirs, 148, 436.
 Then, 317, 364.
 There, 100.
 There are, 143.

- There is, there's, 143.
 Therefore, 322.
 These are, 143.
 Thimble, 441.
 Thine, 148, 436.
 Thing, 50.
 Think, *v.* 245.
 Third, 255.
 Thirst, 270.
 Thirsty, 264, 270.
 Thirteen, 327.
 Thirteenth, 327.
 This afternoon, 317.
 This evening, 317.
 This is, 143.
 This morning, 317.
 This much, 196.
 Those are, 143.
 Though, 306.
 Thousand, 327.
 Threaten, *v.* 347.
 Three, 50.
 Three days, 448.
 Three times, 290.
 Through, *pr.* 59.
 Throw, *v.* 245.
 Thursday, 327.
 Thus, 245.
 Tidy, 100.
 Time, 67, 290, 317.
 Timid, 379.
 Tired, 396.
 To, 40, 274.
 To (*before infn.*), 218.
 To the, 40.
 To-day, 100.
 To-morrow, 327.
 To-morrow af'noon, 327.
 To-morrow even., 327.
 To-morrow morn., 327.
 To-morrow night, 327.
 To-night, 317.
 Together, 408.
 Tolerably, 378.
 Too, 196, 255.
 'Too little or few, 284.
 Too much or many, 284.
 Tooth, 120.
 Top, 34.
 Touch, *v.* 356.
 Towards, 373.
 Town, 59.
 Trade, 167.
 Tradesman, 167.
 Translate, *v.* 396.
 Travel, *v.* 356.
 Tree, 59.
 Trouble, 284.
 True, 50.
 Truth, 227.
 Try, *v.* 227.
 Tuesday, 327.
 Turn, *v.* 356.
 Twelfth, 327.
 Twelve, 327.
 Twice, 206.
 Two, 50.
 Two-pennyworth, 270.
 Ugly, 143.
 Uncle, 120.
 Unconcerned, 299.
 Under, *pr.* 356.
 Understand, *v.* 91.
 Understanding, 368.
 Undertake, *v.* 227.
 Undress, *v.* 387.
 Unemployed, 396.
 Unfortunately, 379.
 Ungrateful, 299.
 Unhappy, 107.
 Unkind, 80, 143.
 Unless, 429.
 Unlock, *v.* 448.
 Unlucky, 379.
 Unmannerly, 448.
 Unpolite, 448.
 Unthankful, 299.
 Untidy, 143.
 Until, 317, 387.
 Untruth, 227.
 Unwilling, 278.
 Up, 347.
 Upon, 40.
 Use, *n.* 414.
 Use, *v.* 317.
 Value, *n.* 167.
 Verse, 255.
 Very, 80, 299, 378.
 Village, 50.
 Visit, *n.* 290.
 Visit, *v.* 206.
 Wait, *v.* 387.
 Wales, 420.
 Walk, *v.* 131, 368.
 Walker, 161.
 Wall, 278.
 Want, *n.* 215.
 Want, *v.* 212, 221, 265,
 &c.
 Warm, 80.
 Wash, *v.* 434.
 Water, 107.
 Way, 59.
 Weak, 317.
 Wear, *v.* 143.
 Weather, 100.
 Wednesday, 327.
 Week, 167.
 Weigh, *v.* 174.
 Weight, 174.
 Weights, 174.
 Welcome, *n.* 400.
 Well, *a.* 80, 299.
 Well, *ad.* 91.
 Well-informed, 379.
 Well-known, 341.
 Welsh, 420.
 Wet, 387.
 What? 163.
 What a—! 163.
 What sort? 163.
 Whatever, 420.
 Wheat, 284.
 When? 100.
 When, *con.* 317.
 Whenever, 420.
 Where? 80, 100.
 Where, *rel.* 400.
 Where ... from? 100
 Wherever, 420.
 Whether, 289.
 Whether ... or, 289.
 Which, 163.
 Whilst, 317.
 White, 59.
 Whoever, 420.
 Whole, 441.
 Why? 80.
 Why ... not? 80.
 Wide, 59, 215.
 Width, 215.
 Wife, 40.
 Willing, 206.
 Window, 336.
 Wine, 120.
 Wise, 40.
 Wish, *v.* 206.
 With, 91.
 Within ... of, 368.
 Without, 227.
 Woman, 40.

Wonder, <i>n.</i> 167.	Workman, 270.	Yesterday, 317.
Wonder, <i>v.</i> 188, 299.	World, 441.	Yest. afternoon, 317.
Wonder (= <i>I doubt</i>), 297.	Worth, 245, 270.	Yest. evening, 317.
Wonderful, 299.	Yard, 174.	Yest. morning, 317.
Wood, 59.	Year, 215.	Yet, 167, 306.
Word, 181.	Yellow, 59.	Yonder, 100.
Work, <i>n.</i> 107.	Yes, 76, 105, 106, 117, 252, 312, 331.	Yonder is (are), 143.
Work, <i>v.</i> 91.		Young, 143, 188.
		Yours, 148, 436.

II. INDEX TO PHRASES AND IDIOMS.

- Again and again, 448.
 All night, 396.
 And so forth, 448.
 And welcome, 400.
 At dinner, 262.
 At last, 336.
 At least, 448.
 At once, 408.
 At that time, 317.
 At the time, 317.

 Be kind enough to, 429.
 Before long, 400.
 Be sure to, 429.
 Bid adieu, 396.
 By heart (*or rote*), 245.
 By the time (*that*), 445.
 By this time, 368.

 Face to face, 364.
 For a long while (*or time*), 336.
 For aught (*or anything*) I know, 262.
 For my life, for the life of me, 379.
 For nothing, 227.
 For shame (*of yourself*), 434.
 For some time, 336.
 For the most part, 448.
 For the sake of, 368.
 From door to door, 278.

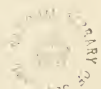
 Get rid of, 414.
 Give to understand, 396.
 Go for a walk, 368.
 Good afternoon (*to you*), 317.
 Good-bye, 396.

 Good day (*to you*), 317.
 Good evening (*to you*), 317.
 Good morning (*to you*), 317.
 Good night (*to you*), 317.

 Have mercy upon, 429.
 Here I am, 143.
 Here I am going, 143.
 Here take, *or here*, 448.
 How many times? 290.
 How old are you? 167.

 I am ashamed (*of*), 336.
 I am astonished, &c., 299.
 I am delighted, 299.
 I am fond of, 299.
 I am glad, 299.
 I am right, 364.
 I am sorry (*for*), 299.
 I am sure (*or certain*), 299.
 I am up (*or out of bed*), 387.
 I am very (*or quite*) welcome, 400.
 I am welcome to, 400.
 I am wrong, 364.
 I don't care, 290.
 I doubt, 299.
 I had better, 306.
 I had rather, 387.
 I hate, 299.
 I have ... to do with, 434.
 I have a (*good or great*) mind, 448.
 I may as well ... as not, 290.
 I shall have to, 400.
 I wonder, 297.
 In my possession, 131.
If you please, 286

- In spite of, 368.
 In time, 317.
 Instead of, 364.
 Is it likely *or* probable? 299.
 Is it possible? 299.
 It is better for me, 306.
 It is high time, 448.
 It is to be hoped [I *or* we hope],
 400.
 Let a man alone, 429.
 Long ago, 336.
 Long before, *pr.* 408.
 Long enough, *ad.* 408.
 Make a noise, 255.
 Many thanks to you, 400.
 My friend's (= *my friend's house*),
 278.
 No, don't, 429.
 No longer, *or* not ... any longer, *ad.*
 446.
 No more, *or* not ... any more, *ad.*
 446.
 No more a ... than, 446.
 No more of a ... than, 446.
 Not ... any more than, 446.
 Nothing at all [in the world], 131.
 Now and then, 227.
 Of course, 400.
 Off with you, 448.
 On a visit with, 290.
 On account of, 174.
 On sale, 131.
 On the point of, 91.
 On the whole, 441.
 Once a week, 206.
 Pay one a visit, 290.
 Please to, 429.
 Pretend to be, 379.
 Quench thirst, 270.
 Rather too little *or* few, 379.
 Rather too much *or* many, 379.
 Remember to, 429.
 Satisfy hunger, 270.
 Send [give] regards to, 278.
 Some ... *or* other, 131.
 Take a walk (*or* turn), 368.
 Take care to, 429.
 Take for granted, 414.
 Tall for his age, 215.
 Tell ... to, 429.
 Thank you, 80.
 Thank you very much, 400.
 The afternoon of the-day-before-
 yesterday, 317.
 The-day-after-to-morrow, 327.
 The-day-before-yesterday, 317.
 The evening before last, 317.
 The following day, 327.
 The more the pity, 379.
 The morning of the-day-after-to-
 morrow, 327.
 The morning of the-day-before-
 yesterday, 317.
 The-night-before-last, 317.
 (The) one ... the other, 368, 434.
 The one and the other = both, 174.
 The other day, 336.
 The whole day, *ad.* 336.
 To bless myself, 131.
To make haste, 355
 Very well, 414.
 What do I care? 290.
 What is the distance to —? 167.
 What is the matter with you?
 215.
 Will you be kind enough to? 400.
 Will you please? 400.
 Wish good-bye to, 396.
 Young lady, 143.
 Young woman, 143.



+

